



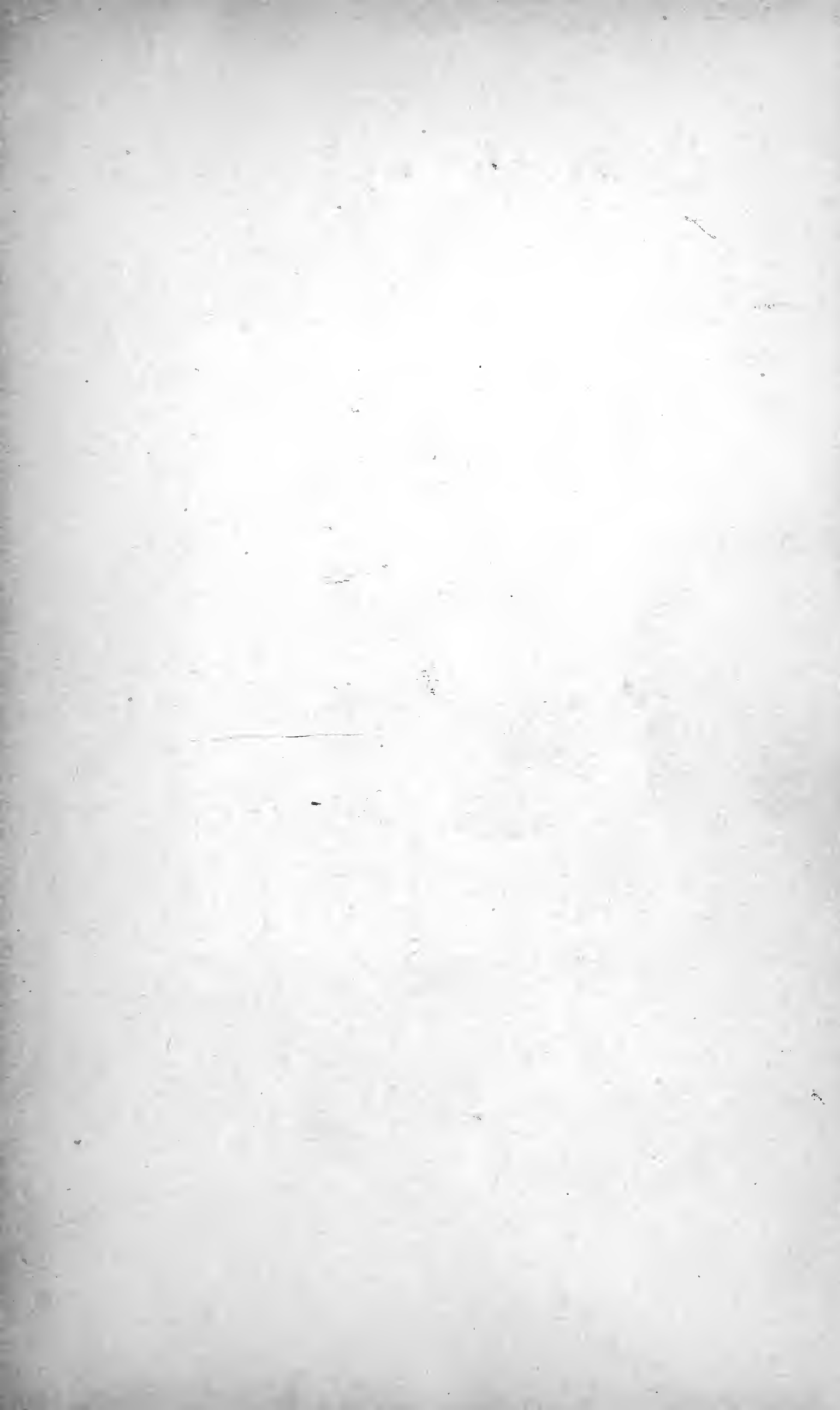


Class PC 4111

Book - 06

Copyright N<sup>o</sup> 1914

**COPYRIGHT DEPOSIT.**



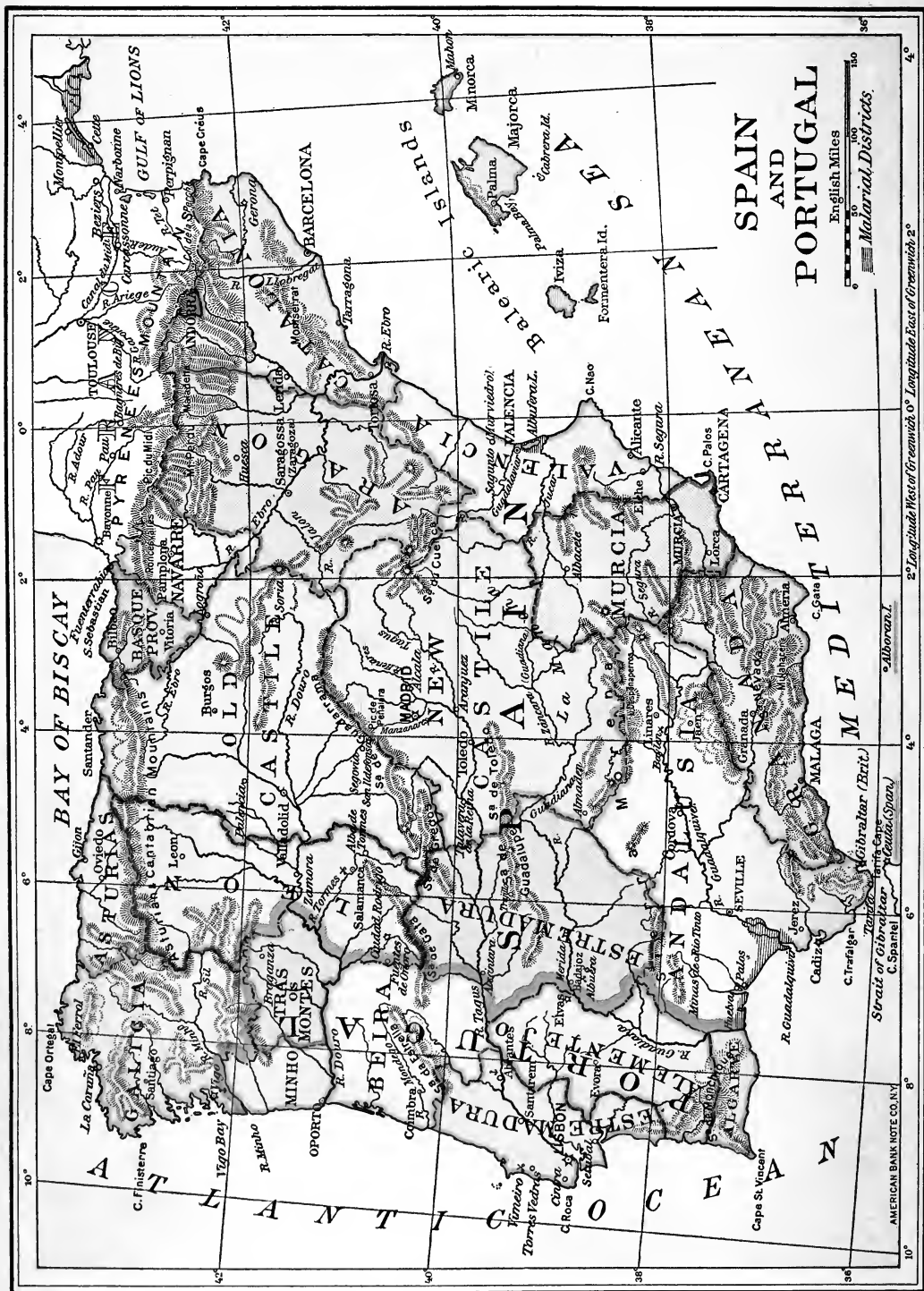












# SPAIN AND PORTUGAL

English Miles  
0 50 100 150  
Malaria Districts

10° 8° 6° 4° 2° Longitude East of Greenwich 0° Longitude West of Greenwich 2°

GRAMÁTICA CASTELLANA ABREVIADA

ABRIDGED  
SPANISH GRAMMAR

BY

EVERETT WARD OLMSTED, PH.D.

*Professor of Romance Languages and Head of the Department in the University  
of Minnesota*

AND

ARTHUR GORDON, PH.D.

*Of Buenos Aires, formerly Assistant Professor of Romance Languages  
in Cornell University*



NEW YORK  
HENRY HOLT AND COMPANY

PC 4111  
.06  
1914

COPYRIGHT, 1914,  
BY  
HENRY HOLT AND COMPANY

31  
OCT 1 1914

THE UNIVERSITY PRESS, CAMBRIDGE, U. S. A.

8 1,25  
© Cl. A 379776

1201

## PREFACE

It is the aim of this grammar to offer a practical and thorough course in Spanish, suitable alike for schools and colleges, and to make the presentation of the subject conform to the most advanced methods of teaching a living language.

It will be noticed that throughout this work the headings of lessons and of subjects have been printed in Spanish, as well as in English. This has been done in order to acquaint the student with Spanish grammatical phraseology and to facilitate conversation in Spanish, if desired, upon the grammatical matter introduced in the various lessons.

The subject of Spanish pronunciation is treated as fully and as definitely as is practicable in a book of this kind. It is to be regretted that as yet so little scientific study has been devoted to Spanish phonology.<sup>1</sup>

In the presentation of inflection and syntax it will be observed that the paradigms and rules relating to a given subject are grouped together in a lesson or in contiguous lessons, the object being to give to the student a comprehensive view of each subject treated, and to facilitate later reference to the same. The study of the verb is begun early in the book.

Believing that the memorizing of words is the most important feature in the acquisition of a language, the authors have introduced comprehensive vocabularies with every lesson. These vocabularies contain all of the new words in the exercises of each lesson (except the headings and the paradigms, which are likewise to be learned). By memorizing these printed vocabularies the student will be spared the time and labor of looking up and writing down the new words of each exercise for himself, and will find the subsequent reading and writing of the exercises comparatively simple.

That the reading of connected prose may be begun as early as possible, exercises of this character are incorporated in each

<sup>1</sup> The two principal works on this subject are Fernando Araujo's "*Estudios de Fonética Kastelana*," Santiago de Chili, 1894, and F. M. Josselyn's "*Études de Phonétique Espagnole*," Paris, 1907.

lesson. These exercises are illustrative of the grammatical matter of each lesson and deal with many phases of Spanish life, customs and history. In the last nine lessons, selections are given from the works of standard Spanish authors, thus preparing the student for later reading. By presenting passages of connected prose with each lesson and by incorporating several Spanish selections in the Appendix, the immediate necessity of a supplementary reading-book is obviated.

In order to accustom the student also to write connected Spanish, compositions or themes are given, based on the reading exercises of each lesson.

Oral exercises composed of disconnected sentences illustrating points of inflection and syntax are included in every lesson. The first few sentences of each conversation exercise are likewise devoted to inflection and syntax, and the rest are based upon the reading matter. These conversations are intended to serve only as suggestions to teachers, who may vary them as they choose. Any of the exercises may be omitted at the discretion of the teacher.

The Appendix contains grammatical and reading matter that is supplementary and additional to that of the first part.

The authors wish to acknowledge their indebtedness for valuable collaboration in the preparation of this and the original work, upon which it is based, to Dr. Miguel Ventura, of Barcelona, Spain, to Mr. Abelardo Pachano, of Ambato, Ecuador, to Mr. Antonio J. Rubio, of Havana, Cuba, to Mr. Fernando de la Cantera, of Manila, Philippine Islands, and especially to Mr. George I. Dale, Instructor in Romance Languages, Cornell University. They wish also to thank Lieutenant Colonel Cornélis DeWitt Willcox, Professor of Modern Languages, U. S. M. A., Major James A. Ryan, Associate Professor of Modern Languages, U. S. M. A., Mr. José M. Asensio, Instructor in Modern Languages, U. S. M. A., and Lieutenant John W. Lang, 29<sup>th</sup> Infantry, U. S. A., for their kindly criticism and suggestions and for help in the proof-reading.

E. W. O. AND A. G.

ITHACA, N. Y.,  
January 1, 1914.



# CONTENTS

## INTRODUCTION — ORTHOGRAPHY AND PRONUNCIATION

	PAGE
ALPHABET . . . . .	1
PRONUNCIATION. . . . .	1
Vowels . . . . .	1
Consonants . . . . .	3
ORTHOGRAPHIC AND PHONETIC CHANGES . . . . .	7
DIPHTHONGS AND TRIPHTHONGS . . . . .	7
ACCENT . . . . .	9
SYLLABICATION . . . . .	11
PUNCTUATION . . . . .	12
CAPITALIZATION. . . . .	13

## LESSONS

I. ARTICLES . . . . .	14
Definite Article . . . . .	14
Indefinite Article . . . . .	15
II. ARTICLES . . . . .	17
Special Uses . . . . .	17
VERBS . . . . .	19
Infinitive . . . . .	19
III. NOUNS . . . . .	21
Number . . . . .	21
Possession . . . . .	23
VERBS . . . . .	23
Present Participle . . . . .	23
Past Participle . . . . .	23
IV. NOUNS <i>Continued</i> . . . . .	25
Gender . . . . .	25
ADJECTIVES . . . . .	26
Inflection . . . . .	26
Agreement. . . . .	27
PRESENT INDICATIVE OF <b>Hablar</b> . . . . .	27
V. ADJECTIVES <i>Continued</i> . . . . .	30
Agreement. . . . .	30
Position . . . . .	31
PRESENT INDICATIVE OF <b>Deber</b> . . . . .	32

	PAGE
VI. ADJECTIVES <i>Continued</i> . . . . .	35
Apocopation . . . . .	35
Special Uses . . . . .	36
PRESENT INDICATIVE OF <b>Vivir</b> . . . . .	36
VII. AUGMENTATIVES AND DIMINUTIVES . . . . .	39
PRESENT INDICATIVE OF <b>Haber</b> AND <b>Tener</b> . . . . .	41
VIII. POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS . . . . .	43
Possessive Adjectives . . . . .	43
Possessive Pronouns . . . . .	44
PRESENT INDICATIVE OF <b>Ser</b> AND <b>Estar</b> . . . . .	44-45
IX. POSSESSIVE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS <i>Continued</i> . . . . .	48
POSITION OF WORDS IN A SENTENCE . . . . .	49
X. DEMONSTRATIVE ADJECTIVES AND PRONOUNS. . . . .	52
Demonstrative Adjectives . . . . .	52
Demonstrative Pronouns . . . . .	53
XI. IMPERFECT AND PRETERIT INDICATIVE . . . . .	56
Imperfect Indicative . . . . .	56
Preterit Indicative. . . . .	57
XII. FUTURE AND CONDITIONAL INDICATIVE . . . . .	61
Future . . . . .	61
Conditional . . . . .	62
XIII. IMPERATIVE MOOD . . . . .	66
PRESENT SUBJUNCTIVE OF THE THREE REGULAR CONJUGATIONS . . . . .	67
SEASONS OF THE YEAR . . . . .	67
MONTHS OF THE YEAR . . . . .	67
XIV. IMPERFECT SUBJUNCTIVE . . . . .	70
DAYS OF THE WEEK . . . . .	72
XV. HOURS OF THE DAYS . . . . .	75
POINTS OF THE COMPASS . . . . .	76
CONJUGATION OF THE AUXILIARY VERBS <b>Haber</b> AND <b>Tener</b> . . . . .	76-77
XVI. SPECIAL USES OF THE VERBS <b>Haber</b> AND <b>Tener</b> . . . . .	79
<b>Haber</b> used Impersonally . . . . .	80-81
XVII. SUBJECT PERSONAL PRONOUNS . . . . .	84
CONJUGATION OF THE VERBS <b>Ser</b> AND <b>Estar</b> . . . . .	85-86
XVIII. OBJECTIVE PERSONAL PRONOUNS . . . . .	88
XIX. OBJECTIVE PERSONAL PRONOUNS <i>Continued</i> . . . . .	93
CONJUGATION OF THE VERBS <b>Dar</b> AND <b>Andar</b> . . . . .	94-95
XX. OBJECTIVE PERSONAL PRONOUNS <i>Continued</i> . . . . .	97
CONJUGATION OF THE VERB <b>Querer</b> . . . . .	99

# CONTENTS

vii

	PAGE
XXI. REFLEXIVE PRONOUNS . . . . .	101
CONJUGATION OF THE VERB <b>Hacer</b> . . . . .	103
XXII. THE PREPOSITIONS <b>Para</b> AND <b>Por</b> . . . . .	105
CONJUGATION OF THE VERBS <b>Caer</b> AND <b>Asir</b> . . . . .	107
XXIII. ADVERBS. . . . .	110
Formation . . . . .	110
Position . . . . .	111
CONJUGATION OF THE VERBS <b>Poder</b> AND <b>Poner</b> . . . . .	111
XXIV. COMPARATIVES . . . . .	114
Comparatives of Inequality (Superiority and Inferiority). . . . .	114
Comparatives of Equality . . . . .	115
CONJUGATION OF THE VERB <b>Saber</b> . . . . .	116
XXV. COMPARATIVES <i>Continued</i> . . . . .	119
Relative Superlative . . . . .	119
CONJUGATION OF THE VERBS <b>Decir</b> AND <b>Traducir</b> . . . . .	120
XXVI. COMPARATIVES <i>Continued</i> . . . . .	123
Absolute Superlative . . . . .	123
CONJUGATION OF THE VERBS <b>Ir</b> AND <b>Venir</b> . . . . .	125
XXVII. RELATIVE PRONOUNS AND ADJECTIVES . . . . .	128
XXVIII. INTERROGATIVE PRONOUNS AND ADJECTIVES . . . . .	133
XXIX. NEGATION . . . . .	138
XXX. ADVERBS . . . . .	142
Special Uses . . . . .	142
CONJUGATION OF THE VERB <b>Ver</b> . . . . .	143
XXXI. FORMS OF ADDRESS . . . . .	146
GREETINGS AND LEAVE-TAKINGS . . . . .	147
CONJUGATION OF THE VERBS <b>Oír</b> AND <b>Salir</b> . . . . .	147-148
XXXII. DIRECT OBJECT WITH <b>A</b> . . . . .	150
CONJUGATION OF THE VERB <b>Traer</b> . . . . .	152
XXXIII. CARDINAL NUMBERS . . . . .	155
XXXIV. ORDINAL NUMBERS . . . . .	159
CONJUGATION OF THE VERB <b>Valer</b> . . . . .	160
XXXV. FRACTIONS . . . . .	163
COLLECTIVE NUMERALS . . . . .	164
MULTIPLE NUMERALS . . . . .	164
NUMERAL PHRASES . . . . .	164
CONJUGATION OF THE VERB <b>Caber</b> . . . . .	164
XXXVI. ORTHOGRAPHIC CHANGES . . . . .	167
XXXVII. ORTHOGRAPHIC CHANGES <i>Continued</i> . . . . .	171

	PAGE
XXXVIII. VERBS THAT CHANGE THE STEM-VOWEL . . . . .	175
Stem-Vowel E. First Conjugation . . . . .	175
Stem-Vowel E. Second Conjugation . . . . .	176
Stem-Vowel O. First Conjugation . . . . .	176
Stem-Vowel O. Second Conjugation . . . . .	176
XXXIX. IRREGULAR VERBS OF THE THIRD CONJUGATION . . .	180
XL. OTHER CLASSES OF IRREGULAR VERBS . . . . .	185
XLI. IRREGULAR PAST PARTICIPLES . . . . .	190
XLII. DEFECTIVE OR RARE VERBS . . . . .	194
XLIII. SUBJUNCTIVE IN INDEPENDENT CLAUSES . . . . .	199
SEQUENCE OF TENSES . . . . .	200
XLIV. SUBJUNCTIVE IN DEPENDENT CLAUSES . . . . .	205
Subjunctive in Noun Clauses . . . . .	205
XLV. SUBJUNCTIVE IN DEPENDENT CLAUSES <i>Continued</i> . . .	209
Subjunctive in Adjective Clauses. . . . .	209
XLVI. SUBJUNCTIVE IN DEPENDENT CLAUSES <i>Continued</i> . . .	214
Subjunctive in Adverbial Clauses . . . . .	214

## APPENDIX

EXAMPLES OF THE THREE REGULAR CONJUGATIONS . . . . .	221
CONJUGATION OF THE VERBS <b>Ser, Estar, Haber, AND Tener</b> . . .	223
EXAMPLES OF THE COMPOUND TENSES OF THE THREE REGULAR CONJUGATIONS . . . . .	225
PASSIVE VOICE OF A REGULAR VERB OF THE FIRST CONJUGATION	227
LIST OF IRREGULAR VERBS . . . . .	229
IMPERSONAL VERBS . . . . .	238
REFERENCE LIST OF VERBS UNDERGOING ORTHOGRAPHICAL CHANGES	240
USEFUL CLASSROOM EXPRESSIONS . . . . .	242
POEMS TO BE LEARNED BY HEART . . . . .	243
SIGHT READING . . . . .	248
 SPANISH-ENGLISH VOCABULARY . . . . .	 251
ENGLISH-SPANISH VOCABULARY . . . . .	308
INDEX . . . . .	349

# ABRIDGED SPANISH GRAMMAR

## ABREVIATURAS

(Abbreviations)

<i>adj.</i>	adjective	<i>m.</i>	masculine
<i>adv.</i>	adverb	<i>math.</i>	{ mathematical
<i>arch.</i>	architecture		mathematics
<i>art.</i>	article	<i>n.</i>	neuter
<i>aug.</i>	augmentative	<i>naut.</i>	nautical
<i>cf.</i>	compare	<i>neg.</i>	negative
<i>coll.</i>	colloquial	<i>obs.</i>	obsolete
<i>comp.</i>	comparative	<i>p.(p.)</i>	page(s)
<i>conj.</i>	{ conjugation	<i>part.</i>	participle
	conjunction	<i>pers.</i>	personal
<i>contr.</i>	contraction	<i>pl.</i>	} plural
<i>def.</i>	definite	<i>plur.</i>	
<i>dem.</i>	demonstrative	<i>poss.</i>	possessive
<i>dim.</i>	diminutive	<i>pp.</i>	past participle
<i>e.g.</i>	for example	<i>1<sup>a</sup></i>	primera
<i>Eng.</i>	English	<i>prep.</i>	preposition
<i>=</i>	equal(s), equalling	<i>pres.</i>	present
<i>&amp;a.</i>	} and so forth	<i>pret.</i>	preterit
<i>etc.</i>		<i>pron.</i>	pronoun
<i>et seq.</i>	et sequitur	<i>prov.</i>	proverb
<i>f.</i>	feminine	<i>reflex.</i>	reflexive
<i>fam.</i>	familiar	<i>rel.</i>	relative
<i>1st</i>	first	<i>§(§)</i>	section(s)
<i>fut.</i>	future	<i>2<sup>a</sup></i>	segunda
<i>gram.</i>	grammatical	<i>2d</i>	second
<i>i.e.</i>	that is	<i>sing.</i>	singular
<i>imp.</i>	imperfect	<i>subj.</i>	subjunctive
<i>impers.</i>	impersonal	<i>subst.</i>	substantive
<i>imptv.</i>	imperative	<i>syl.</i>	syllable
<i>ind.</i>	indicative	<i>3<sup>a</sup></i>	tercera
<i>indef.</i>	indefinite	<i>3d</i>	third
<i>inf.</i>	infinitive	<i>trans.</i>	translate
<i>int.</i>	interjection	<i>Ud.(s.)</i>	} usted(es)
<i>inter.</i>	interrogative	<i>V.(V.)</i>	
<i>irr.</i>	irregular	<i>v.</i>	verb
<i>Jan.</i>	January	<i>v. n.</i>	verb, neuter (intransitive)
<i>lit.</i>	literally		

- ( ) denotes that words are to be or may be included  
 [ ] denotes that words are to be omitted

## INTRODUCCIÓN

(Introduction)

## ORTOGRAFÍA Y PRONUNCIACIÓN

(Orthography and Pronunciation)

### ALFABETO

(Alphabet)

1. The Spanish alphabet has the following thirty simple and compound letters. The compound letters are treated in dictionaries as separate characters, with the exception of *rr*.

**Letras** (Letters or Characters): *a, b, c, ch, d, e, f, g, h, i, j, k, l, ll, m, n, ñ, o, p, q, r, rr, s, t, u, v, w, x, y, z*.

The Spanish letters have the following names (**nombres**): *a, be, ce, che, de, e, efe, ge, hache, i, jota, ka, ele, elle, eme, ene, eñe, o, pe, cu, ere, erre, ese, te, u, ve, ve doble, equis, ye* or *y griega, zeta*.

### PRONUNCIACIÓN

(Pronunciation)

2. The pronunciation of many of the Spanish letters varies in the different parts of Spain and in the Spanish-speaking countries, but the Castilian pronunciation is generally conceded to be correct, and is the one presented in this grammar. Even in Castilian Spanish the pronunciation often varies with individuals, so that it is impossible to give fixed and unvarying rules for the formation of the sound of each letter. The following rules will serve, it is hoped, to give the student an approximately accurate knowledge of the subject, but observation and imitation are the best guides to correct pronunciation.

### 1. Vocales

(Vowels)

The Spanish vowels are *a, e, i, o, u*, and sometimes *y*. When *y* is a vowel (i.e. in the conjunction *y*, 'and,' and when final in a word, e.g. *ley*), it has the sound of Spanish *i*, and its pronunciation may be found under the treatment of the latter. Span-

ish vowels have only simple sounds, and differ from English vowels in that they have no double or vanishing sounds.

### a

There are two plainly distinguishable sounds of the vowel **a**:

(1) In a tonic or pre-tonic syllable it has a somewhat open sound, and closely resembles that of the *o* of *not* (as generally pronounced in America), or frequently that of the *a* of *ask* (if correctly pronounced). **nada, atacar.**

(2) In a post-tonic syllable, especially when final, **a** has a weakened sound closely resembling that of the *a* of *sofa* (*Eng.*), but pronounced somewhat more openly. **nada, ánima.**

NOTE. — There are various other shades of sound for **a**. The principal one of these variants is that of a semi-closed **a**, somewhat resembling that of the French *a* in *part*. **acción, casa.**

### e

There are two plainly distinguishable sounds of the vowel **e**:

(1) In an open syllable (i.e. one not ending in a consonant)<sup>1</sup> it generally has a somewhat closed sound, for which there is no exact English equivalent. Its sound is not so open as that of the first part of the English *a* of *ate* (disregarding the vanishing *e* sound), nor yet so closed as that of the French *é* of *café*. One should strive for a sound between these two. **menos, queso, café,** the **e**'s of the two final syllables of **intérprete.**

(2) In a closed syllable (i.e. one ending in a consonant), or when followed by **ll** or **rr**, it generally has a somewhat open sound, for which there is likewise no exact English equivalent. It is not so open as that of *e* in *met*. **ser, puerto, festivo, él, ella, perro.**

NOTE. — There are various shades of sound for **e**. The **e**'s of the two final syllables of **intérprete**, for example, are more closed than those of **menos** or **café**. However, the beginner need not concern himself with these fine distinctions.

### i

The sound of the vowel **i** closely resembles that of the *i* of *machine* (*Eng.*). **intenso, allí, si, había.**

<sup>1</sup> For purposes of pronunciation a final **s**, in inflections, should not be regarded as closing an otherwise open syllable.



NOTE. — There are various shades of sound for *i*, as can be seen in *mis-mísimo*, of which each *i* is more closed than the preceding, but the beginner need not try to make these distinctions.

## o

There are two plainly distinguishable sounds of the vowel *o*:

(1) In an open syllable<sup>1</sup> it generally has a somewhat closed sound, though not so closed as that of the first part of the *o* of *go* (*Eng.*) (disregarding the vanishing *u* sound). *único*, *solo*, *no*, *yo*, the *o*'s of the last two syllables of *morboso*.

(2) In a closed syllable it generally has a somewhat open sound closely resembling that of the *o* of *north*. The *o*'s in the first syllables of *morboso*, *sombrero*, *pongo*.

In some words a tonic *o* in an open syllable has also an open sound. *lobo*, *lodo*.

NOTE. — There are various other shades of sound for *o*, but the beginner need not concern himself with them.

## u

The sound of the vowel *u* closely resembles that of *oo* in *moon*. *mundo*, *puro*, *último*.

When *u* is the first vowel of a diphthong it represents the consonantal sound of English *w*. *puesto*, *guardar*, *fuí*.

*U* is silent after *g* and *q*, before *e* or *i*, but gives to those consonants the hard sounds of *g* (in *go*) and of *k* respectively. In these cases *u* may be considered rather as an orthographic sign than as a vowel. *guiar*, *quedar*.

After *g* and before *e* or *i*, however, *u* is sometimes written with a dieresis, *ü*, when it has the consonantal sound of English *w*. *averigüé*.

NOTE. — There are various shades of sound for *u*, as can be seen in *cucurucho*, the first of which is medial, the second, closed, and the third, open; but the beginner need not concern himself with them. One must, of course, avoid the sound of the English *u* in *use*.

## 2. Consonantes

(Consonants)

*b* is not strong like the English explosive *b*, but approaches *v*, except that the lower lip touches slightly the upper one,

<sup>1</sup> For purposes of pronunciation a final *s*, in inflections, should not be regarded as closing an otherwise open syllable.

instead of being caught under the upper teeth. When initial, **b** is a little more strongly pronounced. In Spanish, **b** and **v** are frequently pronounced alike, and are often interchanged in orthography. **bata**, **Habana** or **Havana**.

**c** is similar to hard *c* in *cat*, unless it stands before *e* or *i*, when it is pronounced like the *th* of *theater*. When **c** is doubled the first **c** is always hard like *c* in *cat*. **cabo**, **ceba**, **cita**, **acción**.

**ch** is similar to *ch* in *chair*. **chica**, **achaca**.

**d**, when between vowels or at the end of a word, is somewhat like the *th* in *though*, but not so strongly pronounced.<sup>1</sup> When initial it is nearer the *d* of *day*. However, in pronouncing Spanish **d**, the tip of the tongue always touches slightly the back of the upper teeth. **Madrid**, **cada**, **decir**.

**f** is somewhat like *f* in *fun*. **figura**, **efe**.

**g** is like hard *g* in *go*, unless followed by *e* or *i*, when it is pronounced like the Spanish **j** (see below). The hard sound of **g** before *e* or *i* is obtained by placing an unpronounced *u* after the **g**. **gala**, **girar**, **general**, **guerra**, **sigue**.

**h** is silent in Spanish. **hado**, **hermana**, **hueso**.

**j** is pronounced like a strongly aspirated, throaty English *h*. Those who know German may recognize the sound as almost like that of *ch* in *Aachen*. **jaca**, **jota**, **ajo**. When final, the **j** is nearly silent. **reloj** (sometimes written **reló**).

**k** is like an English *k*. (It is found only in a few foreign words.) **kilogramo**, **kilómetro**.

**l** is somewhat like *l* in *lake*. However, in pronouncing Spanish **l**, the corners of the mouth are drawn back more tensely, and the tongue is brought farther forward than in the formation of English *l*. **lago**, **le**, **balde**.

**ll** is like *lli* in *million*. **llama**, **calle**.

There is a tendency in Andalusia, in many parts of Spanish America and even at Madrid, to pronounce **ll** like consonantal **y**. **cabayo** for **caballo**, **eya** for **ella**.

**m** is similar to *m* in *mat*. **mi**, **modo**, **tramar**.

<sup>1</sup> In the ending **-ado**, the sound of **d** is entirely lost in every-day speech, except by the purists. **-ado** sounds like the *ou* of *out* (*Eng.*). **acabado**, **soldado**. It is better for foreigners not to omit the **d** entirely.

**n** is somewhat like *n* in *now*.

However, in pronouncing Spanish **n**, the tip of the tongue touches slightly the back of the upper teeth. **nada**, **mano**.

When followed by a guttural, **n** becomes somewhat nasal, e.g. **encargar**, **monje**, **tengo**.

**ñ** has the sound of *ny* in *canyon*, or *gn* in *mignonette*. The mark ~ over the **n** is called a *tilde*. **cañón**, **señor**.

**p** is similar to *p* in *pond*. **poco**, **plata**, **Lope**.

**q** is used only when followed by *u*. **Qu** is pronounced like English *k*, or hard *c* in *cake*. **que**, **aquí**, **quedo**, **loquillo**.

**r** is somewhat like the English initial *r* in *red*. When initial in a word, when final in a syllable other than the last, when preceded by *l*, **n**, or **s**, or by any consonant in the same syllable, it is slightly trilled. **para**, **pero**, **rabo**, **perder**, **Enrique**, **Israel**, **malrotar**, **bravo**, **pronto**.

**rr** is strongly trilled. This is a sound not employed in English, and requires practice to acquire. **perro**, **gorra**.

**s** is usually like *s* in *saw*. Though sometimes softened before a voiced consonant, it never has the sound of *s* in *rose*. **ese**, **ostras**, **esbelto**, **esdrújulo**.

**t** is somewhat like *t* in *table*, but pronounced farther forward in the mouth than *t* in English, the tip of the tongue touching the teeth. **atado**, **está**, **trabajar**.

**v** is pronounced somewhat like the second *v* in *valve*, but the lips are lightly touched together, and the sound resembles the Spanish **b**, so much so that the two sounds are often confused in orthography. When initial, **v** is a little more strongly pronounced. **vano**, **desvanece**, **vida**, **Havana** or **Habana**.

**w** is found only in words taken from other languages. In words of German origin it is pronounced like *v*; in words of English origin, like *w*. **Wagner** (= *Vagner*), **whist** (= *wist*), **waterproof** (= *waterproof*).

**x** is somewhat like *x* in *ax*, especially between vowels. In many words, particularly in the initial syllable **ex**- followed by a consonant, the **x** is often pronounced like Spanish **s**. **examen**, **exacto**, **extremo**, **Extremadura**.

**y**, when used as a vowel, is pronounced like Spanish *i*. When

used as a consonant (i.e. when followed by a vowel in the same syllable), it is pronounced like *y* in *yes*. **rey, y, yacer, yema, yugo.**

**z** is pronounced like *th* in *thick*, never like the *th* in *though*. It almost never occurs before **e** or **i**. **C** before **e** or **i** has the same sound. **azul, azarado, azúcar, zorra, zeta.**

3. **c** and **n** are the only consonants, except those given in the alphabet as separate characters, that may be doubled in Spanish. **acción, accidente, innovar, innumerable.** Both letters are carefully enunciated. In the case of two **c**'s, the first has the sound of *k*, and the second, of *th*.

4. All letters of the alphabet are feminine in Spanish, and usually stand with an article.

**una b, la jota, una m.**

**Habana se escribe con (una) b.**

5. The most important variations from the Castilian pronunciation, which are found in many parts of Spain, particularly in the south, and in Spanish America, are:

1. **c** before **e** or **i** is pronounced like Spanish **s**. **cinco** (= *sinco*), **quince** (= *quinse*).

**z** is pronounced like Spanish **s**. **azul** (= *asul*), **azúcar** (= *asucar*).

**ll** is pronounced like Spanish consonantal **y**. **caballo** (= *cabayo*), **ello** (= *eyo*), **silla** (= *siya*).

**ll** is in some localities pronounced like English *j* in *jest*. **caballo, pitillo.**

**y** as a consonant is sometimes pronounced like English *j* in *jest*. **yo, ya.**

**l** and **r** are often confused. **arta** for **alta**, **robre** for **roble**.

2. Many consonants, particularly **s**, are silent. **la mujer** (= *la mujé*), **dos veces** (= *do vese*).

Sometimes final **s** has the sound of *th* in *lath*. **las mujeres** (= *laz mujerez*).

3. Many other peculiarities of speech are regional. Most of those above mentioned are quite widespread. They are given in order to enable the student, if talking to one who

is not a Castilian, to recognize these peculiarities and adjust them to the Castilian pronunciation that he has learned.

### CAMBIOS ORTOGRÁFICOS Y FONÉTICOS

(Orthographic and Phonetic Changes)

6. In conjugation, in inflection and in derivative words, a change of orthography is often made in order to preserve the original sound of the syllable. In the infinitive *sacar*, for example, *c* has the sound of *k*. When in the conjugation of the verb the ending *e* occurs, in order to preserve the original sound of the infinitive, one must write *saque* (and not *sace*).

*c* (= *k*) becomes *qu* before *e* or *i*.

*qu* (= *k*) becomes *c* before *a*, *o*, or *u*.

*g* (= *g* in *go*) becomes *gu* before *e* or *i*.

*gu* (= *g* in *go*) becomes *g* before *a*, *o*, or *u*.

*c* (= *th* in *thick*) becomes *z* before *a*, *o*, or *u*.

*z* (= *th* in *thick*) becomes *c* before *e* or *i*.

*g* (= Spanish *j*) becomes *j* before *a*, *o*, or *u*.<sup>1</sup>

*gu* (= Spanish *gu* before *a*, *o*, *u*) becomes *gü* before *e* or *i*.

7. The following examples illustrate the varying orthography for the same consonantal sound:

#### *Word examples*

(a) *ca, que, qui, co, cu*  
*ga, gue, gui, go, gu*  
*za, ce, ci, zo, zu*  
*ja, ge, gi, jo, ju*  
*gua, güe, güi, guo*

(b) *tocar, toque, toquilla, toco, locura*  
*pagar, pague, guiar, pago, gusto*  
*gozar, goce, rocío, gozo, azúcar*  
*coja, coge, cogido, cojo, jubón*  
*averiguar, averigüe, güiro, averiguo*

### DIPTONGOS Y TRIPTONGOS

(Diphthongs and Triphthongs)

8. A diphthong is a combination of two contiguous vowels in the same syllable, and a triphthong is a combination of three contiguous vowels in the same syllable. Mute *h* is disregarded and does not prevent diphthongization. An understanding of the laws of the formation of diphthongs and triphthongs is necessary in order to understand the rules of the written accent. In verse there are special laws and exceptions that require particular attention. In prose, however, the following general laws will suffice.

<sup>1</sup> Spanish *j* does not usually change to *g* before *e* or *i*. *Navajo*, *Navajito*. In popular orthography, however, they are sometimes confused. One often sees on signs *carruages* for *carruajes*.

9. Spanish vowels are divided into strong vowels *a, e, o*, and weak vowels *i, u*. *Y*, when a vowel, may be considered as *i*. Whenever by inflection an unaccented *i* or the vowel *y* would occur between vowels, the *i* or vowel *y* is changed to consonantal *y* (*leer, leyendo*, not *leiendo*). *rey, reyes*.

10. Two strong vowels do not unite into a single syllable. *ca-er, le-er, ro-er, pro-a*.

11. The possible combinations for diphthongs in prose are then:

ai	ei	oi	aire	ley	hoy
ia	ie	io	diablo	pierdo	serio
au	eu	ou	aun	deuda	bou
ua	ue	uo	agua	puedo	monstruo
ui	uu <sup>1</sup>		ruido		
iu	ii <sup>1</sup>		viuda		

12. In diphthongs both vowels are sounded, but the strong vowel receives more stress. If both vowels are weak, the latter receives more stress. *aire, puedo, serio, ruido, viuda*.

13. If, in the combination of a strong vowel and a weak vowel, the weak vowel is accented, or if the first of two weak vowels is accented (such accent being indicated in both cases by an accent mark), the vowels stand in separate syllables. *dí-a, continú-a, a-ún, flú-ido*.

14. In order to form a triphthong there must be a strong vowel between two weak vowels. A triphthong is never formed with a weak vowel as the middle vowel.

15. The following combinations are found in triphthongs:

iai	guiáis	uai	averiguáis, guay
iei	guiéis	uei	averigüéis, buey

16. When a Latin word, in which there was an *e* or *o* in a stressed syllable, passed into Spanish, the *e* frequently became *ie*, and the *o*, *ue* in the Spanish derivative. This change is shown in Spanish words where the *e* and *o* of unaccented syllables become *ie* and *ue* respectively, if by inflection or conjugation.

<sup>1</sup> The combinations *uu* and *ii* are very rare. The former is sometimes found and made a diphthong in Latin words, e.g. *suum*, and the latter occurs in *nihilista*.

tion the accent falls on the syllable in which they occur. Owing to Latin influence also, Spanish **ie** and **ue** of accented syllables often become **e** and **o** respectively when the accent shifts to another syllable. In verbs, **e** sometimes becomes **i** in both accented and unaccented syllables. These changes are very important in the conjugation of many verbs.

contar, cuento  
fuerte, fortísimo  
perder, pierdo

siete, setecientos  
seguir, sigo, sigamos

17. When a Latin *e* or *o* becomes a diphthong in Spanish at the beginning of a word, **ie** is changed to **ye**, and **ue** to **hue**, because no Spanish word may begin with the diphthongs **ie** or **ue**.

Latin, *ovum*; Spanish, **huevo**  
Latin, *errat*; Spanish, **yerra**  
Latin, *equa*; Spanish, **yegua**

### ACENTO (Accent)

18. There are certain rules governing the accent in Spanish words, according to which the accent falls on certain syllables under certain conditions, and does not need to be written. Any deviation from the rules requires a written accent.

19. The principal rules are:

1. Any word ending in a vowel, or in the consonants **n** or **s**, is normally accented on the next to the last syllable (the penult). **lobo, minuto, madura, pobre, verde, cree, feo, lobos, minutos, hablan, crimen, orden.**

2. Any word ending in a consonant, except **n** or **s**, is normally accented on the last syllable (the ultimate). Final **y** is considered as a consonant for purposes of accentuation, and becomes so in the plural of words ending in **y** in the singular. **verdad, azul, mortal, hablar, solaz, marfil, rey (pl., reyes), ley (pl., leyes), buey (pl., bueyes).**

3. Monosyllables normally do not take the written accent. **lo, muy, se, de, pues, sois, veis, crin, vez.**

4. Since diphthongs and triphthongs form only one syllable, their presence in a word does not alter the rules for the accent. If the diphthong falls in the stressed syllable, the strong vowel

of the combination of a strong and weak, or the latter of two weak vowels, receives the accent. The strong vowel of a triphthong is accented. (It should be remembered that two strong vowels do not form a diphthong.)

continuo	aire	heroico	viuda	guay
serio	pierdo	suerte	ruida	buey

20. The written accent is employed to indicate any violations of the above rules:

1. In all words accented on a syllable before the penult. **música, pórtico, lúgubre, dándoselo, héroe, aérea, fluido.**

2. In words ending in a vowel, or **n** or **s**, accented on the last syllable. **hablé, mató, después, atrás, acción, jardín, habláis, tenéis, despreciáis.**

3. In words ending in a consonant, other than **n** or **s**, accented on a syllable before the ultimate. **árbol, lápiz, Velázquez, mármol, ángel.**

4. In words having the same orthography, to distinguish one form from another.

**aun** (*preceding a verb*), 'even,' 'still'; **aún** (*following a verb*), 'still,' 'yet.'

**como**, 'as'; **¿cómo?** 'how?' **¡cómo!** 'how!'

**cuando**, 'when'; **¿cuándo?** 'when?'

**cuanto**, 'as much'; **¿cuánto?** 'how much?'

**de**, 'of'; **dé** (*subj. of dar*, cf. § 206), 'give.'

**di**, 'tell' (cf. § 247); **dí**, 'I gave' (cf. § 206).

**donde**, 'where'; **¿dónde?** 'where?'

**el**, 'the'; **él**, 'he,' 'him.'

**mas**, 'but'; **más**, 'more.'

**mi** (*poss. adj.*), 'my'; **mí** (*pers. pron.*), 'me.'

**se**, 'himself,' 'herself,' etc.; **sé**, 'I know' (cf. § 242); **be** (cf. § 189).

**si**, 'if'; **sí**, 'yes'; 'one's self.'

**solo** (*adj.*), 'alone'; **sólo** (*adv.*), 'only.'

**te** (*pers. pron.*), 'thee'; **té**, 'tea.'

**tu** (*poss. adj.*), 'thy'; **tú** (*pers. pron.*), 'thou.'

**ve**, 'sees' (cf. § 296); **vé**, 'go' (cf. § 255).

NOTE 1. — Usage varies in the use of the diacritic mark on **hé**, 'behold'; **há**, 'ago.' Bello, who prefers its use, is here followed.

NOTE 2. — The preposition **a** and the conjunctions **e**, **o**, **u**, formerly accented, according to recent action of the Spanish Academy are now written without accent, except **ô** when it might be mistaken for zero, e.g. 3 ó 4.

5. The preterit tense of verbs when monosyllabic and ending in a vowel sometimes takes the written accent by analogy with other verbs. **vió, dió, fuí, fué.**



6. The demonstrative pronouns are accented to distinguish them from similar forms of the demonstrative adjectives (cf. § 107). *éste* (*pron.*), 'this'; *este* (*adj.*), 'this.'

7. The interrogative pronouns and adjectives are accented to distinguish them from similar forms of the relative pronouns (cf. § 269). *quien* (*rel.*), 'whom'; *¿quién?* (*inter.*), 'who?' 'whom?'

8. When one of the weak vowels (*i* or *u*) preceded or followed by one of the strong vowels (*a*, *e*, *o*) is stressed, the accent must be written in order to show that the two vowels do not combine to form a diphthong. *sería*, *poesía*, *aún*, *continúa*, *leído*, *dúo*, *ataúd*, *oír*.

9. When pronouns are suffixed to verbs that have a written accent, the accent is retained. If by suffixing pronouns the normal accent of the verb form falls on a syllable before the penult, the accent must be written. *escapó*, *escapóse*; *vió*, *vióle*; *dando*, *dándome*, *dándomelo*.

10. An adjective having the written accent retains it when *-mente* is added to form an adverb (cf. § 227), and in compound words each part retains its original accent. *fácil*, *fácilmente*; *difícil*, *difícilmente*; *el espantapájaros* (*espanta-pájaros*); *la sinrazón* (*sin-razón*); *décimo séptimo*.

11. In the inflection of a word a written accent is employed or dropped according to the rules above given.

*francés*, *franceses*  
*orden*, *órdenes*

*español*, *españoles*  
*iba*, *íbamos*

NOTE. — *carácter* and *régimen*, in the formation of their plurals, move the accent one syllable nearer the end of the word. *caracteres*, *regímenes*.

### SILABEO (Syllabication)

21. The knowledge of how to divide a Spanish word into syllables is important, both in prose for the sake of breaking a word at the end of a line, and in verse for the sake of the meter.

1. Combinations of vowels forming a diphthong or triphthong should not be separated.

*se-ria*, not *se-ri-a*      *rui-do*, not *ru-i-do*  
BUT: *se-rí-a*, *cre-er*, *le-al*, *a-ún*

2. A single consonant (including **ch**, **ll**, **ñ**, **rr**) between vowels goes with the following vowel.

da-do	Pi-ri-ne-os	a-de-más	mu-cho
bu-llir	ma-ña-na	a-rro-jar	

3. Two consonants (**ch**, **ll**, **ñ**, **rr** being considered as single consonants) are regularly divided, but any consonant followed by **l** or **r** (except **s** followed by **l** or **r**; or **r** or **t** followed by **l**) is pronounced with the following syllable.

cuan-do	in-no-ble	BUT:
mon-ta-ña	ta-blas	es-la-bón
ac-ción	a-gra-do	Is-ra-el
hen-chir	a-cre-e-dor	per-la
des-llo-tra-do	a-trás	at-le-ta

4. Prefixes usually form separate syllables, even though by so doing they violate the preceding rules.

sub-de-le-ga-do	sub-en-ten-der	des-a-ta-do
-----------------	----------------	-------------

(In the last two examples the final consonant of the prefix remains with the first syllable, contrary to § 21, 2.)

NOTE. — If the prefix comes before **s** followed by a consonant, the **s** is joined to the prefix, for **s** is always separated from a following consonant. **cons-pi-rar**, **cons-ti-pa-do**, **ins-pi-rar**, **pers-pi-rar**, **des-pre-cio**, **ads-cri-to**.

5. When more than two consonants stand between vowels, the last consonant only of the group, or an inseparable combination of a consonant followed by **l** or **r** (cf. § 21, 3), is pronounced with the following vowel.

ins-ti-tu-to	in-promp-tu	sas-tre
pers-pi-caz	sal-dré	es-cla-vo

### PUNTUACIÓN (Punctuation)

22. Spanish punctuation is essentially the same as English. One notable exception is the use of inverted interrogation and exclamation points at the beginning of interrogatory and exclamatory sentences respectively, which, if of mixed character, may end with a different point from that with which they begin. This greatly aids the reader to modulate his voice correctly, especially in a long sentence, whereas in English one often

notices at the very end of a sentence that it is interrogatory and is obliged to suddenly change the pitch of his voice.

¿Qué hora es? What time is it?  
¿Qué persecución es ésta, Dios mío!

¡Qué lástima! What a pity!  
Heavens! What persecution is this?

### USO DE LA MAYÚSCULA

(Capitalization)

23. The use of capitals is nearly the same as in English, except that proper adjectives do not begin with a capital, unless they are capitalized by their position, i.e. at the beginning of a sentence, a quotation, or a line of verse, in titles, etc. The same rule holds for the pronoun *yo*, 'I.' Days of the week and months of the year are usually not capitalized, but in dating letters they often are.

la lengua española

la escuela sevillana

él y yo

Le veré el lunes, dos de enero

the Spanish language

the Sevillian school

he and I

I shall see him Monday, the  
second of January

NOTE.—When used as nouns, proper adjectives are sometimes capitalized and sometimes not. The usage varies.

el Flamenco (*or flamenco*), the man from Flanders

el Toledano (*or toledano*), the Toledan

el Catalán (*or catalán*), the Catalanian

### EJERCICIO DE PRONUNCIACIÓN

(Pronunciation Exercise)

Divide into syllables and pronounce, placing the accent according to given rules, the following words:

digo, seguir, jornada, solicitar, solito, comenzar, empezar, ejercicio, día, papagayo, atmósfera, cerveza, botella, muchacho, cigarro, pero, perro, girar, gorra, árbol, diccionario, aprender, sofá, príncipe, violín, vestíbulo, sombrero, guitarra, paréntesis, cañón, cañones, virgen, vírgenes, rubí, rubíes, lápiz, lápices, algodón, azúcar, burro, café, señor, señores, montaña, español, llamar, inglés, ingleses, llegar, gitanilla, ley, leyes, biblioteca, errores, después, crepúsculo, lea, cree, monstruo, origen, llegarán, aérea, violeta, sábado, sitio, perdéis, habláis, continúan, sería, sería, político, guardar, hierba, huele, cuerda, Sevilla, Madrid, Valladolid, Zaragoza, Córdoba, Badajoz, Buenos Aires, Los Ángeles, Méjico, Florida, Cuba, Barcelona, Valencia, Calahorra, Lima, Santiago, Argentina, Brasil, Estados Unidos, América, Japón, Francia, España, Tânger, Constantinopla.

## LECCIÓN PRIMERA

(Lesson I)

## ARTÍCULOS

(Articles)

## Artículo Determinado

(Definite Article)

24. The forms of the definite article in Spanish are:

<i>Número Singular</i>		
GENÉRO MASCULINO	FEMENINO	NEUTRO
el	la	lo the
<i>Plural</i>		
MASCULINO	FEMENINO	
los	las	the

25. The definite article agrees in gender and number with the word it modifies.

26. *Lo* is used chiefly before adjectives having an abstract meaning and before past participles to indicate a whole idea.

*lo malo*, that which is bad      *lo escrito*, that which is written

1. It is sometimes used before adjectives that are inflected, and is then often translated 'how.' It may also be used, with the meaning 'how' or 'as,' before adverbs.

No puedo decirle <i>lo bonitas</i> que eran	I cannot tell you how beautiful they were
<i>lo bien</i> que habla	how well he speaks
<i>lo más pronto posible</i>	as soon as possible

27. Before a feminine singular noun of two (or optionally before one of three) syllables, beginning with accented *a* or *ha*, the article *el*, instead of *la*, is used for euphony. This change does not occur before adjectives, except sometimes in verse. BUT: the letter *h* is always called *la hache*.

<i>el agua</i> (f.), the water	<i>la or el África</i> , Africa
<i>el hacha</i> (f.), the ax	<i>la or el águila</i> , the eagle
BUT: <i>la alhaja</i> , the jewel	<i>la alta montaña</i> , the high mountain

NOTE. — Some authors admit the masculine article before similar feminines of one syllable. *el haz* (f.), the surface. BUT: *la a* (*letter*).

28. When the prepositions **de**, 'of,' 'from,' or **a**, 'to,' 'at,' immediately precede the article **el**, they are contracted into **del** and **al** respectively.

**del libro**, of the book

**al libro**, to the book

### Artículo Indeterminado

(Indefinite Article)

29. The singular forms of the indefinite article in Spanish are **un**, masculine, and **una**, feminine.

**un hombre**, a man

**una mujer**, a woman

NOTE. — **Un** is sometimes used for **una** before a feminine noun beginning with **a** or **ha**. This use is not sanctioned, however, by the Spanish Academy.

**un alma** (*f.*), a soul

**un hambre** (*f.*), a hunger

30. The plural forms **unos**, **unas**, are used meaning 'some' or 'a few.'

**unos hombres**, some (*or* a few) men

**unas mujeres**, some (*or* a few) women

31. Articles, definite and indefinite, are generally repeated before the nouns they qualify.

**el hombre y la mujer**, the man and woman

**el sombrero, la chaqueta y los zapatos del hombre**, the man's hat, coat and shoes

**un muchacho y una muchacha**, a boy and girl

1. They are not repeated, however, when the nouns refer to the same person or thing, are closely related (as when several nouns refer to mental or moral traits of one individual), or are regarded as a group or *ensemble*.

**un amigo y protector**

a friend and protector

**el celo, industria e inteligencia de mi amigo**

the zeal, industry and intelligence of my friend

**Hombres, mujeres y niños (todos) perecieron**

Men, women and children (all) perished

### VOCABULARIO PRIMERO

(Vocabulary I)

**aquí**, *adv.*, here.

**el cepillo** (*pl.*, -s) [**de encerado**], the eraser.

**la clase** (*pl.*, -s), the class, classroom.

**donde**, *adv.*, where, wherever;

**¿dónde?** where?

**en**, *prep.*, in, into, on, at.

**es** (*pl.*, son), is (*pl.*, are) (*indicating what is permanent or inherent*).

**escribir**, to write.

**escrito**, -a, written.

**español**, -a, Spanish.

- está** (*pl.*, -n), is (*pl.*, are) (*indicating a transitory state or a situation*); stand(s).  
**estamos**, we are (*cf.* **está**).  
**estudiar**, to study.  
**la forma** (*pl.*, -s), the form, model.  
**hay**, there is, there are.  
**limpiar**, to clean.  
**observar**, to observe.  
**para**, *prep.*, for, to, in order to, about to.  
**la pared** (*pl.*, -es), the wall.  
**la pizarra**, } (*pl.*, -s), the black-  
**el encerado**, } board.<sup>1</sup>  
**pronunciar**, to pronounce, deliver.  
**la puerta** (*pl.*, -s), the door, gate, gateway.  
**¿qué?** what? which?; ¡—! how!  
**la sala** (*pl.*, -s), the hall, large room.  
**el suelo** (*pl.*, -s), the floor, ground, soil.  
**también**, *adv.*, also, too.  
**el techo** (*pl.*, -s), the ceiling.  
**tiene** (*pl.*, -n), has (*pl.*, have), hold(s).  
**la tiza** (*pl.*, -s), the chalk.  
**la ventana** (*pl.*, -s), the window.  
**y**, *conj.*, and (*becomes e before a word beginning with i or hi [not hie]*).

### EJERCICIO PRIMERO DE LECTURA (Reading Exercise I)

Aquí estamos en una sala de clase. Es la clase de español.  
 La sala tiene paredes, un techo y un suelo. Tiene también 2  
 ventanas y puertas. Las puertas y las ventanas están en las  
 paredes. Hay también una pizarra en una pared. Para es- 4  
 cribir en la pizarra hay tiza y para limpiar lo escrito hay  
 cepillos. Estamos aquí para estudiar el español. 6

### EJERCICIO ORAL PRIMERO (Oral Exercise I)

1. The blackboard. 2. The chalk. 3. The eraser. 4. The door. 5. The window. 6. The floor. 7. The class-room. 8. The wall. 9. The wall of the room. 10. The floor and ceiling of the room. 11. The chalk and erasers for the blackboard. 12. To the doors and windows. 13. To the floor and ceiling. 14. The water,<sup>2</sup> of the water, to the water. 15. Some erasers. 16. Some windows. 17. What is written. 18. Here is the first reading exercise. 19. [To] study and [to] observe. 20. We are here in order to observe. 21. The class is here in order to pronounce (the) Spanish.

<sup>1</sup> La pizarra is a blackboard of slate, while el encerado is made of blackened boards, cloth, or other material.

<sup>2</sup> Agua, *f.*

**TEMA PRIMERO**  
(Composition [*or* Theme] I)

Here is the Spanish class-room. The room has doors and windows. It has also a floor, ceiling and walls. On one wall is a blackboard. The lesson is (*está*) written on the blackboard. It is the first Spanish lesson (*lesson of Spanish*). There are erasers to (*para*) clean the blackboard.

**CONVERSACIÓN PRIMERA**  
(Conversation I)

1. ¿Qué forma tiene el masculino singular del artículo determinado? ¿el femenino singular? ¿el masculino plural? ¿el femenino plural? ¿el neutro? 2. ¿Qué forma tiene el masculino singular del artículo indeterminado? ¿el femenino singular? ¿el masculino plural? ¿el femenino plural?

3. ¿Dónde estamos? 4. ¿Qué hay en la sala? 5. ¿Dónde está la puerta? 6. ¿Qué hay para escribir en la pizarra? 7. ¿Dónde está la pizarra? 8. ¿Dónde está la tiza? 9. ¿Qué hay para limpiar lo escrito? 10. ¿Dónde están las ventanas?

**LECCIÓN SEGUNDA**  
(Lesson II)

**ARTÍCULOS**  
(Articles)

**Usos Particulares**  
(Special Uses)

**32.** The definite article is used in Spanish, where it is omitted in English, in the following cases:

1. Before nouns used in the general sense, i.e. as representatives of the entire class to which they belong.

**El hombre es mortal**

Man is mortal

**La miel es dulce**

Honey is sweet

**Los gatos son animales pequeños**

Cats are small animals

2. Before abstract nouns.

**la virtud, virtue**

**el honor, honor**

3. Before nouns formed of adjectives of nationality used to denote a language. Directly after **hablar**, 'to speak,' and in certain prepositional phrases, the article is commonly omitted.

<b>El español es una lengua fácil</b>	Spanish is an easy language
<b>Habla corrientemente el español</b>	He speaks Spanish fluently
<b>BUT: Mi hermano habla español</b>	My brother speaks Spanish
<b>El libro está escrito en español</b>	The book is written in Spanish
<b>la lección de español</b>	the Spanish lesson

4. Before verbal nouns formed of the infinitive of a verb and expressing an act in an abstract manner.

<b>el hablar</b> , talking ( <i>or</i> speech)	<b>el viajar</b> , traveling ( <i>or</i> travel)
--	--

5. Before names of the seasons, except in certain prepositional phrases.

<b>la primavera</b> , spring	<b>el invierno</b> , winter
<b>BUT: un traje de primavera</b> , a spring suit	

6. Before names of the days of the week or month. The article is, however, as in English, often omitted in dating letters. 'On' before names of the days of the week is usually replaced by the definite article in Spanish.

<b>El domingo es día de descanso</b>	Sunday is a day of rest
<b>Le verá a usted (el) sábado</b>	I shall see you on Saturday
<b>BUT: Domingo 2 de enero de 1910</b>	Sunday, January 2, 1910

7. Before titles when the person is not addressed.  
**el señor Gómez**, Mr. Gómez    **el rey Alfonso Trece**, King Alfonso Thirteenth

8. Before all names of countries when qualified by adjectives, and before the names of certain countries and towns that always require the article, such as: **el Brasil**, Brazil; **el Canadá**, Canada; **el Japón**, Japan; **el Perú**, Peru; **el Cairo**, Cairo; **la Habana**, Havana; **el Havre**, Havre.

<b>la España meridional</b>	southern Spain
<b>el Asia central</b>	central Asia
<b>BUT: Fué a Tierra Santa</b>	He went to the Holy Land
<i>(Here the adjective forms an essential part of the noun.)</i>	

NOTE. — With the names of countries and localities **a** is used to denote 'motion towards,' while 'rest in' is expressed by **en**.

**Voy a París**, I am going to Paris    **Estoy en París**, I am in Paris

**33.** The indefinite article is generally omitted:

1. Before a predicate noun, unless modified by an adjective or other limiting expression.



<b>Mi tío es médico</b>	My uncle is a doctor
<b>Mi tío es un médico excelente</b>	My uncle is an excellent doctor
<b>Su hermano es un alumno de esta clase</b>	Her brother is a pupil of this class

2. After **qué**, 'what a,' in exclamations:

<b>¡Qué tonto eres!</b>	What a fool you are!
<b>¡Qué día más hermoso!</b>	What a beautiful day!

34. The articles, definite and indefinite, are omitted before a noun in apposition, unless qualified by a relative superlative adjective (cf. § 243, 2).

<b>Juan, hermano de la niña</b>	John, the girl's brother
<b>BUT: París, la ciudad más bella de Europa</b>	Paris, the most beautiful city of Europe

35. The definite article frequently takes the place of the possessive adjective when referring to parts of the body, clothing, etc. (cf. §§ 101-102).

<b>La niña levantó la mano</b>	The girl raised her hand
--------------------------------	--------------------------

## VERBOS (Verbs)

36. There are three regular conjugations. Infinitives ending in **-ar** belong to the first, those in **-er** to the second, and those in **-ir** to the third.

### Infinitivos (Infinitives)

I <b>habl-ar</b> , to speak	II <b>deb-er</b> , <sup>1</sup> to owe, ought	III <b>viv-ir</b> , to live
-----------------------------	---	-----------------------------

37. The infinitive in Spanish may be used as a verbal noun, corresponding generally to the English verbal noun in **-ing**. The present participle is never so used.

<b>el hablar</b> , speaking, speech	<b>el viajar</b> , traveling, travel
<b>El hablar es plata, el silencio es oro</b>	Speech is silver, silence is gold

<sup>1</sup> The verb **deber** indicates usually a moral obligation, and is translated by 'ought,' 'should,' 'must,' etc. In this sense it is commonly followed by an infinitive without introductory preposition. When the following infinitive is introduced by the preposition **de**, the verb **deber** usually indicates a strong probability or mild obligation.

<b>Debo estudiar</b>	I ought to ( <i>or</i> must) study
<b>Debe de haber estado cerca del río</b>	It must have been near the river

# VOCABULARIO SEGUNDO

(Vocabulary II)

el alumno	} (pl., -s), the student, pupil.	la mesa (pl., -s), the table, desk.
el estudiante		el (or la) natural (pl., -es), the native, inhabitant.
América, f., America.		necesario, -a, necessary.
el banco (pl., -s), the bench, seat, bank.		o, conj., or ( <i>becomes u before a word beginning with o or ho</i> ).
con, prep., with.		el otoño (pl., -s), the autumn, fall.
delante de, prep., before, in front of.		princiando, beginning.
detrás, adv., behind, after; — de, prep., behind, after.		el profesor (pl., -es), } the teacher,
dice (pl., -n), say(s).		la profesora (pl., -s), } professor.
escucha (pl., -n), listen(s), is (or are) listening.		que, conj., that, than; pron., who, that, which.
la escuela (pl., -s), the school.		¿quién? (pl., -es) who? whom?
habla (pl., -n), speak(s), talk(s), is (or are) speaking (talking).		sentado, -a, seated.
el libro (pl., -s), the book.		el señor (pl., -es), the gentleman, man; (as term of address), sir, Mr.
(el) lunes, Monday.		sí, adv., yes.
se llama (pl., -n), is (or are) called, named.		la silla (pl., -s), the chair.
la mano (pl., -s), the hand.		el sustantivo (pl., -s), the noun.
mañana adv., to-morrow; subst., f., morrow, morning.		tomar, to take.

## EJERCICIO SEGUNDO DE LECTURA

(Reading Exercise II)

Es el otoño y en la escuela la clase de español está principiando. En la clase está el profesor con los alumnos o estudiantes. El Señor Calderón, natural del Perú, es profesor. El profesor está sentado en una silla detrás de la mesa, y los estudiantes en unos bancos delante del profesor. El profesor tiene un libro en la mano. Dice que la lectura y el escribir son necesarios<sup>1</sup> para los estudiantes de español. Los alumnos escuchan.

## EJERCICIO ORAL SEGUNDO

(Oral Exercise II)

1. The student and teacher (*one person*). 2. The student and teacher (*two persons*). 3. We are beginning (the) Spanish. 4. There is chalk on the table. 5. Mr. Calderón is behind the desk. 6. He is a professor. 7. He says that reading is necessary (f.) for the students. 8. The student is speaking Spanish with

<sup>1</sup> Cf. § 60.

the professor. 9. He holds the chalk in his hand. 10. He writes the first lesson on the blackboard. 11. The gentleman is a native of Canada. 12. The student is seated. 13. Where is the teacher? 14. Is he in the class-room? 15. Yes, sir, the professor is here. 16. What a student he is! 17. To-morrow is Monday. 18. He holds the class on Monday. 19. What is there on the desk? 20. He says that studying is necessary (*m.*). 21. He is in America in order to study. 22. The professor of Spanish is named Calderón. 23. He is here in order to take the book.

### TEMA SEGUNDO (Composition II)

In the autumn the students are beginning to (a) study Spanish. The professor, a native of Peru, has books on the desk. He takes a book from the desk and reads (*lee*) in Spanish. The students listen. The professor says that the lesson for to-morrow is written (*f.*) on the blackboard. The students are beginning to (a) write the exercises and to (a) study the vocabulary too. The professor says that it is necessary (*m.*) [to] study the lesson for Monday.

### CONVERSACIÓN SEGUNDA (Conversation II)

1. ¿Qué está principiando? 2. ¿Quiénes están en la clase? 3. ¿Quién es el profesor? 4. ¿Dónde está el Profesor Calderón? 5. ¿Dónde están los alumnos? 6. ¿Qué tiene el profesor en la mano? 7. ¿Qué libro es? 8. ¿Qué dice el profesor a los estudiantes? 9. ¿Quiénes escuchan?

### LECCIÓN TERCERA (Lesson III)

#### SUSTANTIVOS (Nouns)

#### Número (Number)

38. Words that end in a consonant, an accented vowel (except -e),<sup>1</sup> or a final diphthong ending in -y, and also mono-

<sup>1</sup> Words ending in accented -o or -u often add only -s.

syllabic names of letters of the alphabet, form their plural by adding *-es* to the singular.

<i>la pared</i> , the wall	<i>las paredes</i> , the walls
<i>el bajá</i> , the pasha	<i>los bajaes</i> , the pashas
<i>el rubí</i> , the ruby	<i>los rubíes</i> , the rubies
<i>el rondó</i> , the rondo	<i>los rondoes</i> , the rondos
<i>el bambú</i> , the bamboo	<i>los bambúes</i> , the bamboos
<i>el rey</i> , the king	<i>los reyes</i> , the kings
<i>la ce</i> , the c	<i>las cees</i> , the c's
BUT: <i>el canapé</i> , the sofa	<i>los canapés</i> , the sofas
<i>el pie</i> , the foot	<i>los pies</i> , the feet

EXCEPTIONS. — Certain words of foreign origin: *papá*, *papás*; *mamá*, *mamás*; *sofá*, *sofás*; *dominó*, *dominós*; *tisú*, *tisús*, etc.

NOTE. — Final *c* is changed to *qu*, and final *z* to *c*, before *-es*.

<i>el frac</i> , the dress coat	<i>los fraques</i> , the dress coats
<i>la vez</i> , the time	<i>las veces</i> , the times

### 39. Other nouns form their plural by adding *-s*.

<i>el libro</i> , the book	<i>los libros</i> , the books
----------------------------	-------------------------------

NOTE. — A few nouns ending in *-s*, Latin terms, and family names ending in *-z* are unchanged in the plural.

<i>el lunes</i> , Monday	<i>los lunes</i> , Mondays
<i>la crisis</i> , the crisis	<i>las crisis</i> , the crises
<i>el ultimátum</i> , the ultimatum	<i>los ultimátum</i> , the ultimata
<i>Álvarez</i>	<i>los Álvarez</i>

40. In the plural, Spanish nouns have the following idiomatic uses that differ from the English:

1. The plural is often equivalent in meaning to the singular used collectively.

<i>el vestido</i> , <i>los vestidos</i> , the clothing	<i>la barba</i> , <i>las barbas</i> , the beard
<i>el cabello</i> , <i>los cabellos</i> , the hair	<i>el postre</i> , <i>los postres</i> , the dessert

2. Many nouns, especially those denoting rank or relationship, are used in the masculine plural to designate individuals of both sexes.

<i>los reyes</i> , the kings, the king and queen
<i>los padres</i> , the fathers, the parents, the father and mother
<i>los hermanos</i> , the brothers, the brother(s) and sister(s)
<i>los hijos</i> , the sons, the son(s) and daughter(s)
<i>los niños</i> , the children, the boy(s) and girl(s)

**Poseción**

(Possession)

41. Possession is regularly expressed by **de** and the noun indicating the possessor.

**el libro de la maestra**, the teacher's book    **el padre de Pablo**, Paul's father

**VERBOS**

(Verbs)

**Gerundio**

(Present Participle)

42. The present participle is formed by adding to the stem, **-ando** in the first conjugation and **-iendo** in the second and third.

I **habl-ando**, speaking    II **deb-iendo**, owing    III **viv-iendo**, living

**Participio Pasivo**

(Past Participle)

43. The past participle is formed by adding to the stem, **-ado** in the first conjugation and **-ido** in the second and third. With the auxiliary **haber**, 'to have,' it is used to form the compound tenses (**tiempos compuestos**), and with **ser**, 'to be,' to form the passive voice (**voz pasiva**).

I **habl-ado**, spoken    II **deb-ido**, owed    III **viv-ido**, lived

Learn the first ten cardinal numbers (**números cardinales**) (cf. § 308).

**VOCABULARIO TERCERO**

(Vocabulary III)

**bonito**, -a, pretty.  
**castellano**, -a, Castilian, Spanish.  
**¿cómo?** *adv.*, how? (*used to inquire regarding way, means or manner*).  
**conocido**, -a, known.  
**el cuadro**, the picture.  
**la descripción**, the description.  
**diverso**, -a, diverse, different, various.  
**el edificio**, the building, edifice.  
**escribe** (*pl.*, -n), write(s), is (*or are*) writing.  
**España**, *f.*, Spain.

**explica** (*pl.*, -n), explain(s), is (*or are*) explaining.  
**forma** (*pl.*, -n) form(s).  
**hermoso**, -a, beautiful, handsome.  
**indica** (*pl.*, -n), designate(s), indicate(s), mark(s).  
**interesante**, *adj.*, interesting.  
**el lápiz**, the pencil.  
**el mapa**, the map.  
**mismo**, -a, same, self, even.  
**muy**, *adv.*, very.  
**no**, *adv.*, no, not.  
**la página**, the page.  
**el país**, the country.

**pero**, *conj.*, but.  
**la pluma**, the pen, feather.  
**poco**, -a, little, small; *pl.*, few;  
*adv.*, little, slightly; — a —,  
*adv.*, gradually.  
**porque**, *conj.*, because, for.  
**se**, *reflex. pron.*, itself, himself,  
 herself; (*when used before a*

*verb*) you, one (*or the verb may  
 be translated by the passive form*  
*(cf. §§ 216–217), e.g., se dice(n),*  
 you say, one says, is (*or are*)  
 said, *etc.*).

**la sorpresa**, the surprise.  
**termina** (*pl.*, -n), end(s).  
**la vista**, the view, sight.

### EJERCICIO TERCERO

(Exercise III)

La clase de español está en una sala que tiene dos puertas  
 y cuatro ventanas. En la sala hay bancos para los estudiantes 2  
 y una mesa para el profesor. En la mesa del profesor hay  
 libros, lápices y plumas. En las paredes hay bonitos<sup>1</sup> cuadros 4  
 con vistas de España. En la pared detrás de la mesa del  
 profesor hay un mapa. Es el mapa de España y Portugal, 6  
 países poco conocidos<sup>1</sup> pero muy interesantes.<sup>1</sup> En la misma<sup>1</sup>  
 pared hay una pizarra con tiza y cepillos. 8

Los lunes no hay clase de gramática, porque el profesor  
 habla de los diversos<sup>1</sup> cuadros que están en las paredes. 10  
 Termina la lección con una descripción de España.

### EJERCICIO ORAL TERCERO

(Oral Exercise III)

1. The class-rooms. 2. The Spanish<sup>2</sup> class-rooms. 3. The  
 students (*boys and girls*). 4. Very beautiful. 5. The wall.  
 6. The walls. 7. The pencil. 8. The pencils. 9. Mondays.  
 10. The buildings. 11. Because he has the professor's books.  
 12. He writes the lesson with a pen. 13. That which is written.  
 14. The written exercise. 15. He does not begin. 16. Speaking  
 with the professors. 17. The countries on the map. 18. What  
 is there on the desks? 19. The view is very pretty (*f.*). 20. She  
 says that the description ends here. 21. The student speaks  
 Spanish a little. 22. A surprise for the students.

### TEMA TERCERO

(Composition III)

In the beautiful<sup>1</sup> building where we are, there is a Spanish  
 class-room. In the class-room the teacher is explaining the 2

<sup>1</sup> For inflection and agreement of adjectives, cf. §§ 52–55.

<sup>2</sup> Use **de español**.

lesson to the students, who are seated in front of the desk.  
 He explains how the plural of nouns is formed in Spanish. 4  
 He also speaks of the infinitives and participles. There is a  
 map of Spain behind the teacher's desk, and on Mondays 6  
 he ends the lesson with a description of Spain, a country little  
 known, but very interesting. 8

### CONVERSACIÓN TERCERA (Conversation III)

1. ¿Cómo se forma el plural de los sustantivos que terminan en una consonante? ¿en una vocal sin acento? ¿en un diptongo que termina en y?
2. ¿Cómo se forma el plural de **café**? ¿de **rubí**? ¿de **papá**?
3. ¿Qué forma tiene el plural de **el lunes**?
4. ¿Cómo se indica la posesión en castellano?
5. ¿Cómo se forma el gerundio de la primera conjugación? ¿de la segunda? ¿de la tercera?
6. ¿Cómo se escribe<sup>1</sup> el gerundio de **vivir**?
7. ¿Qué tiempos se forman con **haber** y el participio pasivo?
8. ¿Cómo se dice en español *seven, ten, three*?
9. ¿Dónde está la clase de español?
10. ¿Hay bancos en la sala?
11. ¿Qué explica el profesor?
12. ¿Dónde está el mapa?
13. ¿De qué habla el profesor los lunes?
14. ¿Cómo termina la lección?
15. ¿Es España un país interesante?

### LECCIÓN CUARTA (Lesson IV)

#### SUSTANTIVOS (Nouns)

#### Género (Gender)

44. All Spanish nouns are either masculine or feminine.

45. Nouns that designate males, titles or professions of males, are generally masculine, whatever their endings.

**el cura**, the priest

**el juez**, the judge

**el muchacho**, the boy

**el profesor**, the professor

**el monarca**, the monarch

**el poeta**, the poet

BUT: **la** (*or el*) **espía**, the spy

**la** (*or el*) **centinela**, the sentinel

<sup>1</sup> A regular way of saying 'How do you spell?' One may also say **¿Cómo se deletrea?**

46. Nouns that designate females, titles or occupations of females, are feminine.

la muchacha, the girl  
la madre, the mother

la costurera, the seamstress  
la condesa, the countess

47. The names of days, months, rivers, oceans, mountains and indeclinable parts of speech are masculine.

el lunes, Monday  
el abril, April  
el Rin, the Rhine

el Pacífico, the Pacific  
el Etna, Mt. Etna  
el porqué, the why

48. Names of the letters of the alphabet are feminine (cf. § 4).

una b, a b

las cees, the c's

la o, the o

49. The gender of other nouns must be learned usually, but may, to a certain extent, be determined by the endings.

50. Masculine endings: -o (except *la mano*, 'the hand') and -ma (in words of Greek origin).

el libro, the book  
el tema, the composition

el idioma, the language  
el poema, the poem

51. Feminine endings: -a (except *el día*, 'the day'; *el mapa* 'the map'; *el cometa*, 'the comet'; *el planeta*, 'the planet'; and a few others), -dad, -tad, -tud, -ión, -umbre, and -ie (but not *pie*, *m.*, 'foot').

la mesa, the table  
la verdad, the truth  
la libertad, the liberty

la virtud, the virtue  
la nación, the nation  
la muchedumbre, the crowd  
la serie, the series

## ADJETIVOS

(Adjectives)

## Inflexión

(Inflection)

52. Adjectives ending in -o in the masculine singular change the -o to -a to form the feminine singular.

blanco, blanca, white

alto, alta, high

53. Adjectives which do not end in -o in the masculine singular have the same ending for both genders.

fácil (*m. and f.*), easy

joven (*m. and f.*), young

alegre (*m. and f.*), happy



## EXCEPTIONS:

1. Adjectives of nationality ending in a consonant add *-a* to form the feminine.

*español, española*, Spanish

*inglés, inglesa*, English

2. Adjectives ending in *-án, -ón, -or* (except comparatives, including certain Latin comparatives) add *-a* to form the feminine.

*holgazán, holgazana*, idle, lazy

*burlón, burlona*, roguish

*hablador, habladora*, talkative

BUT: *mejor* (*m. and f.*), better

*superior* (*m. and f.*), superior

54. The plural of adjectives is formed like the plural of nouns.

*bonito, bonitos*, pretty

*fácil, fáciles*, easy

## Concordancia

(Agreement)

55. Adjectives and participles used adjectively agree in gender and number with the words they modify.

*un hombre alto*, a tall man

*las buenas mujeres*, the good women

*las lecciones escritas*, the written lessons

## VERBOS

(Verbs)

56. **Presente de Indicativo del Verbo *hablar***, 'to speak, talk'  
(Present Indicative of the Verb *hablar*)

## PRIMERA CONJUGACIÓN

(First Conjugation)

*Singular*

1ª persona *yo*<sup>1</sup> *habl-o*

I speak, am speaking, do<sup>2</sup> speak

2ª persona *tú* *habl-as*

thou speakest, etc.

3ª persona *él (ella, usted)* *habl-a*

he (she, it, you) speak(s), etc.

*Plural*

1ª persona *nosotros* *habl-amos*

we speak, etc.

2ª persona *vosotros* *habl-áis*

you speak, etc.

3ª persona *ellos (ellas, ustedes)* *habl-an*

they (you) speak, etc.

<sup>1</sup> The personal pronouns used after prepositions are the same in form as the subject pronouns (cf. §§ 182, 208), except in the first and second persons singular, when *mí* and *ti* are used.

<sup>2</sup> The English auxiliary verb 'do,' which is common in negative or interrogative constructions, is not rendered in Spanish.

57. A verb agrees with its subject in person and number. Since the endings usually indicate the agreement, personal pronouns as subjects of the verb are commonly omitted, except when they are required to avoid ambiguity or for emphasis (cf. § 183). The pronoun **usted** (*abbreviations V., Ud.*), *pl.*, **ustedes** (*VV., Uds.*), 'you,' is, however, usually used, and requires the verb in the third person, because it is a contraction of **vuestra merced**, 'your grace,' which would naturally take that person of the verb (cf. § 185).

<b>Hablamos español</b>	We are speaking Spanish
BUT: <b>El habla bien, pero ella habla mejor</b>	He speaks well, but she speaks better
<b>Yo lo digo</b>	I ( <i>emphatic</i> ) say so
<b>Usted habla bien</b>	You ( <i>sing.</i> ) speak well
<b>¿Hablan ustedes español?</b>	Do you speak Spanish?

Learn the cardinal numbers from ten to twenty (cf. § 308).

## VOCABULARIO CUARTO

(Vocabulary IV)

<b>aprender</b> , to learn.	<b>¿qué tal?</b> how? ( <i>often used instead of ¿cómo? to inquire after the quality or condition of a person or thing</i> ).
<b>atentamente</b> , <i>adv.</i> , attentively.	<b>sabe</b> ( <i>pl., -n</i> ), know(s), know(s) how.
<b>bastante</b> , <i>adj. and adv.</i> , enough, sufficient, rather, quite.	<b>la señora</b> , the lady, ( <i>as term of address</i> ) Madame, Mrs.
<b>bien</b> , <i>adv.</i> , well, else.	<b>la señorita</b> , the young (unmarried) lady, ( <i>as term of address</i> ) Miss.
<b>la cosa</b> , the thing.	<b>sin</b> , <i>prep.</i> , without.
<b>¿cuál?</b> <sup>1</sup> ( <i>pl., -es</i> ), which? what? which one(s)?	<b>sirve</b> ( <i>pl., -n</i> ), serve(s).
<b>entiende</b> ( <i>pl., -n</i> ), hear(s), understand(s).	<b>la terminación</b> , the ending.
<b>el estudio</b> , the study.	<b>todavía</b> , <i>adv.</i> , still, yet.
<b>etcétera</b> , et cetera.	<b>todo</b> , <i>-a</i> , all, each, every; <i>pl.</i> ( <i>with definite article before nouns</i> ), all, every.
<b>explicar</b> , to explain, describe.	<b>el uso</b> , the use.
<b>fácil</b> , <i>adj.</i> , easy.	<b>la verdad</b> , the truth; <b>es verdad</b> , it is true; <b>¿Verdad?</b> or <b>¿No es verdad?</b> isn't that so? ( <i>like the French N'est-ce pas?</i> ).
<b>hallar</b> , to find.	
<b>hoy</b> , <i>adv.</i> , to-day; — <b>día</b> , now-days.	
<b>el idioma</b> , the language.	
<b>la lengua</b> , the tongue, language.	
<b>la línea</b> , the line.	
<b>otro</b> , <i>-a</i> , other, another.	
<b>la palabra</b> , the word.	
<b>posible</b> , <i>adj.</i> , possible.	
<b>principiar</b> , to begin.	

<sup>1</sup> 'What is?' is translated in general by **¿Cuál es?** unless it means 'What sort of a thing is?' and then **¿Qué es?** is used.

**¿Cuál es la lección?**

What (*or which*) is the lesson?

**¿Qué es un sustantivo?**

What (sort of a thing) is a substantive?

EJERCICIO CUARTO  
(Exercise IV)

Hoy hay otra clase de español. El profesor principia la lección del día explicando la gramática. Dice que es muy necesario aprender la gramática para hablar bien un idioma. El profesor habla también de las diversas cosas que hay en la sala, de las ventanas, de los cuadros, de la pizarra, etcétera.

Los estudiantes escuchan atentamente. Entienden un poco la lengua castellana, pero todavía no saben bastantes palabras para hablar con el profesor. Tienen libros escritos en español y principian la lectura de los ejercicios. Hay una señorita en la clase que sabe muy bien la lección, porque estudia con una señora que es natural de España.

EJERCICIO ORAL CUARTO  
(Oral Exercise IV)

1. The beautiful school. 2. The pretty picture. 3. The study of Spanish. 4. The beautiful ladies. 5. The necessary things. 6. The ending is very interesting. 7. A very interesting ending. 8. You (*sing.*) do not speak very well. 9. You (*pl.*) do not write with pens. 10. We speak Spanish here. 11. They find the day rather interesting. 12. The book of twenty pages. 13. He explains the easy lesson without the use of a book. 14. Seventeen pretty Spanish views. 15. How are you? 16. There are nineteen words in the vocabulary. 17. You are beginning to (a) learn the truth. 18. She is writing with a pencil in her hand. 19. The gentleman, a native of Canada. 20. They study well and listen attentively. 21. You begin with the fourth line.

TEMA CUARTO  
(Composition IV)

To-day the professor explains the grammar lesson, which is about (*sobre*) the gender of nouns and the inflection of adjectives. The lesson of the day is not very interesting for the students, but the professor says that the study of grammar is necessary in order to speak a language well. The students listen attentively, because the professor is speaking in Span-

ish. They do not understand everything yet, but they find the study of Spanish very interesting and quite easy. With 8 the words which they know they designate the various things that are in the class-room. 10

### CONVERSACIÓN CUARTA (Conversation IV)

1. ¿Qué géneros tienen los sustantivos españoles? 2. ¿De qué género son las letras del alfabeto en español? 3. ¿Qué terminaciones tienen los sustantivos masculinos? ¿y qué terminaciones, los femeninos? 4. ¿Cómo se forma el singular del femenino de los adjetivos que terminan en -o? 5. ¿Cómo se forma el plural de los adjetivos en español? 6. ¿Cuál es el presente de indicativo del verbo **estudiar**? ¿del verbo **hablar**? 7. ¿Cuáles son los números cardinales de diez a veinte?

8. ¿Qué principia el profesor? 9. ¿Para qué sirve la gramática? 10. ¿De qué habla el profesor? 11. ¿Cómo escuchan los estudiantes? 12. ¿Sabe usted hablar español? 13. Ustedes saben la lección de hoy, ¿verdad? 14. ¿Qué tienen los estudiantes? 15. ¿En qué lengua están escritos los libros?

### LECCIÓN QUINTA (Lesson V)

#### ADJETIVOS (Adjectives)

#### Concordancia (Agreement)

58. An adjective that modifies two or more preceding nouns of the same gender is put in the plural and has the gender of the nouns.

**la mesa y las sillas viejas**, the old table and chairs

59. An adjective that modifies two or more nouns of different gender referring to animate beings is put in the masculine plural.

**La madre y sus hijos son altos**  
**el hombre y la mujer españoles**

The mother and her sons are tall  
the Spanish man and woman

**60.** An adjective that modifies two or more nouns of different gender not referring to animate beings may agree in gender and number with the nearest noun, or be in the masculine plural when following. The sentence is generally so arranged that the masculine noun and adjective are contiguous.

<b>Tenía el brazo y la mano blanca</b>	She had an arm and hand as white
<b>como la nieve</b>	as snow
<b>Tiene los ojos y las cejas negras</b>	She has eyes and brows as black as
<b>como la noche</b>	night
<b>Tiene lápices y plumas buenos</b>	} He has good pens and pencils
<i>Or better,</i>	
<b>Tiene buenos lápices y plumas</b>	} He had extraordinary talent
<b>Tenía talento y habilidad extraordinarios</b>	
<i>Or better,</i>	
<b>Tenía habilidad y talento extraordinarios</b>	and ability

### Construcción

(Position)

**61.** Great freedom is allowed in the position of the adjective with reference to the noun it modifies. When an adjective precedes, it generally expresses an inherent or natural quality of the noun rather than a distinguishing attribute, as it does when it follows. The more common position is after the noun, especially in the following cases:

1. Long adjectives.

**un libro interesante**, an interesting book

2. Participial adjectives.

**un ejercicio escrito**, a written exercise

3. Proper adjectives.

**la lengua española**, the Spanish language

4. Adjectives denoting a physical quality (*color, shape, size, etc.*), except when the quality is characteristic, or used figuratively.

**el hombre enfermo**, the sick man

**la mujer vieja**, the old woman

**la pared blanca**, the white wall

**una mesa cuadrada**, a square table

BUT: **la blanca nieve**, the white snow

**una negra acción**, a dark deed

5. Adjectives qualified by an adverb, especially a long one.

**una muchacha muy linda**, a very pretty girl

**una persona sumamente buena**, an exceedingly good person

6. When two adjectives joined by a conjunction modify the same noun.

**las palabras sencillas y fáciles**, the simple and easy words  
**libros buenos o malos**, good or bad books

NOTE. — If the two adjectives are not joined by a conjunction, one usually precedes and the other follows the noun.

**el viejo libro rojo**, the old red book

62. Certain adjectives have one meaning when used before a noun and another when used after. (*Learn*)

<b>mi caro niño</b> , my dear (beloved) child	<b>un libro caro</b> , a dear (expensive) book
<b>ciertas personas</b> , certain persons	<b>noticias ciertas</b> , reliable news
<b>diferentes muchachos</b> , different (various) boys	<b>sillas diferentes</b> , different (dissimilar) chairs
<b>un grande hombre</b> , a great (illustrious) man	<b>un hombre grande</b> , a tall man
<b>un nuevo vestido</b> , another ( <i>or</i> a different) garment	<b>un vestido nuevo</b> , a new garment
<b>la pobre mujer</b> , the poor (pitiable) woman	<b>la mujer pobre</b> , the poor (indigent) woman

## VERBOS

(Verbs)

63. **Presente de Indicativo del Verbo *deber***, 'to owe'  
 (Present Indicative of the Verb *deber*)

### SEGUNDA CONJUGACIÓN (Second Conjugation)

#### *Singular*

<b>yo deb-o</b>	I owe, am owing, do owe, etc.
<b>tú deb-es</b>	thou owest, etc.
<b>él (ella, usted) deb-e</b>	he (she, it, you) owe(s), etc.

#### *Plural*

<b>nosotros deb-emos</b>	we owe, etc.
<b>vosotros deb-éis</b>	you owe, etc.
<b>ellos (ellas, ustedes) deb-en</b>	they (you) owe, etc.

Learn the cardinal numbers from twenty to fifty (cf. § 308).

### VOCABULARIO QUINTO (Vocabulary V)

<b>calificar</b> , to qualify, modify.	<b>cuando</b> , <i>conj.</i> , when, whenever;
<b>cambiar (en)</b> , to change (to).	<b>¿cuándo?</b> <i>adv.</i> , when?
<b>como</b> , <i>conj.</i> , as, like, such as.	<b>determinar</b> , to determine.
<b>concuerta</b> ( <i>pl.</i> , <i>-n</i> ), agree(s).	<b>difícil</b> , <i>adj.</i> , difficult.
<b>conjugue V.</b> , conjugate.	<b>emplear</b> , to use, employ.

<b>entender</b> , to understand, hear.	<b>puede</b> ( <i>pl.</i> , -n), can.
<b>esencial</b> , <i>adj.</i> , essential, necessary.	<b>la regla</b> , the rule.
<b>formar</b> , to form.	<b>rojo</b> , -a, red.
<b>la frase</b> , the phrase.	<b>saber</b> , to know, know how, learn.
<b>generalmente</b> , <i>adv.</i> , generally, usually.	<b>sencillo</b> , -a, simple.
<b>grande</b> , <i>adj.</i> , great, large, big.	<b>significar</b> , to mean, designate, denote.
<b>leer</b> , to read.	<b>su</b> ( <i>pl.</i> , -s), his, her, its, their, your.
<b>mucho</b> , -a, much; <i>pl.</i> , many; <i>adv.</i> , very, greatly, a great deal.	<b>traducir</b> , to translate.
<b>la oración</b> , the sentence.	<b>unos (-as) cuantos (-as)</b> , a few, some.
<b>la parte</b> , the part, division.	<b>usar</b> , to use, wear.
<b>poner</b> , to put, place, don, lay.	<b>en vez de</b> , <i>prep.</i> , instead of.

### EJERCICIO QUINTO (Exercise V)

Hoy la clase principia la parte de la gramática española que explica la concordancia y la construcción de los adjetivos. Los estudiantes han (*have*) aprendido que para determinar el género de un sustantivo lo esencial es saber su terminación. Saben cómo se forman el femenino y el plural de un adjetivo. Saben también que el adjetivo concuerda en género y número con el sustantivo que califica. Usan frases sencillas y fáciles para explicar las reglas de la gramática en vez de palabras y frases difíciles que no pueden traducir. La clase estudia hoy el presente de indicativo de la segunda conjugación y los números cardinales de uno a cincuenta.

12

### EJERCICIO ORAL QUINTO (Oral Exercise V)

1. The red book. 2. The written sentences. 3. The red pens and pencils. 4. The poor (*pitiable*) man. 5. The poor (*indigent*) man. 6. The simple and easy sentences. 7. The Spanish lady and gentleman. 8. Thirty-one of the books are for you, sir. 9. A very difficult lesson. 10. We ought to (*de*) translate everything. 11. A few rules, like the uses of the article, et cetera. 12. It does not agree with its noun. 13. Generally a pen is used instead of a pencil. 14. The rule is changed here. 15. Knowing that which is essential for you. 16. The large red feathers. 17. In order to determine the difficult part. 18. Thirty-one

words for to-day is not much. 19. The word means *simple* in Spanish. 20. We understand but we do not talk yet.

### TEMA QUINTO (Composition V)

The lesson for to-day ends the study of the adjective. The class learns that in Spanish the adjective agrees with the noun it modifies in gender and number. The position of adjectives is studied, because it is essential [to] know when the adjective is placed before the noun instead of after the noun in a Spanish sentence. Simple and easy words are used generally in the grammar lesson and in the vocabulary.

The second conjugation is quite easy to (de) learn. The truth is that there are no very difficult Spanish verbs, and with a little study a student can learn all the conjugations.

### CONVERSACIÓN QUINTA (Conversation V)

1. ¿Dónde se ponen los adjetivos que califican dos sustantivos del mismo género? 2. ¿Dónde se pone generalmente el adjetivo? 3. Cuando hay dos adjetivos ¿dónde se ponen? 4. ¿Qué significa el adjetivo **pobre** cuando se pone delante del sustantivo? ¿cuando se pone detrás del sustantivo? 5. Conjugue V. el presente de indicativo del verbo **deber**. 6. ¿Cuáles son en español los números cardinales de 20 a 30? ¿de 30 a 40? ¿de 40 a 50?

7. ¿Qué estudia la clase hoy? 8. ¿Qué explica la lección de gramática de hoy? 9. ¿Se emplean frases sencillas o difíciles para explicar las reglas de la gramática? 10. ¿Son difíciles las reglas de la gramática? 11. ¿Cuántas palabras españolas sabe V.? 12. ¿Sabe V. hablar español? 13. ¿Puede V. hablar de las cosas que hay en la sala? 14. ¿Es difícil para V. el estudio de la lengua española? 15. ¿Puede V. leer el ejercicio quinto? 16. V. lee bastante bien. Haga el favor de (*please*) traducir el ejercicio.



## LECCIÓN SEXTA

(Lesson VI)

## ADJETIVOS

(Adjectives)

## Apócope

(Apocopation)

64. The following adjectives lose the final -o when they precede a masculine singular noun:

<b>bueno</b> , good	<b>primero</b> , first	<b>uno</b> , one, a, an
<b>malo</b> , bad, ill	<b>tercero</b> , third	<b>alguno</b> , some, any
	<b>postrero</b> , last	<b>ninguno</b> , no, none
<b>un buen padre</b> , a good father	<b>algún día</b> , some day	
<b>ningún otro día</b> , no other day	<b>el primer buen día</b> , the first good day	

BUT: If **bueno** and **malo** are separated from their noun by other adjectives, they may retain the final -o, especially if the conjunction **y** intervenes.

**un malo, imprudente muchacho**, a bad, imprudent boy  
**un bueno y hermoso libro**, a good and beautiful book

65. The adjective **grande** meaning 'great' or 'grand' loses its final syllable before a singular noun of either gender.

**un gran hombre**, a great man      **una gran dificultad**, a great difficulty

1. Before a noun beginning with a vowel, or when the adjective is emphatic, the full form is sometimes used.

**un grande amigo**, a great friend      **un grande sacrificio**, a great sacrifice

2. To express size, **grande** regularly stands after the noun it modifies (cf. § 62).

**un edificio grande**, a large building

66. **Santo**, 'saint,' before the masculine name of a saint becomes **San**, except in the case of **Santo Domingo**, **Santo Tomás** and **Santo Toribio**.

**San Antonio**, Saint Anthony

NOTE. — The name of the island in the Antilles is **San Tomás**.

67. **Ciento**, 'hundred,' becomes **cien** before the noun it modifies, even if an adjective intervenes. But **ciento** is used before smaller numerals (cf. § 313).

**cien buenos alumnos**, a hundred good students

**ciento veinte**, one hundred and twenty

## Usos Particulares

(Special Uses)

68. Adjectives and participles are frequently used substantively. When so used they take the gender and number of the noun understood. The masculine plural form may designate individuals of both sexes (cf. § 40, 2).

**el muerto**, the dead man

**el viejo**, the old man

**la mejor vestida**, the best dressed woman

**la vieja**, the old woman

**los viejos**, the old men, *or* the old man and the old woman, *or* the old men and women

69. An English noun used adjectively, to denote the material of which a thing is made, or to indicate the purpose of a thing or the use to which it is put, is regularly expressed in Spanish by a corresponding noun preceded by the preposition **de**. The same construction is used to translate English adjectives of material. To indicate use or purpose **para**, 'for,' is sometimes required.

**una cadena de oro**, a gold (*or* golden) chain

**la sala de clase**, the class-room

**una mesa de mármol**, a marble table

**la lección de lectura**, the reading lesson

**una silla de madera**, a wooden chair

**una cuchara de plata**, a silver spoon

**una llave de maleta**, a valise key

**una cuchara para sopa**, a soup spoon

70. Adjectives may often be used adverbially.

Iban { **primeros**  
**primero** } **los bedeles**

The beadles went first

## VERBOS

(Verbs)

71. **Presente de Indicativo del Verbo *vivir* 'to live'**

(Present Indicative of the Verb *vivir*)

### TERCERA CONJUGACIÓN

(Third Conjugation)

#### *Singular*

**yo viv-o**

I live, am living, do live

**tú viv-es**

thou livest, etc.

**él (ella, usted) viv-e**

he (she, it, you) live(s), etc.

#### *Plural*

**nosotros viv-imos**

we live, etc.

**vosotros viv-is**

you live, etc.

**ellos (ellas, ustedes) viv-en**

they (you) live, etc.

72. Throughout the present indicative of all three conjugations the accent falls on the next to the last syllable, except in the second person plural, where it falls on the last syllable.

73. The personal endings in the second and third conjugations are exactly similar in all persons and tenses, except in the first and second persons plural of the present indicative.

Learn the cardinal numbers from fifty to one hundred (cf. § 308).

### VOCABULARIO SEXTO (Vocabulary VI)

la acera, the sidewalk.	particular, <i>adj.</i> , private, personal, special.
la alcoba, the bedroom.	el patio, the inner court, court.
el altar, the altar.	pequeño, -a, small, little.
la capilla, the chapel.	la piedra, the stone.
la casa, the house, home; a —, <i>adv.</i> , home.	el piso, the story, floor (el primer piso corresponds to the second floor of American houses, el piso bajo, to the ground floor).
la cocina, the kitchen.	la planta baja, the ground floor.
el comedor, the dining-room.	por, <i>prep.</i> , by, for, in, through, throughout, near, about, regarding.
directamente, <i>adv.</i> , directly.	principal, <i>adj.</i> , principal.
diferente, <i>adj.</i> , different.	representar, to represent, play, perform.
elegante, <i>adj.</i> , elegant.	la sala de recibo, the reception hall.
enjabegar, to whitewash.	el salón, the drawing-room.
entrar, to enter.	la vez, the time ( <i>indicating recurrence</i> ); algunas veces, sometimes; muchas veces, often; una —, once.
los Estados Unidos, the United States.	
la excepción, the exception.	
la flor, the flower.	
la galería, the arcade, gallery.	
la habitación, the room.	
la madera, the wood ( <i>used in construction, in distinction to leña, 'fire-wood'</i> ).	

### EJERCICIO SEXTO (Exercise VI)

Las casas particulares españolas con pocas excepciones son bastante diferentes de las casas de los Estados Unidos. 2  
Generalmente son de piedra enjabegada. Hay muy pocas de madera. En España muchas casas tienen patios. Se 4  
entra en el patio directamente de la acera por una gran puerta. En el patio hay generalmente hermosas galerías y 6  
muchas flores. Del patio se puede entrar en las diversas habitaciones principales de la planta baja: la sala de recibo, 8

el salón y el comedor. La cocina está detrás. Las alcobas están en el primer piso. Algunas veces en las casas elegantes <sup>10</sup> hay también una pequeña capilla particular con su altar. Detrás del altar muchas veces hay un buen cuadro que repre- <sup>12</sup> senta San José o algún otro santo.

### EJERCICIO ORAL SEXTO

(Oral Exercise VI)

1. A good picture. 2. Some other day. 3. A good and great gentleman. 4. A hundred beautiful Spanish houses. 5. First there is the dining-room; it is entered by the large door. 6. We live in a wooden house. 7. There are sixty pictures of saints in the building. 8. Canada is a great country. 9. Canada is a large country. 10. Sometimes we find an easy lesson in the first book. 11. Whitewashed stone is often used. 12. A good picture behind the altar. 13. The kitchen is entered directly from the sidewalk. 14. The reading lesson is by a Spanish professor. 15. St. Joseph is often represented in pictures. 16. The poor (man) lives here. 17. He can translate the third exercise.

### TEMA SEXTO

(Composition VI)

Private houses in Spain are not the same as (que) private houses in the United States. Generally Spanish houses are <sup>2</sup> of stone instead of wood. One often finds an inner court in many of the elegant houses of Spain, and there are a hun- <sup>4</sup> dred things which are quite different. The inner court is usually entered from the sidewalk by [means of] a large door. <sup>6</sup> The principal rooms of the house are not entered directly. It is necessary [to] enter (en) the inner court first. Once in <sup>8</sup> the inner court, it is easy enough [to] enter the principal rooms: the reception hall, the drawing-room, et cetera. The <sup>10</sup> kitchen cannot be entered from the inner court. The bedrooms are generally on the second floor and not on the <sup>12</sup> ground floor with the other rooms.

### CONVERSACIÓN SEXTA

(Conversation VI)

1. ¿Cuáles son los adjetivos que tienen apócope? 2. ¿Qué forma tiene **grande** cuando está delante de un sustantivo?

3. ¿Cuándo se usa la forma **San** en vez de **Santo**? 4. ¿Se pueden emplear los adjetivos como sustantivos? 5. ¿Cuántas conjugaciones hay en español? 6. Conjugue V. el presente de indicativo del verbo **vivir**; del verbo **escribir**. 7. ¿Cuáles son los números cardinales de cincuenta a sesenta; de ochenta a noventa?

8. ¿Hay casas de madera en España? 9. ¿Qué se usa generalmente en vez de madera? 10. ¿Qué es un patio? 11. ¿Hay flores en el patio generalmente? 12. ¿Dónde están las alcobas? 13. ¿Tienen capillas todas las casas españolas? 14. ¿Qué hay muchas veces detrás del altar?

## LECCIÓN SÉPTIMA

(Lesson VII)

### AUMENTATIVOS Y DIMINUTIVOS

(Augmentatives and Diminutives)

74. Spanish is very rich in suffixes, which are added to nouns, adjectives and adverbs to modify their ordinary meaning. In addition to the augmentative or diminutive idea, they sometimes express depreciation or affection. They are often used, especially in familiar style, but to employ them properly requires much familiarity with the language, for they cannot be appended indiscriminately to any word.

75. The principal augmentative suffixes are **-ón**, **-azo**, **-ote**, **-acho**. Besides the augmentative, they often have a depreciative value, especially **-ote** and **-acho**. The feminine is formed regularly, except of **-ote**, which becomes **-ota**.

**hombre**, man  
**vino**, wine  
**palabra**, word  
**rico**, rich

**hombrón**, big man  
**vinazo**, strong, thick wine  
**palabrota**, bad word, curse  
**ricacho**, vulgarly rich

76. The suffixes **-azo** and **-ada** may indicate a blow from, thrust with, report of, or injury due to, the thing named by the noun to which they are added.

**látigo**, whip  
**cuchillo**, knife  
**fusil**, gun

**latigazo**, blow with a whip  
**cuchillada**, knife thrust  
**fusilazo**, gunshot *or* blow with a gun

77. The principal diminutives are -ito, -cito, -ecito, -illo, -cillo, -ecillo, -ete, -cete, -ecete, -uelo, -zuelo, -ezuelo, and -ucho. The last four are commonly used with a depreciative value. The feminine is formed regularly, except of -ete, which becomes -eta.

hermano, brother  
jardín, garden  
flor, flower  
mano, hand  
clavo, nail  
historia, story  
pintor, artist  
casa, house

hermanito, little brother  
jardincito, little garden  
florecita, pretty little flower  
manecilla, small hand (*hand of a watch*)  
clavete, tack  
historieta, short story  
pintorzuelo, poor artist  
casucha, shanty

### Verbos

(Verbs)

78. In Spanish there are two verbs which correspond to the English verb 'to have,' but which cannot be used interchangeably: **haber** and **tener**.

79. The principal use of **haber** is as an auxiliary verb with past participles to form the compound tenses of verbs. The past participle so used is invariable.

He estudiado el español  
Hemos comido mucho

I have studied Spanish  
We have eaten a great deal

80. **Tener**, 'to have,' is used in general only to indicate possession.

Tengo un libro

I have a book

### 81. Presente de Indicativo de *haber* [*habiendo, habido*]<sup>1</sup>

(Present Indicative of *haber*)

#### *Singular*

yo he  
tú has  
él (ella, usted) ha

I have  
thou hast.  
he (she) has, you have

#### *Plural*

nosotros hemos  
vosotros habéis  
ellos (ellas, ustedes) han

we have  
you have  
they (you) have

<sup>1</sup> Cf. §§ 42-43.

82. Presente de Indicativo de *tener* [*teniendo, tenido*]<sup>1</sup>(Present Indicative of *tener*)*Singular*

yo tengo	I have
tú tienes	thou hast
él (ella, usted) tiene	he (she) has, you have

*Plural*

nosotros tenemos	we have
vosotros tenéis	you have
ellos (ellas, ustedes), tienen	they (you) have

Learn the cardinal numbers from one hundred to five hundred (cf. § 308).

## VOCABULARIO SÉPTIMO

(Vocabulary VII)

asistir, to assist; — a, to attend.	joven, <i>adj.</i> , young; <i>subst.</i> , youth, young man or woman.
ayudar, to aid, help.	la madre, the mother.
beato, —a, devout.	mi ( <i>pl.</i> , —s), my.
la calle, the street.	la misa, the mass.
constar (de), to consist (of).	el mozo, the youth, waiter, servant.
cuidar (de), to care (for), take care (of), look (after).	el muchacho, the boy; <i>f.</i> , la muchacha, the girl.
este, esta, <i>adj.</i> ; éste, ésta, <i>pron.</i> , this, this one.	ocupado, —a, occupied, busy.
la familia, the family.	el padre, the father.
con frecuencia, often.	poseer, to possess, own.
guapo, —a, handsome, good-looking.	el primo; <i>f.</i> , la prima, the cousin.
el hermano, the brother; <i>f.</i> , la hermana, the sister.	la tienda, the store, shop.
el hijo, the son; <i>f.</i> , la hija, the daughter.	el tío, the uncle; <i>f.</i> , la tía, the aunt.
imperioso, —a, imperious.	vender, to sell.
Inglaterra, <i>f.</i> , England.	el viudo, the widower; <i>f.</i> , la viuda, the widow.
inglés ( <i>f.</i> , inglesa), English.	ya, <i>adv.</i> , now, already.

## EJERCICIO SÉPTIMO

(Exercise VII)

Vivimos en una casita muy pequeña que posee mi padre en una calle de Madrid. La familia consta de mis padres, 2 mi hermanito y mis dos hermanas. Mi madre es muy beatona y asiste con frecuencia a misa. Ha vivido en Inglaterra y 4 sabe bien el inglés. Habla con sus hijos en ese idioma. Mi tía, que es viuda, tiene una tiendecita en la misma calle, donde 6 vende libros. Tiene dos hijos, un muchacho y una mucha-

<sup>1</sup> Cf. §§ 42-43.

chita. El muchacho, un mozuelo guapote, ayuda a<sup>1</sup> su madre 8  
 en la tienda, y cuida de su hermanita cuando su madre está  
 ocupada. Mi primo está aprendiendo el inglés. Cuando no 10  
 ayuda a<sup>1</sup> su madre, habla con un joven inglés, y ya ha apren-  
 dido mucho.<sup>2</sup>

12

### EJERCICIO ORAL SÉPTIMO

(Oral Exercise VII)

1. The small table. 2. The little boy. 3. He sells big books.  
 4. Bad words are heard on the streets. 5. My little brother is  
 quite good-looking. 6. The child has a pretty little flower.  
 7. The father and mother have a little house on this same street.  
 8. She is a widow, and very devout. 9. The little store has four  
 small windows. 10. My mother often takes care of my little  
 cousin. 11. They have had an interesting lesson. 12. Have you  
 found the pencil? 13. The lady has five hundred things in her  
 store. 14. He is very busy because he is helping (a) his brother.  
 15. The father has already learned three hundred Spanish words.  
 16. Writing is a difficult exercise for little children. 17. A very  
 devout person attends mass whenever it is possible. 18. Who is  
 this imperious youth? 19. She is a very pretty widow.

### TEMA SÉPTIMO

(Composition VII)

I have a cousin, a big, good-looking youth, who lives in a  
 little house which my father owns in Madrid. In the same 2  
 house his mother has a small store where she sells books and a  
 hundred other little things. My cousin is very good, and, 4  
 whenever my aunt is busy, he takes care of the store. When  
 he is not helping (a) his mother, he comes to my house and we 6  
 study English with my mother who has lived in England  
 and speaks English well. My mother is generally quite busy, 8  
 because she takes care of the house and of my little brothers  
 and sisters. She and my aunt are very devout and attend 10  
 mass whenever it is possible.

<sup>1</sup> The preposition *a* is used after transitive verbs before direct objects referring to persons. It is not to be translated (cf. § 306, 1).

<sup>2</sup> Such excessive use of augmentatives and diminutives as may be found in this exercise is not to be recommended. They are used here advisedly for the purpose of illustration.



### CONVERSACIÓN SÉPTIMA (Conversation VII)

1. ¿Qué terminaciones tienen los aumentativos? ¿los diminutivos?
2. ¿Cuántos verbos hay en español que significan *to have*?
3. Conjugue V. el presente de indicativo del verbo **haber**; del verbo **tener**.
4. ¿Cuáles son los números cardinales de doscientos a doscientos veinte?
5. ¿Cómo se dice *five hundred* en español?
6. ¿Dónde vive el joven?
7. ¿Cuántas personas hay en la familia?
8. ¿A qué misas asiste la madre?
9. ¿Dónde ha vivido la madre?
10. ¿Qué idioma hablan los ingleses?
11. ¿Qué está aprendiendo el primo?
12. ¿Ayuda a su madre este primo?
13. ¿Cuál es la palabra española que se usa para significar el padre de un primo?
14. ¿Cuántas personas hay en su familia de V.?
15. ¿Tiene V. hermanas?

### LECCIÓN OCTAVA (Lesson VIII)

#### ADJETIVOS Y PRONOMBRES POSESIVOS (Possessive Adjectives and Pronouns)

##### Adjetivos (Adjectives)

83. The possessive adjectives have different forms when they precede and when they follow the noun.

#### 84.                      DELANTE DEL SUSTANTIVO (Before the Noun)

<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>	
mi	mis	my
tu	tus	thy, your <sup>1</sup>
su	sus	his, her, its, your
nuestro, -a	nuestros, -as	our
vuestro, -a	vuestros, -as	your <sup>1</sup>
su	sus	their, your <sup>1</sup>

#### 85.                      DETRÁS DEL SUSTANTIVO (After the Noun)

<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>	
mío, -a	míos, -as	my
tuyo, -a	tuyos, -as	thy, your <sup>1</sup>
suyo, -a	suyos, -as	his, her, its, your
nuestro, -a	nuestros, -as	our
vuestro, -a	vuestros, -as	your <sup>1</sup>
suyo, -a	suyos, -as	their, your <sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 'Your' may be translated by **tu**, **vuestro** or **su**, etc., corresponding in use to **tú**, **vosotros** and **usted** (cf. § 185).

86. The possessive pronouns are formed by prefixing the definite article to the adjective forms that are used after the noun.

el mío, la mía, los míos, las mías, 'mine'; el tuyo, etc., 'thine,' etc.

¿Tiene un libro? Sí, tiene el nuestro Has he a book? Yes, he has ours

NOTE. — Lo before the masculine singular of the forms used after the noun makes an indefinite pronoun meaning 'that which is mine, thine,' etc.

87. After the verb *ser*, 'to be,' the article is usually omitted, unless an emphatic distinction is made.

Tanto gusto en conocerle. El gusto I am very glad to know you. The  
es mío pleasure is mine

Este libro es el mío, no es el suyo This book is mine, it isn't his

88. Possessive adjectives and possessive pronouns agree in gender and number with the thing possessed, and in person, with the possessor.

Nuestro caballo es pequeño

Our horse is small

La pluma es mía

The pen is mine

## VERBOS

(Verbs)

89. In Spanish there are two verbs which correspond to the English verb 'to be,' but which cannot be used interchangeably: *ser* and *estar*.

90. *Ser* expresses what is inherent or permanent; *estar*, what is accidental or temporary. *Estar* also expresses position whether temporary or permanent.

Es viejo y está enfermo

He is old and ill

La nieve es blanca

Snow is white

El profesor está sentado

The teacher is seated

Madrid está en España

Madrid is in Spain

## 91. Presente de Indicativo de *ser* [*siendo, sido*]<sup>1</sup> (Present Indicative of *ser*)

### *Singular*

yo soy

I am

tú eres

thou art

él (ella, usted) es

he (she) is, you are

### *Plural*

nosotros somos

we are

vosotros sois

you are

ellos (ellas, ustedes) son

they (you) are

<sup>1</sup> §§ 42-43.

**92. Presente de Indicativo de *estar* [*estando, estado*]<sup>1</sup>**  
 (Present Indicative of *estar*)

*Singular*

yo estoy	I am
tú estás	thou art
él (ella, usted) está	he (she) is, you are

*Plural*

nosotros estamos	we are
vosotros estáis	you are
ellos (ellas, ustedes) están	they (you) are

**93.** *Ser* is used with the past participles of active verbs to form the passive voice. The past participle so used agrees in gender and number with the subject.

*La niña es castigada por su madre*      The child is punished by her mother

**94.** When *estar* is used with the past participle, a state or condition is expressed rather than an action, and the participle has an adjective value.

<i>La puerta está abierta</i>	The door is open ( <i>state</i> )
<i>La puerta es abierta</i>	The door is opened ( <i>action</i> )

**95.** *Estar* is also used with the present participle of verbs to form the progressive tenses.

*Está estudiando*      He is studying

**96.** *Ser* and not *estar* is always used with a predicate noun.

<i>Su padre es abogado</i>	His father is a lawyer
<i>Es socio</i>	He is a member

**97.** Some adjectives have a different meaning according to whether they are used with *ser* or *estar*.

<i>El hombre es malo</i>	The man is bad ( <i>evil</i> )
<i>El hombre está malo</i>	The man is sick
<i>El alumno es bueno</i>	The student is good
<i>El alumno está bueno</i>	The student is well

Learn the cardinal numbers from five hundred to one thousand (cf. § 308).

<sup>1</sup> §§ 42-43.

## VOCABULARIO OCTAVO

(Vocabulary VIII)

el armario, the wardrobe, clothes-press.	mejor, <i>adj.</i> , better; el (la) —, the best.
comprar, to buy.	la noche, the night, evening.
el chaleco, the vest, waistcoat.	el pantalón, the trousers ( <i>commonly used in the plural</i> ).
la chaqueta, the coat.	preciso, -a, necessary.
exterior, <i>adj.</i> , outer, exterior.	prefiero, I prefer; <i>prefiere</i> , he, you, etc., prefer(s).
el frac, the dress-coat.	la ropa, the dress, clothing.
el gabán, the overcoat.	el sastre, the tailor.
guardar, to keep, protect, retain.	la sastrería, the tailor's (shop).
hacer, to do, make.	siempre, <i>adv.</i> , always, ever, still.
el ingeniero, the engineer.	el smoking, the dinner-coat, tuxedo.
interior, <i>adj.</i> , interior, inner, under; la ropa —, the under-clothing.	la tarde, the afternoon.
la levita, the frock-coat.	el traje, the suit of clothes, costume.
llevar, to wear, take, carry.	el vestido, the suit of clothes, clothing, dress.
la maleta, the valise, suit-case.	viajar, to travel.
mandar, to order, command, send.	

al contrario, on the other hand, on the contrary.

hace frío, it is cold.

## EJERCICIO OCTAVO

(Exercise VIII)

La ropa exterior se puede mandar hacer<sup>1</sup> en la sastrería o se puede comprar en las tiendas. Generalmente no es preciso mandar hacer la ropa interior, porque se pueden comprar todas estas cosas en las tiendas.

Mi hermano y yo no mandamos hacer nuestros trajes con el mismo sastre. Mi hermano prefiere al suyo porque hace bien las chaquetas y los chalecos. Yo, al contrario, prefiero al mío porque hace mejor los pantalones. Tengo un armario en mi cuarto donde guardo toda mi ropa exterior. Mi hermano, que es ingeniero, guarda una parte de la suya en una maleta, porque siempre está viajando. La ropa exterior que tengo en mi armario consta de un frac y de un smoking, trajes que se llevan por la noche, de una levita que se lleva por la tarde, de un gabán para cuando hace frío y de otros tres o cuatro trajes.

<sup>1</sup> The active infinitive is often used with the force of a passive after *mandar* and after many other verbs.

EJERCICIO ORAL OCTAVO  
(Oral Exercise VIII)

1. My suit of clothes. 2. Your store; our house. 3. His clothing; their frock-coats. 4. The coat is mine. 5. The valise is yours; he has mine. 6. The tailor is good. 7. He is a professor. 8. The lesson is learned by the student. 9. The professor is seated in the chair. 10. The little boy is attending mass for the first time. 11. The pen and pencil are mine. 12. Your brother has yours. 13. He is here; she is here. 14. The exercise is written by the little girl with a pen. 15. The theme is finished. 16. I am with my brother and sister. 17. He is young enough to (*para*) begin. 18. He has his book; we have ours. 19. We have been with our tailor. 20. This book may be interesting, but I prefer hers.

TEMA OCTAVO  
(Composition VIII)

Outer clothing can be bought in a store or at a tailor's. My brothers buy all their suits in the stores, but I have 2 mine made at the tailor's. He makes better clothes, and one can always have the suit that one prefers. I am an engineer 4 and always keep a suit of clothes and some underclothing in my valise, because I travel a great deal. In my wardrobe at 6 home I have trousers and vests, a frock-coat that I wear in the afternoon and a dress-coat that I wear in the evening. 8 I have another clothes-press too, where I keep my overcoats and the suits which I only wear when it is cold. 10

CONVERSACIÓN OCTAVA  
(Conversation VIII)

1. ¿En qué página principia la lección de hoy? 2. ¿En qué página termina? 3. ¿Cuáles son los adjetivos posesivos que se emplean delante del sustantivo? 4. ¿Cuáles son los adjetivos posesivos que se emplean detrás del sustantivo? 5. ¿Cómo se forman los pronombres posesivos? 6. ¿Cuántos verbos hay en español que significan *to be*? 7. Conjugue V. el presente de indicativo de *ser*; de *estar*.

8. ¿De qué consta la ropa exterior de hombre (*man*)?

9. ¿Dónde se pone la ropa cuando se viaja? 10. ¿Qué hace un sastre? 11. ¿Cuándo se lleva la levita? ¿cuándo se lleva el frac? 12. ¿Cuándo se usa el gabán? 13. ¿Qué tiene V. en su armario? 14. ¿Dónde compra V. sus trajes?

## LECCIÓN NOVENA

(Lesson IX)

### ADJETIVOS Y PRONOMBRES POSESIVOS

(Possessive Adjectives and Pronouns)

98. Since *su* (*pl.*, *sus*) may have several meanings, the possessor must often be more clearly defined. This is done by the use of either *su* (*sus*) or the definite article before the thing possessed and by *de* and the proper personal pronoun after the thing possessed (which form is often used; even if the verb *ser* intervenes).

la } casa	{ de él	his house
su }	{ de ella	her house
	{ de usted	your house ( <i>sing.</i> )
	{ de ellos	their house
	{ de ellas	their house
	{ de ustedes	your house ( <i>pl.</i> )
¿Cuál es su ( <i>or el</i> ) libro de V.?		Which is your book?
La casa es de él		The house is his

99. A possessive adjective modifying two or more nouns should be repeated before each noun, unless these nouns refer to the same person or object.

Mis libros y mi pluma están aquí	My books and (my) pen are here
Mi amigo y profesor, el señor Godoy	My friend and teacher, Mr. Godoy

100. The English expressions 'of mine,' 'of his,' etc., and the possessive in direct address, are translated by those forms of the possessive adjective which are used after the noun.

un poema nuestro	a poem of ours <i>or</i> one of our poems
Son alumnos míos	They are students of mine
¡Hijo mío!	My son!

101. The possessive adjective is often replaced by the definite article, especially when referring to parts of the body, clothing, etc. (cf. § 35). To indicate more definitely the possessor, an indirect object may be used, but, when the action expressed is functional with the part mentioned, the indirect object is regularly omitted.

Le cortó el pelo al niño  
 Me quité el sombrero  
 Abrió la boca

He cut the child's hair.  
 I took off my hat  
 He opened his mouth

1. When the object referred to is a thing in the singular, the like of which is possessed by several individuals of a group, a singular noun is generally used in Spanish where in English the plural is preferred.

Se pintaron la cara y las manos  
 Levantad la mano  
 Sacaron la lengua  
 Todos se quitaron el sombrero

They painted their faces and hands  
 Raise your hands (*one hand each*)  
 They stuck out their tongues  
 They all took off their hats

102. The possessive adjective is usually required when the part of the body, clothing, etc., in question is the subject of a clause or sentence, is qualified by an adjective, or where ambiguity may arise from the use of the definite article.

Sus ojos chispeaban  
 Yo estaba mirando su linda cara  
 Una fuerza extraordinaria detuvo  
 sus manos

Her eyes flashed  
 I was looking at her pretty face  
 A strange power stopped his hands

103. The possessive adjective may be strengthened by the use of the proper form of the adjective *propio*, 'own.'

*mi propio sombrero*, my own hat    *nuestra propia tienda*, our own store

### CONSTRUCCIÓN DE LAS PALABRAS EN LA ORACIÓN

(Position of the Words in a Sentence)

104. In Spanish much greater freedom is allowed in the construction of the sentence than in English. Subjects or objects may precede or follow the verb, or both may come together before or after the verb.

La madre quiere mucho a su hija  
 A su hija quiere mucho la madre  
 Quiere mucho a su hija la madre  
 Quiere mucho la madre a su hija  
 A su hija la madre quiere mucho  
 La casa es nueva  
 Es nueva la casa

The mother is very fond of her daughter

The house is new

1. In interrogative sentences it is considered more elegant, as a rule, to place a noun subject after its predicate.

¿Es difícil la lección?

Is the lesson difficult?

¿Ha escrito la carta tu hermano?

Has your brother written the letter?

BUT: ¿Ha escrito V. la carta?

Have you written the letter?

Learn the objective personal pronouns and their position (cf. §§ 191, 197).

# VOCABULARIO NOVENO

(Vocabulary IX)

el amigo; <i>f.</i> , la amiga, the friend.	lavar, to wash.
la calidad, the quality.	la media, the stocking.
la camisa, the shirt.	la mujer, the woman, wife.
la camisería, the haberdashery.	necesitar, to need, require.
conozco, I know ( <i>am acquainted with</i> ).	el pañuelo, the handkerchief, kerchief.
la corbata, the cravat, tie, necktie.	planchar, to iron.
el cuello, the collar, neck.	el puño, the cuff, fist.
el cuidado, the care; tener —, to take care, be careful.	la señal, the sign, signal; <i>pl.</i> , address.
el delantal, the apron.	solamente, <i>adv.</i> , only.
desear, to desire, wish, like.	el sombrero, the hat.
doy, I give.	sucio, —a, dirty, soiled.
el encaje, the lace.	superior, <i>adj.</i> , superior, upper.
el guante, the glove.	tanto, —a, as much, so much;
el hombre, the man.	<i>pl.</i> , as ( <i>or</i> so) many; <i>adv.</i> , so much.
inferior, <i>adj.</i> , inferior, lower.	vario, —a, various.
la lavandera, the laundress, wash-woman.	el zapato, the shoe.

## EJERCICIO NOVENO

(Exercise IX)

Compro mi ropa interior en una camisería. Aquí se venden corbatas, pañuelos, medias, camisas, puños, cuellos y toda la 2  
ropa interior que necesita un hombre. Una hermana mía compra su propia ropa en otra tienda donde se venden 4  
solamente cosas de mujeres: encajes, delantales, vestidos etc. Nuestros sombreros, guantes y zapatos los<sup>1</sup> compramos en 6  
diversas tiendas. Hay varias camiserías en la calle de Alcalá, pero es preciso tener cuidado, porque hay tiendas donde se 8  
vende ropa de calidad inferior. Conozco a algunas tiendas muy buenas en Madrid, y siempre doy las señas de ellas a 10  
mis amigos cuando desean comprar buena ropa. Cuando la ropa interior está sucia se la<sup>2</sup> mando a la lavandera. La 12  
mía me<sup>3</sup> lava y plancha muy bien las camisas y los cuellos.

## EJERCICIO ORAL NOVENO

(Oral Exercise IX)

1. His house; her house; our gloves; their cuffs. 2. Their collars; your shoes. 3. His shirts and vests. 4. The hat is his.

<sup>1</sup> A redundant pronoun is often used in order to make clear the subject or object of the verb. <sup>2</sup> Cf. §§ 201–202. <sup>3</sup> Cf. § 203.



5. Their friend and teacher, Mr. Ramírez. 6. I give the collars to my daughter. 7. Daughter, where are you? 8. A friend of mine washes his own gloves. 9. He takes off (*se quita*) his hat when there are ladies in the room. 10. Our own laundress comes to the house Mondays. 11. This sidewalk of ours needs to be washed. 12. He keeps his hat in his hand. 13. The laundress washes my collars and cuffs. 14. Their hats and gloves are on the table. 15. When it is cold we wear overcoats. 16. Here they are, his friend and mine. 17. He does not live with his own family. 18. I always take care when I buy clothes.

TEMA NOVENO  
(Composition IX)

I am traveling and find that there are some things which I have not brought with me. Do you know where there is a good store where they sell mens' clothing? — Yes, sir. There is a large haberdashery on Alcalá Street where they sell shirts, neckties, collars, cuffs, etc. I do not buy my own clothing in this store, it is true, but a friend of mine says that they do not sell inferior things. There are various other haberdasheries on the same street, but if (*si*) you desire good clothing it is better [to] be careful and only buy in the better stores. — You say that the large store on Alcalá Street is the best; have you the address of it here? — Yes, sir. It is number 542. If you wish to have your shirts and collars washed, I know a laundress who washes and irons very well. — Good, because I have traveled so much that my clothing is very dirty.

CONVERSACIÓN NOVENA  
(Conversation IX)

1. ¿Cómo se dice en español *his house, her house, their house*?  
2. ¿Cómo se dice *a friend of mine*? 3. ¿Se puede emplear en español el artículo determinado en vez del adjetivo posesivo?  
4. ¿Cuál es el uso de la palabra **propio**? 5. ¿Tienen la misma construcción las frases españolas y las inglesas?

6. ¿Dónde se compra la ropa interior de hombre? 7. ¿Qué objetos (*objects*) se venden en una camisería? 8. ¿Qué compran las mujeres en las tiendas? 9. ¿Para qué sirve un delantal?

10. ¿Qué se hace con la ropa interior cuando está sucia?  
 11. ¿Lavan y planchan bien las lavanderas? 12. ¿Dónde compra V. sus guantes y sus corbatas? 13. ¿Dónde compra V. sus cuellos? 14. ¿Hay algunas buenas tiendas en Madrid donde se puede comprar la ropa interior?

## LECCIÓN DÉCIMA

(Lesson X)

### ADJETIVOS Y PRONOMBRES DEMOSTRATIVOS

(Demonstrative Adjectives and Pronouns)

105. The demonstrative adjectives regularly precede their nouns and agree with them in gender and number.

#### Adjetivos Demostrativos

(Demonstrative Adjectives)

<i>Singular</i>			<i>Plural</i>		
MASCULINO	FEMENINO		MASCULINO	FEMENINO	
<b>este</b>	<b>esta</b>	this	<b>estos</b>	<b>estas</b>	these
<b>ese</b>	<b>esa</b>	that	<b>esos</b>	<b>esas</b>	those
<b>aquel</b>	<b>aquella</b>	that	<b>aquellos</b>	<b>aquellas</b>	those

106. **Este** denotes what is near the speaker or mentioned by him; **ese**, what is near, or known to, the person spoken to, or what has recently been referred to; and **aquel**, what is remote from both or not recently referred to. Referring to time, **este** denotes the present; **ese**, a period relatively near; and **aquel**, a remote period.

**este libro**, this book

**ese libro**, that book (*near you*)

**aquel libro**, that book (*yonder*)

**este año**, this year

**esos años**, those years

**aquellos siglos**, those centuries

NOTE. — **Ese** is also used to express contempt. It may precede, but usually follows its noun, which then takes the definite article.

**el llorón ese** (*or ese llorón*), that 'cry-baby'

107. The demonstrative pronouns are distinguished from the demonstrative adjectives by a written accent. They agree in gender and number with the nouns they represent.

The neuter pronouns, having no corresponding adjective forms, need no accent to distinguish them. The neuter pronouns do not represent a noun, but refer to a whole phrase, sentence or idea.

## 108.

**Pronombres Demostrativos**  
 (Demonstrative Pronouns)
*Singular*

## MASCULINO

éste

ése

aquél

## FEMENINO

ésta

ésa

aquélla

this (one)

that (one)

that (one)

## NEUTRO

esto

eso

aquello

this

that

that

*Plural*

## MASCULINO

éstos

ésos

aquéllos

## FEMENINO

éstas

ésas

aquéllas

these

those

those

este libro y aquél

¿Cuáles le gustan más, éstos o ésos?

¿Ha leído V. esto?

Eso es

this book and that one (*yonder*)

Which do you like better, these or those?

Have you read this?

That's it, *or* that's right

109. Éste, etc., sometimes means 'the latter,' and aquél, etc., 'the former.' In the Spanish sentence the 'latter' is generally referred to before the 'former,' which is the reverse of the English usage.

Juan y Pedro son estudiantes; éste es trabajador, aquél es holgazán

John and Peter are students; the latter is diligent, the former is lazy

NOTE. — They may also be used as correlatives.

Éstos cantaban, aquéllos bailaban

Some sang, others danced

110. In correspondence en (de, a) ésta and en (de, a) ésa are used elliptically, the word ciudad, 'city,' being generally understood.

Llegué a ésta el 15

¿Cómo va su salud en ésa?

I arrived here the 15th

How is your health in that city?

111. Before a relative clause, or before a phrase introduced by de, a definite article is generally used instead of a demonstrative (*or* personal) pronoun.

El que vino ayer es mi hermano

Lo que necesito es un gabán

la de los cabellos rubios

The one (he) who came yesterday is my brother

What (that which) I need is an overcoat

the fair-haired one (*lit.* she of the fair hair)

112. The demonstrative adjective *aquel*, etc., sometimes replaces the definite article when the following relative is the object of a preposition.

<i>aquella</i> ( <i>not la</i> ) <i>a</i> quien saludé	the one to whom I bowed
BUT: <i>aquel</i> ( <i>or el</i> ) del bigote	the one with the mustache
<i>aquello</i> ( <i>or lo</i> ) del dinero perdido	that (question) about the lost money

### VOCABULARIO DÉCIMO (Vocabulary X)

<i>abierto</i> , -a, open, opened.	<i>la fábrica</i> , the manufactory, edifice, structure.
<i>aprendieron</i> ( <i>pret. of aprender</i> ), learned.	<i>fabricar</i> , to manufacture.
<i>arraigado</i> , -a, deep-rooted.	<i>el fumador</i> , the smoker.
<i>bajo</i> , <i>prep.</i> , below, under.	<i>fumar</i> , to smoke.
<i>el campo</i> , the field, country.	<i>importante</i> , <i>adj.</i> , important.
<i>el cigarillo</i> , the cigarette.	<i>las Indias occidentales</i> , the West Indies.
<i>el cigarro</i> ( <i>puro</i> ), the cigar.	<i>la industria</i> , the industry.
<i>continental</i> , <i>adj.</i> , continental.	<i>industrial</i> , <i>adj.</i> , industrial.
<i>la costumbre</i> , the custom, habit.	<i>inmenso</i> , -a, immense.
<i>cultivar</i> , to cultivate.	<i>el marinero</i> , the sailor.
<i>la cultura</i> , the culture, cultivation.	<i>más</i> , <i>adv.</i> , more.
<i>deshacerse</i> ( <i>de</i> ), to remove, rid oneself of.	<i>el monopolio</i> , the monopoly.
<i>la dirección</i> , the direction, management.	<i>nada</i> , <i>pron.</i> , nothing.
<i>el estado</i> , the state, government.	<i>la pipa</i> , the pipe; <i>fumar en</i> —, to smoke a pipe.
	<i>Sevilla</i> , <i>f.</i> , Seville.
	<i>el tabaco</i> , the tobacco.

### EJERCICIO DÉCIMO (Exercise X)

Aquellos marineros españoles que aprendieron a fumar tabaco de los naturales de las Indias occidentales han abierto un inmenso campo industrial. En España la cultura del tabaco forma una industria muy importante. En ese país de fumadores esta industria es un monopolio lo mismo que en los otros países continentales. El tabaco se cultiva, se fabrica y se vende bajo la dirección del estado.

Hay en Sevilla una fábrica muy importante de cigarros y cigarillos. Éstos se fuman mucho más que aquéllos en España. Hay pocos españoles que fuman en pipa. Son muy pocos los que no fuman nada. La verdad es que los españoles no pueden deshacerse de una costumbre tan (*so*) arraigada.

EJERCICIO ORAL DÉCIMO  
(Oral Exercise X)

1. This factory; these factories; that man; those men (*near you*); that book; those books (*over yonder*). 2. These first lessons. 3. That friend of yours. 4. Those years (*long ago*). 5. This one is better. 6. How is traveling in that city? 7. The two smokers are in that room over there. 8. There are cigars and cigarettes on the table, the former are for my father and the latter are for my uncle. 9. I do not smoke, because smoking is not a good habit. 10. The tobacco factories in Spain are under the direction of the government, are they not? 11. That's it, my friend. 12. Some Spanish sailors learned the use of tobacco. 13. The one that is here is my brother. 14. That of which he speaks is very important. 15. A monopoly of the other industries is not necessary. 16. Do you wish this one or that one? — I wish the latter.

TEMA DÉCIMO  
(Composition X)

In Spain one of the deep-rooted habits of the men is that of smoking (*use infinitive*).—The Spanish have always smoked 2 since (*desde*) the day when those Spanish sailors in the West Indies learned the use of tobacco. The tobacco industry is 4 to-day one of the important industries of Spain, as it is in many other countries. The tobacco is manufactured under 6 the direction of the government in some countries, and in private factories in others. The latter is true in the United 8 States, but in the continental countries the government owns the factories. The best tobacco for cigars is cultivated in the 10 West Indies, and when one buys a pure Havana cigar one always knows that it is the best that is made. 12

CONVERSACIÓN DÉCIMA  
(Conversation X)

1. ¿Cómo se dice en español *the former . . . the latter*? 2. ¿Cuándo se escriben los acentos en los demostrativos? 3. ¿Hay un adjetivo demostrativo neutro?
4. ¿Quiénes aprendieron primero el uso del tabaco? 5. ¿Dónde

están las Indias occidentales? 6. ¿Se cultiva el tabaco en los Estados Unidos? 7. ¿Cómo se fuma el tabaco? 8. ¿Cuáles son más grandes, los cigarros o los cigarillos? 9. ¿Cuáles se fuman más en España? 10. ¿Hay algunos españoles que no fuman nada? 11. ¿Está muy arraigada la costumbre de fumar? 12. ¿Fuma su señor padre? 13. ¿Dónde compra sus cigarros su padre de V.? 14. ¿Es buena la costumbre de fumar? 15. ¿Es fácil deshacerse de aquella costumbre?

## LECCIÓN XI<sup>1</sup>

(Lesson XI)

### VERBOS

(Verbs)

### PRETÉRITO IMPERFECTO<sup>2</sup> Y PRETÉRITO PERFECTO<sup>2</sup> DE INDICATIVO

(Imperfect and Preterit Indicative)

#### (Pretérito) Imperfecto

(Imperfect)

113.

I

habl-aba  
habl-abas  
habl-aba

I spoke, did speak, was speaking, used to speak, would<sup>3</sup> speak, etc.

habl-ábamos  
habl-abais  
habl-aban

114.

II

deb-ía  
deb-ías  
deb-ía

I owed (*or* ought), etc.

deb-íamos  
deb-íais  
deb-ían

115.

III

viv-ía  
viv-ías  
viv-ía

I lived, etc.

viv-íamos  
viv-íais  
viv-ían

116. The imperfect indicative is formed by adding to the stem of the verb the endings *-aba*, etc., in the first conjugation, *-ía*, etc., in the second and third. The accent falls throughout on the first vowel of the endings in all three conjugations,

<sup>1</sup> From here on cardinal numbers are used, because the ordinals above ten are rarely employed in numbering lessons, chapters, etc. (cf. § 321).

<sup>2</sup> In this grammar these tenses will be called *Imperfecto* and *Pretérito* respectively.

<sup>3</sup> A distinction must be made between 'would' used to indicate customary action and 'would' the sign of the conditional (cf. § 137).

and is written in the first person plural of the first conjugation, and over the *i* of the endings in all forms of the second and third conjugations.

117. There are only three verbs that are irregular in the imperfect indicative. They are:

ser, to be: *era, eras, era, éramos, erais, eran*

ir, to go: *iba, ibas, iba, íbamos, ibais, iban*

ver, to see: *veía, veías, veía, veíamos, veíais, veían*

### Pretérito (Perfecto) (Preterit)

118.	I	
habl-é habl-aste habl-ó	I spoke, did speak	habl-amos habl-asteis habl-aron
119.	II	
deb-í deb-iste deb-ió	I owed (ought), did owe	deb-imos deb-isteis deb-ieron
120.	III	
viv-í viv-iste viv-ió	I lived, did live	viv-imos viv-isteis viv-ieron

121. The preterit is formed by adding to the stem of the verb the appropriate endings for the different conjugations. The endings are the same in the second and third conjugations. The accent falls on the first vowel of the endings throughout, except in *-iό* and *-ieron*, where it falls on the second. It must be written in the first and third persons singular of all three conjugations.

NOTE. — By analogy the accent is also written on monosyllabic preterits ending in a diphthong, as in *ver*, 'to see': *vi, viste, viό* (cf. § 20, 5).

122. Verbs whose stem ends in a vowel change *i* to *y* in the preterit endings *-iό* and *-ieron*. Moreover they receive a written accent on the *i* of the endings *-iste, -imos, -isteis*.

creer, to believe: *creí, creíste, creyό, creímos, creísteis, creyeron*

leer, to read: *leí, leíste, leyό, leímos, leísteis, leyeron*

123. The imperfect indicative is used to express (1) customary past action, (2) continued past action, state, or condition

when emphasis is laid upon the fact of its continuance or recurrence, (3) action that was going on in the past when something else happened. It might be termed the descriptive past tense.

Cuando yo estaba en el campo, me  
levantaba a las cinco  
El sol brillaba y los pájaros cantaban  
Yo escribía una carta cuando entró  
mi hermano

When I was in the country, I would  
(used to) get up at five o'clock  
The sun shone and the birds sang  
I was writing a letter when my  
brother entered

124. Verbs expressing desire, ability, duty, obligation, thought, knowledge, etc., inasmuch as they express in the past rather states of mind than actions, are usually used in the imperfect instead of the preterit tense.

Yo quería verle, pero no sabía dónde  
estaba

I wanted to see him, but I didn't  
know where he was

125. The preterit is used to express definite past action (not state or condition) of long or short duration, provided the idea of action and not duration is emphasized. It might be termed the narrative past tense.

Ayer vi a su hermano  
Luis XIV reinó 72 años

I saw your brother yesterday  
Louis XIV reigned 72 years

126. The perfect tense, which is composed of the present indicative of *haber* and a past participle, is often used instead of the preterit to express (1) past action without reference to any particular time, (2) past action that took place recently or in a space of time not yet elapsed. The parts of a compound tense must not be separated by other words as often in English.

¿Ha leído V. las obras de Calderón?  
He comido con amigos hoy  
He estudiado todo este año

Have you read Calderón's works?  
I dined with friends to-day  
I have studied all this year

NOTE. — The present tense is used instead of the past tense in certain idiomatic expressions involving time. It is regularly so used when the event begun in the past is still continuing. If the event is a completed occurrence, a past tense is used.

¿Desde cuándo está V. en Nueva  
York?

How long have you been in New  
York? (*The person questioned is  
still there*)

BUT: Hace dos años que estaba en  
Madrid

It is two years since he was in Ma-  
drid. (*The person in question is no  
longer there.*)

Learn the reflexive pronouns (cf. § 213).



# VOCABULARIO XI

(Vocabulary XI)

<b>la agudeza</b> , the wit, witticism.	<b>la escena</b> , the scene.
<b>alegre</b> , <i>adj.</i> , gay, cheerful, animated.	<b>estuve</b> ( <i>pret. of estar</i> ), I was.
<b>la andaluza</b> , the Andalusian woman.	<b>famoso</b> , -a, famous.
<b>andar</b> , to go, go through, pass through.	<b>gritar</b> , to shout, call, cry out, exclaim.
<b>atreverse</b> , to venture, dare.	<b>había</b> ( <i>imp. of haber</i> ), there was, there were.
<b>aventajar</b> , to surpass, outdo.	<b>hacia</b> , <i>prep.</i> , toward.
<b>burlarse</b> ( <i>de</i> ), to make fun (of), laugh ( <i>at</i> ).	<b>el hombro</b> , the shoulder.
<b>la carcajada</b> , the burst of laughter, laughter.	<b>iluminar</b> , to light up, light.
<b>la cigarrera</b> , the cigarette ( <i>or</i> cigar) maker ( <i>f.</i> ).	<b>mientras que</b> , <i>conj.</i> , while, whilst, as.
<b>el color</b> , the color.	<b>la mirada</b> , the glance.
<b>conocer</b> , to know, be acquainted with.	<b>ofrecer</b> , to offer.
<b>cuchichear</b> , to whisper.	<b>presentar</b> , to present, introduce.
<b>dirigir</b> , to direct, lead, aim.	<b>riéndose</b> , laughing.
	<b>salado</b> , -a, witty, clever.
	<b>el sol</b> , the sun.
	<b>soltar</b> , to free, loosen, untie, utter.
	<b>vistoso</b> , -a, showy, brilliant.
<b>a la vez</b> , at the same time.	
<b>de vez en cuando</b> , from time to time.	
<b>dígame V.</b> , tell me.	

# EJERCICIO XI

(Exercise XI)

Cuando estuve en Sevilla un amigo se<sup>1</sup> ofreció para llevarme<sup>2</sup> a ver la famosa fábrica de tabacos. Entramos en el hermoso edificio por una gran puerta que está en la calle de San Fernando. Una escena muy alegre se nos<sup>3</sup> presentó a la vista al<sup>4</sup> entrar. En las inmensas galerías había más de<sup>5</sup> 4500 mujeres que hacían cigarros y cigarillos. Por las ventanas abiertas el sol iluminaba los pañuelos de varios colores vistosos que llevaban en los hombros las cigarreras. Todas hablaban a la vez, gritando y riéndose<sup>1</sup> mucho. Algunas dirigieron la mirada hacia nosotros.

Andando por las galerías entendí que las muchachas cuchicheaban detrás de nosotros y soltaban la carcajada de vez en cuando. Yo sabía que se<sup>1</sup> burlaban de mí, pero no me<sup>1</sup> atreví a decir nada, conociendo bien que no es posible aventajar en agudezas a las saladas andaluzas.

<sup>1</sup> Cf. § 213, 1.    <sup>2</sup> Cf. § 197.    <sup>3</sup> Cf. § 201.    <sup>4</sup> Cf. § 223, 2.    <sup>5</sup> Cf. § 238, 2.

### EJERCICIO ORAL XI (Oral Exercise XI)

1. He was speaking; they used to speak. 2. He had found; we had offered; you had surpassed. 3. We did not go through the factory. 4. I did not know where he was. 5. I spoke to the cigarette maker. 6. The girls made fun of the man who visited the factory. 7. Where were you? 8. I was in the inner court when you called. 9. A beautiful scene presented itself. 10. We had written the eleventh exercise when the professor entered. 11. That was my mother. 12. He lived with you when you were in Spain, did he not? 13. The sun lit up the room and the family was cheerful. 14. I heard [that] the girls burst out laughing. 15. I read the article and believed that it was true. 16. They had studied all the lessons and were beginning to (a) read simple things. 17. His uncle used to be an engineer when he was young. 18. I did not dare to (a) say anything. 19. The little girl would sing all (the) day [long]. 20. Those kerchiefs were brilliant, were they not?

### TEMA XI (Composition XI)

One of the most interesting things that I saw while I was in Seville was the famous tobacco factory. A friend of mine 2 took me there (allí) and explained how the cigars and cigarettes were made. It was a very animated scene which presented itself to us<sup>1</sup> on entering.<sup>2</sup> There were more than<sup>3</sup> 4500 4 girls making cigarettes in the various galleries of the large 6 building. Many of them wore on their shoulders kerchiefs of various brilliant colors which the sun, entering through the 8 open windows, lit up.

While we were passing through the galleries, I heard the 10 cigarette makers whispering behind us, and there were some who burst out laughing. They were laughing at me,<sup>4</sup> but I 12 did not dare to (a) speak to them, for I had heard that one could not outdo the Andalusian women in wit. 14

<sup>1</sup> Cf. § 201.    <sup>2</sup> Cf. § 223, 2.    <sup>3</sup> Cf. § 238, 2.    <sup>4</sup> Cf. § 208.

## CONVERSACIÓN XI

(Conversation XI)

1. ¿Cuáles son las terminaciones del pretérito imperfecto de la primera conjugación? ¿de la segunda y tercera? 2. ¿Cuáles son las terminaciones del pretérito perfecto de la primera conjugación? ¿de la segunda y tercera? 3. ¿Se escribe el acento en las terminaciones de la segunda y de la tercera conjugación? 4. ¿En qué personas del pretérito perfecto hay un acento escrito? 5. Conjugue V. el pretérito perfecto del verbo **creer**; del verbo **leer**.

6. ¿Conoce V. alguna fábrica de tabacos? 7. Dígame V. algo (*something*) de la fábrica de tabacos de Sevilla. 8. Qué se nos presentó a la vista al entrar? 9. ¿Cuántas cigarreras había? 10. ¿Qué llevaban las cigarreras en los hombros? 11. ¿Eran vistosos los pañuelos? 12. ¿Son bonitas las andaluzas? 13. ¿Se venden cigarros españoles en los Estados Unidos? 14. ¿Dónde está Sevilla?

## LECCIÓN XII

(Lesson XII)

### VERBOS

(Verbs)

### FUTURO (IMPERFECTO) Y CONDICIONAL

(The Future and the Conditional)

#### Futuro (Imperfecto)<sup>1</sup>

(Future)

127.

I

hablar-é  
hablar-ás  
hablar-á

I shall (will) speak, etc.

hablar-emos  
hablar-éis  
hablar-án

128.

II

deber-é  
deber-ás  
deber-á

I shall (will) owe, etc.

deber-emos  
deber-éis  
deber-án

129.

III

vivir-é  
vivir-ás  
vivir-á

I shall (will) live, etc.

vivir-emos  
vivir-éis  
vivir-án

<sup>1</sup> This tense will be called in this grammar **Futuro**.

**130.** The future indicative is formed by adding to the infinitive the endings as given above, which are the same for all Spanish verbs, regular and irregular. They are derived from the present indicative of the verb **haber**, thus, **hablar (h)é**, **hablar (h)ás**, etc. The accent falls on the first vowel of the ending throughout, and is always written, except in the first person plural.

**131.** The use of the future indicative in Spanish is practically the same as in English. It expresses both the idea of will or determination and that of simple futurity. In the former sense, however, **querer** is frequently used.

Lo buscaré mañana	I shall look for it to-morrow
¿Vendrá usted con nosotros?	Shall ( <i>or</i> will) you come with us?
BUT: ¿Quiere usted venir con nosotros?	Will you ( <i>or</i> do you wish to) come with us?

**132.** The present indicative is used instead of the future after **si** meaning 'if.'

Si él viene a las cinco, me encontrará en casa	If he will come at five o'clock, he will find me at home
NOTE. — If <b>si</b> has the sense of 'whether,' the future is used.	
No sé si vivirá o no	I don't know whether he will live or not

### Conditional<sup>1</sup> (Conditional)

**133.**

I

hablar-ía	I should (would) speak, etc.	hablar-íamos
hablar-ías		hablar-íais
hablar-ía		hablar-ían

**134.**

II

deber-ía	I should (would) owe, ought, etc.	deber-íamos
deber-ías		deber-íais
deber-ía		deber-ían

NOTE. — The conditional of **deber** is used to denote mild obligation, and is often used instead of the present to translate 'I ought,' etc.

**135.**

III

vivir-ía	I should (would) live, etc.	vivir-íamos
vivir-ías		vivir-íais
vivir-ía		vivir-ían

<sup>1</sup> This tense in Spanish grammars is grouped under the subjunctive, and called **Pretérito Imperfecto**. In this book it has been grouped with the tenses of the indicative and called **Condicional** by analogy with the French custom.

**136.** The conditional is formed by adding to the infinitive the endings as given above, which are the same as those of the imperfect indicative of the second and third conjugations. This is true of both regular and irregular verbs.

**137.** The use of the conditional in Spanish is practically the same as in French. In English it is translated by 'would' or 'should.'

**Me dijo que vendría a las cinco**      He told me that he would come at five

**138.** The future may be used in place of the present and the conditional in place of the imperfect, in an independent clause, to denote probability or conjecture. This is true also of the corresponding compound tenses.

**Serán las doce**  
**Habría llegado**

It must be (about) twelve o'clock  
He must likely have come

**139.** **Ser** and **estar** are regular in the formation of the future and conditional.

**140.** **Haber** and **tener** have the regular endings in the future and conditional. The stems change, however. **Haber** becomes **habr-é**, **habr-ía**. **Tener** becomes **tendr-é**, **tendr-ía**. For all forms of the auxiliary verbs, cf. §§ 406-409.

## VOCABULARIO XII (Vocabulary XII)

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <b>acerca de</b> , <i>prep.</i> , about, in regard to.                         | <b>el monumento</b> , the monument.                  |
| <b>algo</b> , <i>pron.</i> , something, anything; <i>adv.</i> , somewhat.      | <b>morisco</b> , -a, Moorish.                        |
| <b>allí</b> , <i>adv.</i> , there.   | <b>el moro</b> , the Moor.                           |
| <b>antiguo</b> , -a, old, ancient.   | <b>la ocupación</b> , the occupation.                |
| <b>la catedral</b> , the cathedral.  | <b>el palacio</b> , the palace.                      |
| <b>la columna</b> , the column.  | <b>pasar</b> , to pass, spend.                       |
| <b>el día</b> , the day.   | <b>por consiguiente</b> , consequently.              |
| <b>la duda</b> , the doubt.  | <b>querido</b> , -a, dear, beloved.                  |
| <b>durar</b> , to last, endure.  | <b>salir</b> , to go out, leave.                     |
| <b>hasta</b> , <i>prep.</i> , until, up to, even; — <i>que, conj.</i> , until. | <b>el siglo</b> , the century.                       |
| <b>julio</b> , July.   | <b>tarde</b> , <i>adv.</i> , late.                   |
| <b>llegar</b> , to arrive.   | <b>el tiempo</b> , the time, period, tense, weather. |
| <b>magnífico</b> , -a, magnificent.  | <b>la torre</b> , the tower.                         |
| <b>la mezquita</b> , the mosque.   | <b>la visita</b> , the visit.                        |
|  | <b>visitar</b> , to visit.                           |

### EJERCICIO XII (Exercise XII)

CÓRDOBA,<sup>1</sup> 29 de julio de 1912.

QUERIDO AMIGO: — Hoy hemos salido de Sevilla, llegando 2  
aquí esta noche. Ya es tarde y por consiguiente no visitare-  
mos nada hasta mañana. Por primera vez me<sup>2</sup> es posible 4  
escribirle<sup>3</sup> algo acerca de nuestra visita a Sevilla. Hemos  
pasado varios días allí visitando la famosa catedral, la Gi- 6  
ralda, magnífica torre morisca, y el Alcázar, antiguo pala-  
cio de los moros. V. sabrá<sup>4</sup> sin duda que la ocupación de 8  
esta parte de España por los moros duró más de seis siglos, y  
que aquí, como en todas partes, hay varios monumentos 10  
moriscos. Veremos mañana uno de los más hermosos, la  
mezquita de Córdoba con sus mil columnas. 12

Yo desearía pasar más días aquí, pero no es posible e ire-  
mos a Granada el lunes, donde estaremos todo el otoño. 14

Su buen amigo

PEDRO<sup>5</sup> VÉLEZ. 16

### EJERCICIO ORAL XII (Oral Exercise XII)

1. We shall speak; they will speak. 2. I shall live; you will  
owe. 3. He would arrive. 4. You would have. 5. He must  
have passed the door. 6. We shall write more to-morrow.  
7. You must (*indicating probability*) know something of the  
Moorish palace. 8. The tower of the palace will be visited on  
Monday. 9. He says that he would have arrived this morning.  
10. If he arrives, he will visit the ancient monuments. 11. Do  
you know whether he will live or not? 12. I shall be there  
with my father and mother. 13. I should write the exercise.  
14. Would you write so many pages of Spanish? 15. We shall  
see something interesting here in Cordova, shall we not? 16. I  
ought to spend the autumn in this beautiful country, but  
it will not be possible. 17. He will desire more this time.  
18. They believed that the Moorish occupation would last two

<sup>1</sup> Cordova, a city of southern Spain.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. § 203, note.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. § 194.

<sup>4</sup> Future of *saber*.

<sup>5</sup> 'Peter.'

centuries. 19. The engineers will visit England and Spain.  
20. I would sell this picture to my friend, but he does not wish [to] buy anything.

TEMA XII  
(Composition XII)

MADRID, August 29, 1912.

DEAR FRIEND: — I knew that you would not visit Seville 2  
without spending several days there. I was there only two  
days, and I should like [to] see more of its famous cathedral 4  
and its other important monuments. There is always so  
much that one can see in an ancient country like Spain. 6

Granada will be very interesting to you<sup>1</sup> also. Without  
doubt, you have read the books of Washington Irving. I 8  
read some of his descriptions of the Alhambra when I was in  
Granada. You should learn something of the gipsies (*gita-* 10  
*nos*) of Granada while you are there, for their customs are  
very interesting. 12

If you will be in Granada all the autumn, I shall probably  
see you,<sup>1</sup> for I shall not be very busy, and it will be possible 14  
for me<sup>2</sup> [to] travel.

Your good friend, 16  
MANUEL HEREDIA.

CONVERSACIÓN XII  
(Conversation XII)

1. ¿En qué página principia la lección? 2. ¿Cómo se forma  
el futuro de los verbos regulares en español? ¿el condicional?  
3. ¿Cómo se forma el futuro de **tener**? ¿el condicional de  
**haber**?

4. ¿Cuándo llegó el viajero (*traveler*) a Sevilla? 5. ¿Qué  
visitó cuando estuvo en Sevilla? 6. ¿Qué es la Giralda? 7. ¿En  
qué parte de España hay monumentos moriscos? 8. ¿Qué hay  
en la famosa mezquita? 9. ¿Ha leído V. «La Alhambra» de  
Washington Irving? 10. ¿Cuándo irá el viajero a Granada?  
11. ¿Cuál es el más famoso edificio de Granada? 12. ¿Son in-  
teresantes los edificios antiguos?

<sup>1</sup> Cf. § 194.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. § 203, note.

## LECCIÓN XIII

(Lesson XIII)

## VERBOS

(Verbs)

## Modo Imperativo

(Imperative Mood)

141. The imperative is used in the second person singular and plural, and only in the affirmative. In the first and third persons in affirmative commands and in all persons in negative commands the present subjunctive is used (cf. § 386, 1).

142. The forms of the imperative mood of the three regular conjugations are:

	I	II	III
<i>Singular, 2<sup>a</sup> persona</i>	<b>habl-a</b>	<b>deb-e</b>	<b>viv-e</b>
<i>Plural, 2<sup>a</sup> persona</i>	<b>habl-ad</b>	<b>deb-ed</b>	<b>viv-id</b>

143. The second person singular of the imperative of regular verbs has the same form as the third person singular of the present indicative, and the plural of all imperatives is formed by changing the *r* of the infinitive to *d*.

144. Since the imperative is used only in the second person, it is found only where that mode of address is used and will therefore be little employed by a foreigner, who will use rather the third person of the present subjunctive with **usted** (**ustedes**) (cf. § 185).

145. Personal pronouns used as objects follow the imperative, or the present subjunctive used as an affirmative imperative, and are joined to it (cf. § 197). If the accent is thus thrown before the penult, it must be written (cf. § 20, 9).

<b>Háblale</b>	Speak to him	<b>Dámelo</b>	Give it to me
<b>Escríbenoslo</b>	Write it to us	<b>Dígaselo</b>	Tell him so

146. The second person plural of the imperative loses its final *-d* when **os** is attached, and the first person plural of the present subjunctive loses its final *-s* when **nos** is attached.

<b>Levantadlo</b>	Raise it	<b>Escribamos</b>	Let us write
<b>Levantaos</b>	Arise, get up	<b>Escribámonos</b>	Let us write to each other

147. The infinitive may be used with an imperative force.

¡Callar! Be quiet!



# PRESENTE DE SUBJUNTIVO DE LAS TRES CONJUGACIONES REGULARES

(Present Subjunctive of the Three Regular Conjugations)

148.

I

habl-e  
habl-es  
habl-e

I may speak, etc.

habl-emos  
habl-éis  
habl-en

149.

II

deb-a  
deb-as  
deb-a

I may owe, etc.

deb-amos  
deb-áis  
deb-an

150.

III

viv-a  
viv-as  
viv-a

I may live, etc.

viv-amos  
viv-áis  
viv-an

151. The present subjunctive is formed by adding to the stem the endings as given above, which are the same for all regular verbs. The accent falls on the last syllable only in the second person plural and is then written.

152.

## Las Estaciones del Año

(The Seasons of the Year)

la primavera, spring  
el verano, summer

el otoño, autumn  
el invierno, winter

153.

## Los Meses del Año

(The Months of the Year)

enero,<sup>1</sup> January  
febrero, February  
marzo, March  
abril, April  
mayo, May  
junio, June

julio, July  
agosto, August  
septiembre, September  
octubre, October  
noviembre, November  
diciembre, December

## VOCABULARIO XIII

(Vocabulary XIII)

asegurar, to assure.  
atraer, to attract, invite.  
bailar, to dance.  
el baile, the dance, ball.  
el barrio, the ward, quarter.  
brioso, -a, spirited, lively.  
cada, *adj.*, each, every.  
el calor, the heat, warmth.

causar, to cause, produce.  
la ciudad, the city.  
la cuesta, the hill.  
la cueva, the cave.  
desde, *prep.*, from, since, after,  
as soon as.  
dijo (*pret. of decir*), he said.  
fuimos (*pret. of ir*), we went.

<sup>1</sup> Capitals are seldom used in Spanish for names of months (cf. § 23).

el gitano (*f.*, la gitana), the gipsy.  
gustar (*a*), (*impers. verb*), to  
please.<sup>1</sup>

la hora, the hour, time (of day).

la impresión, the impression.

el lado, the side.

maravilloso, -a, marvelous.

Nápoles, Naples.

naturalmente, *adv.*, naturally.

nunca, *adv.*, never, ever.

olvidar, to forget.

pues, *inter.*, well.

quedar(se), to remain, stop,  
stay; —se con, to keep.

la tumba, the tomb.

vamos, let us go.

al menos, *adv.*, at least.

### EJERCICIO XIII

(Exercise XIII)

GRANADA, 30 de agosto de 1912.

QUERIDO AMIGO:—No creas que te<sup>2</sup> he olvidado, pero desde 2  
que llegué<sup>3</sup> a ésta en el mes de julio he estado muy ocupado  
visitando los varios monumentos interesantes de la ciudad. 4

«Ver a Nápoles y morir,» dicen, pero mejor sería decir,  
«Ver a Granada y vivir.» Te aseguro que «quien<sup>4</sup> no ha visto<sup>5</sup> 6  
Granada no ha visto nada,» como dicen aquí. Es una ciudad  
maravillosa que me gusta más cada día que paso en ella. 8

Naturalmente he visitado la tumba de Fernando e Isabel,  
que está en la catedral, y el Generalife, hermosa casa de 10  
campo de los señores moros, y he pasado muchísimas<sup>6</sup> horas  
en los patios y en las salas del famoso palacio de la Alhambra. 12

Ya sabrá V. sin duda que hay muchísimos<sup>6</sup> gitanos en esta  
parte de España. Viven en pequeñas cuevas en el Albaicín, 14  
barrio que está en una cuesta al otro lado del Darro. El otro  
día un amigo me dijo: «Vamos a ver bailar a las gitanas.» 16  
Fuimos al Albaicín, y nunca olvidaré la impresión que me  
causaron aquellos bailes briosos. ¿No te atrae todo esto? 18  
Pues no te quedes todo el verano en Madrid. Pasa al menos  
el mes de septiembre en esta hermosísima<sup>6</sup> ciudad. Si te<sup>7</sup> es 20  
posible venir, escríbeme calle de X. 21, donde estaré hasta el  
invierno. 22

Tu<sup>8</sup> buen amigo,

PEDRO VÉLEZ. 24

<sup>1</sup> When used with a personal pronoun or a noun indicating an animate being, it may be translated 'like,' 'be fond of.'

¿Le gusta a V.?

Do you like?

Me gusta

I like

Gusta a mi hermano

My brother likes, etc.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. §§ 185, 191. <sup>3</sup> *Pret. of llegar*; cf. § 335. <sup>4</sup> Cf. § 260. <sup>5</sup> *Past part. of ver.* <sup>6</sup> Cf. § 249. <sup>7</sup> Cf. § 203, note. <sup>8</sup> Cf. p. 43, footnote 1.

EJERCICIO ORAL XIII  
(Oral Exercise XIII)

1. Speak (**tú**); speak (**vosotros**); do not speak (**tú**). 2. Write (**V.**) the exercise; do not write (**V.**) the exercise. 3. Do not owe (**vosotros**). 4. Let us dance. 5. Let them begin. 6. Let us be gay. 7. Travel (**V.**) in (the) summer. 8. Assist (**tú**) your little brother. 9. Enter (**tú**) (**V.**) (**vosotros**) (**VV.**). 10. February and March are interesting months. 11. Spend (**VV.**) the spring in England, if it is possible. 12. Keep the books. 13. Let them end their studies in July. 14. Do not travel in the month of December, if you are in Spain. 15. I may be; we may write; they may live. 16. Winter is a gay season of the year. 17. February has only 28 days. 18. Give (**vosotros**) the pencils to the teacher. 19. Why does he not come in the month of January?

TEMA XIII  
(Composition XIII)

MADRID, September 8, 1912.

DEAR FRIEND:— It would please me very much [to] visit you<sup>1</sup> in Granada. Stay in that interesting city until October and I assure you that I shall spend several days there with you.

You must know that when we went to Seville in May it was not possible for me<sup>2</sup> [to] visit Granada, and consequently I have not yet seen (**visto**) the Alhambra with its famous courts and beautiful gateways.

Your description of the gipsies was very interesting. I should like very much [to] see them and their lively dances. But do not spend all your time in the gipsy caves (*caves of the gipsies*).

I have many things to (**que**) tell you, but I shall keep them until later.<sup>3</sup> Do not forget [to] write often to

Your good friend,

ARMANDO. CANAS.

CONVERSACIÓN XIII  
(Conversation XIII)

1. ¿Cuál es el imperativo del verbo **hablar**? ¿del verbo **deber**? ¿del verbo **vivir**? 2. ¿Usa V. mucho el modo imperativo

<sup>1</sup> Cf. § 185.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. § 203, note.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. § 234.

en español? 3. ¿Qué usa V. en vez del modo imperativo? 4. ¿Dónde se pone el pronombre personal que se usa con el imperativo? 5. ¿Cómo se forma el presente de subjuntivo de la primera conjugación? ¿de la segunda y tercera? 6. ¿Cuáles son las estaciones del año? 7. ¿Cuáles son los meses del año?

8. ¿Qué edificios se visitan generalmente en Granada? 9. ¿Qué es el Generalife? 10. ¿En qué parte de la ciudad está la Alhambra? 11. ¿Dónde está el Albaicín? 12. ¿Quiénes viven en el Albaicín? 13. ¿Son interesantes los bailes de los gitanos? 14. ¿Le gustan a V. las descripciones de Granada?

## LECCIÓN XIV

(Lesson XIV)

### VERBOS

(Verbs)

### (Pretérito) Imperfecto<sup>1</sup> de Subjuntivo (Imperfect Subjunctive)

#### *Primera Forma*

154.

I

habl-ara  
habl-aras  
habl-ara

I might (should, would) speak, etc.

habl-áramos  
habl-arais  
habl-aran

155.

II

deb-iera  
deb-ieras  
deb-iera

I might (should, would) owe, etc.

deb-iéramos  
deb-ierais  
deb-ieran

156.

III

viv-iera  
viv-ieras  
viv-iera

I might (should, would) live, etc.

viv-iéramos  
viv-ierais  
viv-ieran

#### *Segunda Forma*

157.

I

habl-ase  
habl-ases  
habl-ase

I might (should, would) speak, etc.

habl-ásemos  
habl-aseis  
habl-asen

158.

II

deb-iese  
deb-ieses  
deb-iese

I might (should, would) owe, etc.

deb-iésemos  
deb-ieseis  
deb-iesen

<sup>1</sup> This tense will be called in this grammar **Imperfecto de Subjuntivo**.

159.

III

viv-iese  
viv-ieses  
viv-iese

I might (should, would) live, etc.

viv-iésemos  
viv-ieseis  
viv-iesen

**Futuro (Imperfecto)<sup>1</sup> de Subjuntivo**  
(Future Subjunctive)

160.

I

habl-are  
habl-ares  
habl-are

I may (shall) speak, etc.

habl-áremos  
habl-areis  
habl-aren

161.

II

deb-iere  
deb-ieres  
deb-iere

I may (shall) owe, etc.

deb-iéremos  
deb-iereis  
deb-ieren

162.

III

viv-iere  
viv-ieres  
viv-iere

I may (shall) live, etc.

viv-iéremos  
viv-iereis  
viv-ieren

163. These subjunctive forms in all verbs, regular or irregular, may be derived readily from the third person plural of the preterit by changing **-ron** to **-ra**, **-se**, or **-re**. The first and second forms are generally interchangeable. The future subjunctive is rarely used. Cf. § 401.

164. The accent in the two forms of the imperfect subjunctive and in the future subjunctive falls on the first strong vowel of the ending in the three conjugations. It is written in the first person plural in all three tenses of the three conjugations.

165. Verbs of the second or third conjugation whose stem ends in a vowel change **i** to **y** in the endings of the imperfect and future subjunctive.

*caer*, *pret.* *cayeron*: *subj.* *cayera*, etc.; *cayese*, etc.; *cayere*, etc.

166. The subjunctive is used in dependent clauses very much as in French, though a little more commonly. It is most frequently found in noun clauses after verbs expressing *will*, *emotion* or *doubt*. For a fuller treatment of the subject, cf. §§ 391-397.

<sup>1</sup> This tense will be called in this grammar **Futuro de Subjuntivo**.

167.

### Los Días de la Semana

(The Days of the Week)

**lunes**,<sup>1</sup> Monday  
**martes**, Tuesday  
**miércoles**, Wednesday  
**jueves**, Thursday

**viernes**, Friday  
**sábado**, Saturday  
**domingo**, Sunday

168. Notice the following expressions:

**el domingo**, Sunday, *or* on Sunday  
**todos los lunes**, every Monday  
**el martes pasado**,<sup>2</sup> last Tuesday  
**la semana pasada**, last week  
**el miércoles próximo**,<sup>3</sup> next Wednesday  
**la semana próxima**, next week  
**el jueves hacía ocho días**, a week ago last Thursday  
**del viernes en ocho días**, a week from Friday  
**del sábado en quince días**, two weeks from Saturday  
**el domingo por la mañana**, Sunday morning  
**hoy**, to-day  
**mañana**, to-morrow  
**pasado mañana**, day after to-morrow  
**ayer**, yesterday  
**anteayer**,  
**antes de ayer**, } day before yesterday  
**anteanoche**,  
**antes de anoche**, } night before last  
**esta noche**, to-night  
**anoche**, last night  
**un día sí (y) un día no**, every other day

### VOCABULARIO XIV

(Vocabulary XIV)

<b>abrir</b> , to open.	<b>así</b> , <i>adv.</i> , thus, so.
<b>acabar</b> , to end, finish; — <b>de</b>	<b>el baúl</b> , the trunk.
... ( <i>with inf.</i> ), to have	<b>el billete</b> , the bank note, ticket;
just ...	— <b>de primera</b> , first-class
<b>acompañar</b> , to accompany.	ticket; — <b>de ida y vuelta</b> ,
<b>adiós</b> , <i>int.</i> , good-by.	round trip ticket; — <b>de</b>
<b>el andén</b> , the platform.	<b>andén</b> , platform ticket.

<sup>1</sup> Note that capitals are not used in Spanish in the names of the days of the week. They are all of the masculine gender, and frequently take the definite article (cf. § 32, 6).

<sup>2</sup> 'Last' in expressions of time is translated by **pasado**, meaning 'last elapsed,' in the sense of 'last in a series,' by **último** or **postrero**, the latter being used but rarely.

<sup>3</sup> 'Next' may be expressed in Spanish by **próximo**, **siguiente**, or **que viene**, **siguiente**, 'following,' being used chiefly when referring ahead from some point of time in the past.

la carta, the letter.

¿cuánto, -a, -os, -as? how much, how many?

dispensar, to excuse.

esperar, to wait, wait for, hope, expect.

facturar, to check (*baggage*).

el ferrocarril, the railroad, railway.

la gente, the people.

la intención, the intention; tener

la — (de), to intend (to).

Juan, John.

Pablo, Paul.

parecer, to appear, seem, look;

—se a, to resemble, look like.

todo el mundo, everybody, (*literally* 'all the world').

¿por qué? *conj.*, why?

pronto, *adv.*, soon; de —, suddenly.

recibir, to receive.

rogar,<sup>1</sup> to ask, request, beseech.

la sala de espera, the waiting-room.

solo, -a, alone, only, single, solitary.

sorprender, to surprise.

el tren, the train.

el vendedor de billetes, the ticket agent.

la ventanilla, the small window, ticket window.

## EJERCICIO XIV

(Exercise XIV)

### Conversación en una Estación de Ferrocarril

(Conversation in a Railroad Station)

*Pablo.* Buenos días,<sup>2</sup> *Juan.* — *Juan.* Buenos días, Pablo.  
 ¡Cuánta gente en la estación! Parece que todo el mundo 2  
 viaja hoy. — Así lo parece. ¿Y a dónde va<sup>3</sup> V.? — A Burgos.  
 Mi tío, que vive allí, siempre ha deseado que le visitase, y 4  
 tengo la intención de pasar una semana con él. ¿V. también  
 va de viaje?<sup>4</sup> — Sí, señor. El lunes recibí de mi hermano, 6  
 que está en Barcelona, una carta rogándome que le visitara  
 lo más pronto posible, porque del sábado en quince días 8  
 saldrá<sup>5</sup> de Barcelona para los Estados Unidos. Pero no me  
 voy<sup>3</sup> hasta pasado mañana. Acabo de comprar mi billete 10  
 y de facturar mis baúles. ¿Viaja V. solo? — Sí, señor. Yo  
 deseaba que me acompañase mi primo, pero él tiene que 12  
 quedarse en Madrid hasta el viernes próximo, y por consi-  
 guiente no le ha sido posible acompañarme. Pero ya se 14  
 abre la ventanilla. Dispénsame V. . . . (*Al vendedor de billetes.*)  
 Un (billete de) primera de ida y vuelta para Burgos. . . . (*A su* 16

<sup>1</sup> Rogar and pedir are used meaning 'to ask (*as a favor*)', while preguntar means simply 'to ask (*as a question*)', 'to interrogate.'

<sup>2</sup> Cf. § 303.

<sup>3</sup> Pres. ind. of ir.

<sup>4</sup> Ir de viaje, 'to travel.'

<sup>5</sup> Fut. of salir.

*amigo*.) Creo que esperaré el tren en el andén, porque hay muchísima gente en la sala de espera. — Pues le deseo a V. <sup>18</sup> un buen viaje. — Y a V. lo mismo, adiós. — Adiós.

EJERCICIO ORAL XIV  
(Oral Exercise XIV)

1. I might speak; he might speak; they might speak. 2. We might owe; they would live; they should owe. 3. I might fall (*first and second forms*). 4. He wished them to open the ticket window. 5. They desired him to accompany his friends to the station. 6. Next Wednesday I shall be in Burgos. 7. A week ago last Saturday my trunks arrived. 8. They stayed in the city until last night. 9. Did they want the professor to write a book? 10. Yes, they wanted him to begin to-day. 11. Two weeks from Thursday will be the last day. 12. We have composition lessons every Monday and sometimes on Tuesday. 13. The day before yesterday was Sunday. 14. The days of the week are Monday, Tuesday, Wednesday, Thursday, Friday, Saturday and Sunday. 15. Is this round trip ticket good (*válido*) until to-morrow? 16. Excuse me, but I intend to (*de*) remain until to-morrow morning.

TEMA XIV  
(Composition XIV)

The other day my cousin wanted me to accompany him to the railroad station. I went (*fuí*) with him, because I wanted <sup>2</sup> [to] learn something more about Spanish stations. First he bought his ticket to Burgos at the ticket window, while <sup>4</sup> I remained in the waiting room. Then (*entonces*) he told me to buy a platform ticket while he had his trunk <sup>6</sup> checked. I was surprised that one should need a ticket to (*para*) go out on the platform. Then I helped him to (*a*) <sup>8</sup> carry his suit-cases to the platform, and we talked until the train arrived. I intend to (*de*) go to Barcelona next <sup>10</sup> week, and knowing how (*el saber*) [to] have my trunks checked and where [to] buy my ticket ought [to] aid me very <sup>12</sup> much.



### CONVERSACIÓN XIV (Conversation XIV)

1. ¿Cuántas formas del imperfecto de subjuntivo hay?
2. ¿Cuáles son las terminaciones de la primera forma de la primera conjugación? ¿de la segunda conjugación? ¿de la tercera?
3. Conjugue V. el futuro del subjuntivo del verbo **caer**; del verbo **vivir**.
4. ¿En qué persona hay un acento escrito en los imperfectos y en el futuro de subjuntivo?
5. ¿Cuáles son los días de la semana?
6. ¿Cómo se dice en español: *to-morrow morning*; *last night*; *next week*?
7. ¿En dónde están hablando Pablo y Juan?
8. ¿Van de viaje los dos?
9. ¿Por qué no toma el tren Pablo?
10. ¿Qué hace en la estación de ferrocarril?
11. ¿Por qué viaja solo Juan?
12. ¿Dónde se compran los billetes en una estación?
13. ¿Quién los vende?
14. ¿Dónde se puede esperar el tren?
15. ¿Qué se dice generalmente a una persona que sale de viaje?

### LECCIÓN XV (Lesson XV)

#### Las Horas del Día (The Hours of the Day)

**169.** The hour or time of day is expressed by the cardinal numbers preceded by the feminine article (to agree with **hora**, 'hour,' or **horas**, 'hours,' understood). Time after the hour is expressed by the number of minutes preceded by **y**, and time before, by the number of minutes preceded by **menos**, 'less.' The word for minutes is usually omitted. The verb 'to be' in expressions of time is **ser**, which is singular or plural according to the number of hours.

¿Qué hora es?

Es la una

Son las dos y veinte

Son las once menos diez

What time is it?

It is one o'clock

It is twenty minutes past two

It is ten minutes to eleven

**170.** There are two words in Spanish meaning 'half,' **la mitad**, a noun, and **medio**, -a, an adjective (cf. § 328). The

feminine adjective, **media**, is always used for 'half' in speaking of the hour. 'To strike,' speaking of the hour, is **dar**.

a las tres y media  
Está dando la media  
¿Qué hora ha dado?

at half past three  
It is striking the half-hour  
What hour did it strike?

171. Other means of expressing time may be inferred from the following examples:

Son las doce y cuarto  
a las siete en punto  
a las diez de la mañana  
a las dos de la tarde  
al mediodía  
por la mañana  
por la tarde  
por la noche  
a media noche

It is a quarter past twelve  
at seven o'clock sharp  
at ten in the morning  
at two in the afternoon  
at noon  
in the morning  
in the afternoon  
at night  
at midnight

172.

### Los Puntos Cardinales

(The Points of the Compass)

el norte, the North  
el sur, the South

el este, the East  
el oeste, the West

### VERBOS

(Verbs)

### 173. haber, 'to have.'

haber, habiendo, habido

#### INDICATIVO

*Presente* he, has, ha, hemos, habéis, han  
*Imperfecto* hab-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían  
*Pretérito* hube, hubiste, hubo, hubimos, hubisteis, hubieron  
*Futuro* habr-é, -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án  
*Condicional* habr-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían

#### SUBJUNTIVO

*Presente* haya, hayas, haya, hayamos, hayáis, hayan  
*Imperfecto, 1ª forma:* hub-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran  
*Imperfecto, 2ª forma:* hub-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen  
*Futuro* hub-iere, -ieres, -iere, -iéremos, -iereis, -ieren

#### IMPERATIVO

he

habed

## 174. tener, 'to have.'

tener, teniendo, tenido

## INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	tengo, tienes, tiene, tenemos, tenéis, tienen
<i>Imperfecto</i>	ten-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían
<i>Preterito</i>	tuve, tuviste, tuvo, tuvimos, tuvisteis, tuvieron
<i>Futuro</i>	tendr-é, -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án
<i>Condicional</i>	tendr-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían

## SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	tenga, tengas, tenga, tengamos, tengáis, tengan
<i>Imperfecto, 1ª forma:</i>	tuv-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran
<i>Imperfecto, 2ª forma:</i>	tuv-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen
<i>Futuro</i>	tuv-iere, -ieres, -iere, -iéremos, -iereis, -ieren

## IMPERATIVO

ten

tened

## VOCABULARIO XV

(Vocabulary XV)

<b>adelantar</b> , to advance, be fast ( <i>of timepieces</i> ).	<b>el horario</b> , the hour-hand.
<b>ahora</b> , <i>adv.</i> , now.	<b>indicar</b> , to indicate, designate, mark.
<b>antiguamente</b> , <i>adv.</i> , formerly.	<b>largo</b> , -a, long.
<b>la arena</b> , the sand.	<b>la manecilla</b> , the hand ( <i>of a watch or clock</i> ).
<b>atrasar</b> , to delay, be slow ( <i>of timepieces</i> ).	<b>la máquina</b> , the machine, works ( <i>of a watch or clock</i> ).
<b>la caja</b> , the box, case ( <i>of a watch</i> ).	<b>marcar</b> , to mark, indicate.
<b>el caso</b> , the case.	<b>el minuterero</b> , the minute-hand.
<b>componer</b> , to compose.	<b>el minuto</b> , the minute.
<b>corto</b> , -a, short.	<b>la posición</b> , the position.
<b>el cronómetro</b> , the timepiece.	<b>regularizar</b> , to regulate.
<b>el cuarto</b> , the quarter, room.	<b>el reloj (de pared)</b> , the clock; <b>el</b> — ( <b>de bolsillo</b> , 'pocket'), the watch.
<b>la división</b> , the division, part. ( <b>se duerme</b> , (one) sleeps.	<b>según</b> , <i>prep.</i> , according to, as.
<b>entonces</b> , <i>adv.</i> , then.	<b>el segundo</b> , the second.
<b>entre</b> , <i>prep.</i> , between, among.	<b>trabajar</b> , to work.
<b>la esfera</b> , the face ( <i>of a watch or clock</i> ).	

## EJERCICIO XV

(Exercise XV)

La semana se compone de 7 días, el día de 24 horas, la hora de 60 minutos, y el minuto de 60 segundos. Antigua- 2  
mente había muchísimas clases de relojes para indicar la hora del día, como relojes de arena, de agua, de sol, etcétera. 4  
Hoy día hay varias clases de cronómetros, pero entre todos el más usado es el reloj de bolsillo. 6

Aquí tenemos un reloj. Tiene, como partes principales,

la máquina, la caja, la esfera y las manecillas. La más larga 8  
 de las manecillas se llama el minuterio, y la más corta, el hora-  
 rio. Hay algunos relojes que tienen otra manecilla pequeñita 10  
 para marcar los segundos. La posición de las manecillas indica  
 la hora del día. El minuterio marca la hora cuando llega al 12  
 número doce, y se puede decir «son las tres,» «son las  
 cinco,» etcétera, según el caso. Cuando llega al número tres 14  
 o al número nueve el minuterio, indica los cuartos de hora, y  
 entonces se puede decir «son las dos y media,» o «son las 16  
 diez menos cuarto,» según el caso. El reloj marca las doce  
 dos veces en el día, al mediodía y a media noche. Cuando 18  
 el reloj no está en hora<sup>1</sup> se dice que adelanta o atrasa, y en-  
 tonces es preciso regularizarlo. 20

Las principales divisiones del día son la mañana, la tarde y  
 la noche. Por la mañana y por la tarde se trabaja, y por la 22  
 noche se duerme.

#### EJERCICIO ORAL XV (Oral Exercise XV)

1. What time is it? 2. It is half past two; it is one o'clock; it  
 is a quarter to four. 3. In the afternoon at two o'clock. 4. He  
 had finished the last lesson at noon. 5. People do not work at  
 night. 6. He had a watch which used to strike the hour.  
 7. What kind of timepiece generally strikes the hour? 8. I shall  
 have my watch to-morrow. 9. He would have regulated the  
 watch. 10. Formerly they had water<sup>2</sup> clocks. 11. We may have  
 had the timepiece. 12. At a quarter to three he had begun to  
 (a) work. 13. We sleep at night. 14. Would you have had so  
 many windows in your house? 15. There are fifty in this  
 building. 16. One (uno) ought to (de) take care when one is  
 on the street at midnight. 17. A watch which is fast ought to  
 (de) be regulated. 18. Many persons have watches which they  
 had when they were children. 19. The points of the compass  
 are north, south, east and west.

#### TEMA XV (Composition XV)

There have always been several kinds of timepieces. For-  
 merly they had sand and water<sup>2</sup> timepieces, but now the watch 2

<sup>1</sup> Estar en hora, 'to keep time.'

<sup>2</sup> De agua.

is without doubt the one which (*el que*) is the most used.

Here is a watch. It is composed of various parts, such (*tales*) as the works, the case, the face, the hands, etc. A watch generally has two hands, the minute-hand, which marks the minutes, and the hour-hand, which marks the hours. In some watches there is a very small hand, called (*que se llama*) the second-hand, which marks the seconds. The time of (the) day is indicated by the position of the hands. When the hour-hand and the minute-hand are at twelve, it is noon or midnight.

There are two principal divisions of the day, day and night.

### CONVERSACIÓN XV (Conversation XV)

1. Conjugue V. el futuro del verbo **tener**; el pretérito; el presente de subjuntivo. 2. Conjugue V. el condicional del verbo **haber**; el presente de indicativo; el imperfecto de subjuntivo. 3. ¿Cuántos verbos hay en español para decir *to have*? 4. ¿Cuál de ellos indica la posesión?

5. ¿Cuántas veces en el día marca el reloj las doce? 6. ¿Cuáles son las partes principales de un reloj? 7. ¿Cuántas manecillas tiene un reloj? 8. ¿Qué posición tienen las manecillas cuando indican las ocho? ¿las ocho y veinte? ¿las ocho menos diez? 9. ¿Qué hora ha dado? 10. ¿Qué hora es? 11. ¿Qué es preciso hacer cuando adelanta o atrasa un reloj? 12. ¿Cuándo se duerme? ¿Cuándo se trabaja? 13. ¿Qué día de la semana es hoy? 14. ¿Cuáles son los puntos cardinales?

### LECCIÓN XVI (Lesson XVI)

#### USOS PARTICULARES DE LOS VERBOS *HABER Y TENER* (Special uses of the Verbs *haber* and *tener*)

175. **Haber de**, as an independent verb, followed by an infinitive, expresses a probable futurity or a mild obligation.

**He de escribir el ejercicio**

**I have the exercise to write**

***Haber Usado Impersonalmente***

(Haber Used Impersonally)

176. **Haber** is used impersonally in the sense of 'to be' in the infinitive, participles and in the third person singular.

1. In the sense of 'there is' or 'there are,' the form of the present indicative is **hay**. The conjugation is continued by the use of the regular third person singular of all other tenses.

<b>habiendo personas en el cuarto</b>	there being persons in the room
<b>Hay un libro en la mesa</b>	There is a book on the table
<b>Había dos libros</b>	There were two books
<b>Habrà mucha gente</b>	There will be many people

2. In the sense of 'it is,' applied to weather conditions, the present indicative is also **hay**, and the conjugation is continued by the use of the regular third person singular of all other tenses. In this sense **haber** may be used only when followed by a noun. The verb **hacer** is more commonly used when speaking of the weather.

<b>Hay lodo, It is muddy</b>	<b>Hace buen tiempo, It is good weather</b>
<b>Hay luna, The moon is shining</b>	<b>Hace calor, It is warm</b>
<b>Hay neblina, It is foggy</b>	<b>Hace fresco, It is cool</b>
<b>Hay polvo, It is dusty</b>	<b>Hace frío, It is cold</b>
<b>Hay sol, It is sunny</b>	<b>Hace mal tiempo, It is bad weather</b>
<b>Hay viento, It is windy</b>	<b>Hace sol, It is sunny</b>
	<b>Hace (un) tiempo agradable, It is pleasant</b>
	<b>Hace viento, It is windy</b>

177. **Haber que**, as an impersonal verb, followed by an infinitive, denotes necessity or obligation. The present indicative is **hay que**.

**Para aprender hay que estudiar**      One must study in order to learn

178. **Haber** is also used impersonally in the sense of 'ago,' 'before.' **Há** (cf. § 20, 4, note 1), the present indicative, usually stands after a measure of time; other forms usually precede. The verb **hacer** is likewise used impersonally in the sense of 'ago,' and regularly precedes the measure of time. Verbal clauses introduced by **que** are frequently appended.

<b>dos años há, or hace dos años</b>	two years ago
<b>Hace dos horas que llegó</b>	He arrived two hours ago
<b>Hacía tres años que habían llegado</b>	They had arrived three years before

179. The principal use of **tener** is to indicate possession. It also indicates 'to be the matter (or trouble) with.'

**Tengo un libro**

I have a book

¿Qué tiene V.?

What is the matter with you?

**Tengo un dolor de cabeza**

I have a headache

180. **Tener** is used idiomatically in the sense of 'to be,' with certain nouns, as in French. (*Learn*)

**tener hambre**, to be hungry

**tener celos**, to be jealous

**tener sed**, to be thirsty

**tener vergüenza**, to be ashamed

**tener frío**, to be cold

**tener sueño**, to be sleepy

**tener calor**, to be warm

**tener miedo**, to be afraid

**tener ganas**, to be desirous, inclined,

**tener razón**, to be right

feel like

**no tener razón**, to be wrong

181. **Tener que**, followed by an infinitive, expresses obligation. Moral obligation, however, is more commonly expressed by **deber**.

**Tengo que escribir el ejercicio**

I have to write the exercise

**BUT: Debe V. escribirme todos los días**

You must write me every day. (Cf. p. 19, footnote 1)

## VOCABULARIO XVI

(Vocabulary XVI)

**abandonar**, to abandon, leave.

**el fastidio**, the weariness, ennui.

**adornar**, to adorn.

**el frío**, the cold.

**afuera**, *adv.*, outside, outdoors, out of the house.

**gozar (de)**, to enjoy.

**agradable**, *adj.*, agreeable, pleasant, pleasing.

**la hierba**, the grass.

**el alivio**, the relief.

**la hoja**, the leaf.

**amarillo**, -a, yellow.

**la nieve**, the snow.

**el anhelo**, the desire, eagerness.

**no (ni) . . . ni**, neither . . . nor.

**el árbol**, the tree.

**quitar**, to remove, take away, quit.

**brillar**, to shine.

**pasear (se)**, to walk, stroll.

**caer**, to fall.

**quizá (s)**, *adv.*, perhaps.

**la cosecha**, the harvest, reaping.

**secar (se)**, to dry.

**la chimenea**, the fireplace, chimney.

**seguramente**, *adv.*, surely, certainly.

**dividir**, to divide.

**la transformación**, the transformation, change.

**evitar**, to avoid.

**triste**, *adj.*, sad.

**excesivo**, -a, excessive.

**verde**, *adj.*, green.

**por todas partes**, everywhere.

## EJERCICIO XVI

(Exercise XVI)

El año está dividido en cuatro estaciones, que son la primavera, el verano, el otoño y el invierno. Entre todas las 2

estaciones la primavera es la más agradable, porque entonces no hace ni frío ni calor excesivos. Uno tiene ganas de pasearse y de ver los árboles adornados de verdes hojas, que brillan tanto cuando hace sol. 6

En el verano para evitar el calor hay que irse<sup>1</sup> al campo. Allí se puede gozar de las flores y de la hierba. Naturalmente hay muchas personas que tienen que quedarse en la ciudad, donde hace calor y donde a menudo hay polvo. Estas personas esperan con anhelo el otoño. En esta estación se hace la cosecha en el campo, y por todas partes las hojas pierden<sup>2</sup> su color verde y se ponen<sup>3</sup> amarillas y rojas. Pronto principian a secarse y a caer. Hace muchísimo viento y algunas veces hay nieve. Seguramente es el invierno la estación más triste de todas. Entonces<sup>4</sup> nos quedamos en casa al lado de la chimenea, y para evitar el fastidio leemos libros interesantes, y nos<sup>4</sup> burlamos del frío que hace afuera. 18

### EJERCICIO ORAL XVI (Oral Exercise XVI)

1. I have to write the letter; I have the letter to write. 2. Two weeks ago. 3. There will be many people, if it is pleasant. 4. In winter it is often windy. 5. Sometimes there is snow. 6. One is often cold in the house, when it is cold weather outdoors. 7. What is the matter with the poor man? Is he hungry? 8. In (the) summer we are inclined to walk when it is good weather. 9. The little children await the winter with eagerness. 10. They enjoy the snow and the cold. 11. The youth was jealous, because the girl was walking with his brother. 12. When it is warm in a room, we are often sleepy. 13. One must stay by the side of the fireplace. 14. The trees are always more beautiful in the spring than (*de lo que*) they are in the winter. 15. The warmth (*calor*) of the spring has removed the snow. 16. He is thirsty, but there is no water.

<sup>1</sup> *irse*, 'to go away,' 'depart' (cf. § 213, 2).

<sup>2</sup> *Pres. ind.* of *perder*, 'to lose.'

<sup>3</sup> *ponerse*, 'to become.' Note that the reflexive *se* often gives the verb a different shade of meaning (cf. § 213, 2). <sup>4</sup> Cf. § 213, 1.



TEMA XVI  
(Composition XVI)

Of all the seasons of the year, spring and autumn are the best. Perhaps we like (**nos gusta**) the spring, because there has <sup>2</sup> been a great transformation from the cold of (the) winter to the pleasant weather of this first season of the year. <sup>4</sup> And autumn is also a relief after (**depués de**) the heat of (the) summer. <sup>6</sup>

In summer, when it is hot, one must go to the country, if one desires to enjoy one's self. There, when it is pleasant, <sup>8</sup> one can pass the day outdoors, and see the many pretty scenes which present themselves. The flowers and the trees <sup>10</sup> with their green leaves help to (a) make one (a **uno**) more cheerful. But how different is the winter when it is cold <sup>12</sup> and windy! Then nobody wishes [to] go out of the house more than (**de lo que**) is necessary. We are inclined to (**de**) <sup>14</sup> pass the evenings by the side of the fireplace, and with an interesting book in our hands we laugh at the snow and the <sup>16</sup> cold.

CONVERSACIÓN XVI  
(Conversation XVI)

1. ¿Qué forma tiene el presente de indicativo de **haber** cuando significa *there is, there are*? 2. ¿Qué significa **haber que** usado impersonalmente? 3. Dígame V. en español, *I am hungry; he is cold; you are desirous; we are sleepy; they are wrong*. 4. Dígame V. en español, *a week ago*. 5. ¿Cuál es el uso principal de **tener**? 6. ¿Qué significa **tener que** usado con un infinitivo?

7. ¿Cuáles son las estaciones del año? 8. ¿Cuál le gusta a V. más? 9. ¿Qué hace V. en el verano? 10. ¿Dónde se pueden ver las flores y la hierba? 11. ¿Qué personas esperan con anhelo el otoño? 12. ¿Cuándo se hace la cosecha? 13. ¿De qué colores son las hojas en el otoño? 14. ¿Por qué es el invierno una estación triste? 15. ¿Qué se puede hacer en el invierno para evitar el fastidio? 16. ¿Hace frío en el invierno en Madrid?

## LECCIÓN XVII

(Lesson XVII)

PRONOMBRES PERSONALES SUJETOS  
(Subjective Personal Pronouns)

182.	<i>Singular</i>		<i>Plural</i>	
	yo	I	nosotros (-as)	we
	tú	thou	vosotros (-as)	you, ye
	él	he, it	ellos }	they
	ella	she, it	ellas }	
	ello <sup>1</sup>	it		
	usted	you	ustedes	you

183. The personal pronouns, except **usted** (-es), are usually omitted as subjects of verbs, unless required for emphasis or clearness (cf. § 57). They may precede or follow the verb. In questions they usually follow.

184. In compound subjects the pronouns are not omitted. With a compound subject the verb agrees in person and number as in English

Él y yo hablaremos  
Tú y ella sois amigos

He and I shall speak  
You and she are friends

185. 'You' may be translated by **tú**, **vosotros** (-as), **usted** or **ustedes**, and the corresponding object pronouns (cf. §§ 191, 194).

The form **tú** is used to address a near relative, an intimate friend, a small child, an animal or an inanimate object. It also corresponds to the English 'thou,' used in poetic or sacred language. The plural is **vosotros**, which is also used sometimes by public speakers in addressing assemblies.

In all other cases **usted** (-es), which is practically the only form that a foreigner will have occasion to use, is employed.

¿Qué dices tú, Juanito?  
Vosotros tendréis bombones  
Habla V. español muy bien

What do you say, Jack?  
You shall have candy  
You speak Spanish very well

186. **Nos** and **vos** are sometimes used, instead of **yo** and **tú**, in royal proclamations, official documents or in representation

<sup>1</sup> Used as subject pronoun commonly only in the phrase **ello es que**, 'the fact is.'

of antiquated style. **Vos** is also used sometimes in translations from the English or French to represent the second person plural of those languages. It governs the second person plural of the verb, but is singular in idea.

<b>Nos, el rey, proclamamos . . .</b>	<b>I, the king, proclaim . . .</b>
<b>Por fin vos habéis venido</b>	<b>You have come at last</b>

1. The definite article is employed before nouns used in apposition with the personal pronouns **nosotros**, **vosotros** or **ustedes**.

**nosotros los americanos**, we Americans  
**vosotros los estudiantes**, you students

187. All subject personal pronouns may be intensified by the addition of **mismo** (-a, -os, -as), 'self,' 'even.'

**yo mismo** (-a), I myself, *or* even I  
**nosotros** (-as) **mismos** (-as), we ourselves

188. Nouns may likewise be intensified by **mismo**, 'self,' 'even,' 'very,' 'same,' which may precede or follow. In the sense of 'same,' **mismo** precedes.

**el rey mismo**, the king himself, even the king, the very king  
**el mismo rey**, the same king

## VERBOS (Verbs)

### 189. **ser** 'to be.'

**ser**, **siendo**, **sido**

#### INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<b>soy, eres, es, somos, sois, son</b>
<i>Imperfecto</i>	<b>era, eras, era, éramos, erais, eran</b>
<i>Pretérito</i>	<b>fuí, fuiste, fué, fuimos, fuisteis, fueron</b>
<i>Futuro</i>	<b>ser-é, -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án</b>
<i>Condicional</i>	<b>ser-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían</b>

#### SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<b>sea, seas, sea, seamos, seáis, sean</b>
<i>Imperfecto, 1ª forma:</i>	<b>fuera, fueras, fuera, fuéramos, fuerais, fueran</b>
<i>Imperfecto, 2ª forma:</i>	<b>fuese, fueses, fuese, fuésemos, fueseis, fuesen</b>
<i>Futuro</i>	<b>fuere, fueres, fuere, fuéremos, fuereis, fueren</b>

#### IMPERATIVO

**sé**

**sed**

190. *estar*, 'to be.'*estar*, *estando*, *estado*

## INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<i>estoy</i> , <i>estás</i> , <i>está</i> , <i>estamos</i> , <i>estáis</i> , <i>están</i>
<i>Imperfecto</i>	<i>est-aba</i> , <i>-abas</i> , <i>-aba</i> , <i>-ábamos</i> , <i>-abais</i> , <i>-aban</i>
<i>Pretérito</i>	<i>estuve</i> , <i>estuviste</i> , <i>estuvo</i> , <i>estuvimos</i> , <i>estuvisteis</i> , <i>estuvieron</i>
<i>Futuro</i>	<i>estar-é</i> , <i>-ás</i> , <i>-á</i> , <i>-emos</i> , <i>-éis</i> , <i>-án</i>
<i>Condicional</i>	<i>estar-ía</i> , <i>-ías</i> , <i>-ía</i> , <i>-íamos</i> , <i>-íais</i> , <i>-ían</i>

## SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<i>esté</i> , <i>estés</i> , <i>esté</i> , <i>estemos</i> , <i>estéis</i> , <i>estén</i>
<i>Imperfecto</i> , 1ª forma:	<i>estuv-iera</i> , <i>-ieras</i> , <i>-iera</i> , <i>-iéramos</i> , <i>-ierais</i> , <i>-ieran</i>
<i>Imperfecto</i> , 2ª forma:	<i>estuv-iese</i> , <i>-ieses</i> , <i>-iese</i> , <i>-iésemos</i> , <i>-ieseis</i> , <i>-iesen</i>
<i>Futuro</i>	<i>estuv-iere</i> , <i>-ieres</i> , <i>-iere</i> , <i>-iéremos</i> , <i>-iereis</i> , <i>-ieren</i>

## IMPERATIVO

*está**estad*

## VOCABULARIO XVII

(Vocabulary XVII)

<i>el almuerzo</i> , the breakfast, lunch.	<i>el garbanzo</i> , the garbanzo ( <i>a kind of pea or pulse much esteemed in Spain</i> ).
<i>el café</i> , the café, coffee.	<i>el huevo</i> , the egg.
<i>la carne</i> , the meat, flesh.	<i>la leche</i> , the milk,
<i>la cena</i> , the supper.	<i>luego</i> , <i>adv.</i> , then, soon, next.
<i>el cocido</i> , the boiled dish ( <i>a combination of meats, potatoes and other vegetables</i> ).	<i>el mantel</i> , the table-cloth.
<i>comer</i> , to eat, dine.	<i>la mantequilla</i> , the butter.
<i>la comida</i> , the meal, dinner.	<i>el pan</i> , the bread.
<i>la cuchara</i> , the spoon.	<i>la patata</i> , the potato.
<i>el cuchillo</i> , the knife.	<i>el pescado</i> , the fish.
<i>el chocolate</i> , the chocolate.	<i>el plato</i> , the plate, dish.
<i>el desayuno</i> , the breakfast.	<i>el postre</i> , the dessert.
<i>después</i> , <i>adv.</i> , then, afterwards; — <i>de</i> , <i>prep.</i> , after, since.	<i>la servilleta</i> , the napkin.
<i>la ensalada</i> , the salad.	<i>la sopa</i> , the soup.
<i>frito</i> , <i>-a</i> , fried.	<i>sustancial</i> , <i>adj.</i> , substantial.
	<i>el tenedor</i> , the fork.
	<i>la tortilla</i> , the omelet.
	<i>el vaso</i> , the glass.

## EJERCICIO XVII

(Exercise XVII)

Hoy (nosotros) hablaremos de la comida española. VV.  
 saben sin duda que en España, como en América, se toman 2  
 tres comidas cada día. La primera se llama el desayuno.  
 (Ella) es generalmente más sencilla que las otras dos. Consta 4  
 de chocolate o café con leche y pan. Se usa muy poco la  
 mantequilla. Muchas veces el desayuno se sirve en la habita- 6  
 ción donde se duerme.

La comida del mediodía se llama almuerzo o comida, según 8  
la costumbre de las familias, y la de la noche, cena o comida.  
El almuerzo se toma entre las once y la una, y (él) es natu- 10  
ralmente una comida más importante que el desayuno.

Se pone la mesa en el comedor con mantel, servilletas, 12  
platos, vasos, cuchillos, tenedores, cucharas y todo lo ne-  
cesario, como en América. Para la comida del mediodía se 14  
sirve primero una sopa, luego el cocido que consta de carne,  
garbanzos y patatas, luego una tortilla, o huevos fritos, o 16  
pescado, después una ensalada, y por último el postre.

La cena consta más o menos de los mismos platos que el 18  
almuerzo, pero generalmente no se toma ni sopa ni cocido.

### EJERCICIO ORAL XVII (Oral Exercise XVII)

1. I am; I am here; I may be; I may be here. 2. He has been  
poor. 3. We were there; we used to be there. 4. I myself was  
in the dining-room. 5. The same things are used in Spain.  
6. Even the supper is a little late to-day. 7. The fact is that  
he does not know the lesson. 8. You will be in Spain with  
your brother. 9. He and I shall remain in America. 10. We  
had the table in the dining-room. 11. These knives and forks  
are only used on Sundays. 12. The omelet would soon be on  
the table, he said. 13. You Spaniards do not use butter much.  
14. These napkins have been on the table six times. 15. A break-  
fast of chocolate and bread is not much. 16. Spain is an inter-  
esting country. 17. A dinner in Spain consists of soup, meat,  
garbanzos, potatoes, fried eggs or fish, salad and dessert.  
18. Supper is not generally a very important meal. 19. Some-  
times breakfast is served in the bedroom. 20. We do not  
have this custom in America. 21. We men are not afraid.

### TEMA XVII (Composition XVII)

Here in Spain, as in America, three meals are taken every  
day. The first meal of the day, which we call breakfast, is 2  
generally not very substantial. It consists of bread with  
chocolate or coffee and (con) milk, and is sometimes served 4  
in the room where we sleep. The lunch which we take at

noon is always more substantial. It is served in the dining-room. On the table we find what is essential for the meal, knives, forks, spoons, glasses, plates, etc. Generally we begin this meal with a soup, then a boiled dish is served in which (*en el que*) are potatoes, garbanzos and meat, then fried eggs or an omelet or fish, and then dessert is served.

We Spaniards eat supper at a much later (*more late*) hour than you Americans (*americanos*), generally between eight and nine o'clock. The dishes for this meal are often the same as they are for the lunch.

### CONVERSACIÓN XVII (Conversation XVII)

1. ¿Cuáles son los pronombres personales que se usan como sujetos? 2. ¿En qué persona se pone el verbo con el sujeto usted? 3. ¿Cómo se dice en español, *we Spaniards*? 4. ¿Qué significa la palabra *mismo*? 5. ¿Cuántos verbos hay en español que significan *to be*? ¿Cuáles son?

6. ¿Cuántas comidas se toman en España cada día? 7. ¿Cuál es la primera? 8. ¿A qué hora se toma generalmente el almuerzo? 9. ¿Qué hay generalmente en la mesa del comedor? 10. ¿De qué consta el almuerzo? 11. ¿Cuándo se toma la cena? 12. ¿Cuándo se come el postre?

### LECCIÓN XVIII (Lesson XVIII)

#### PRONOMBRES PERSONALES COMPLEMENTOS (Objective Personal Pronouns)

191.

#### Con Verbos<sup>1</sup> (With Verbs)

Acusativo (Accusative)		<i>Singular</i>	Dativo (Dative)	
me	me	me	to me	
te	thee, you	te	to thee, to you	
(m.) le, lo	him, it, you	le	to him, to it, to you	
(f.) la	her, it	le, (la)	to her	
(n.) lo	it			
(reflexive, m., f., and n.)				
se	himself, herself, itself	se	to himself, to herself, to itself	

<sup>1</sup> Called in French grammars *conjunctive object pronouns*.

*Plural*

<b>nos</b>	<b>us</b>	<b>nos</b>	to us
<b>os</b>	<b>you</b>	<b>os</b>	to you
( <i>m.</i> ) <b>(les), los</b>	<b>them, you</b>	<b>les</b>	to them, to you
( <i>f.</i> ) <b>las</b>	<b>them</b>	<b>les, (las)</b>	to them
( <i>reflexive, m. and f.</i> )			
<b>se</b>	<b>themselves</b>	<b>se</b>	to themselves

**192.** In the third person masculine singular there are two forms for the direct object, the first of which (**le**) is used commonly for persons, and the second (**lo**) for things, although this distinction is not universally observed. In the third person masculine plural the use of the accusative **les** is condemned by the Spanish Academy. In the third person feminine, singular and plural, there are two forms for the indirect object, the first of which (**le, les**) is, by far, more commonly used and is the only form sanctioned by the Spanish Academy.

<b>Me habló</b>	He spoke to me
<b>Le (lo) he visto</b>	I have seen him (it)
<b>Les permaneció enemigo</b>	He remained their enemy

**193.** The forms **la, las** are frequently used in an indefinite sense with some such words understood as **cosa**, 'thing'; **manera**, 'way,' 'manner'; **acción**, 'deed'; **treta**, 'trick,' 'wile,' etc. Often they cannot be literally rendered in English.

<b>Yo voy a pagársela</b>	I'll pay him back
<b>Yo sé como las gasta</b>	I know how he acts; what his wiles are

**194.** **Usted** requires the verb to be in the third person and also requires the object pronoun representing it to be in the third person. The form **a usted** is generally appended.

<b>¿Quién le envió a V. aquí?</b>	Who sent you here?
<b>¿Quién le dió a V. su libro?</b>	Who gave you your book?

**195.** The neuter form **lo** is often used in the predicate to refer to an adjective, a noun taken in an indeterminate sense with an adjective value, or an entire phrase or statement. It may often be translated 'so' or 'too,' or not translated at all.

<b>¿Son negros sus ojos? Lo son</b>	Are his eyes black? They are
<b>¿Es usted madre? Lo soy</b>	Are you a mother? I am
<b>Lo creo</b>	I think so

196. If, however, the preceding noun refers to a definite person, generally no pronoun is used.

¿Es V. la madre del poeta?

Sí, yo soy

Are you the poet's mother?

Yes, I am

197. The objective personal pronouns usually stand immediately before the verb, unless the verb be in the infinitive, present participle, affirmative imperative, or subjunctive used as an affirmative imperative. They follow these forms and are attached to them. In literary style, however, they sometimes stand after and are attached to other forms of the verb.

If by the addition of these enclitic forms the accent falls on any syllable preceding the penult, it must be written (cf. § 20, 9).

Te hablé

Habláronme (*literary style*)

hablándole, speaking to him (*or her*)

He spoke to thee

They spoke to me

hablarles, to speak to them

198. When the personal pronouns are used with infinitives or present participles depending upon auxiliary verbs or verbs used with an auxiliary force, the pronouns may precede such verbs.

Hemos de escribirles

Les hemos de escribir

Estaban escuchándome

Me estaban escuchando

We are to write to them

They were listening to me

## VOCABULARIO XVIII

(Vocabulary XVIII)

- |   |  |
|---|--|
| acercar, to approach, pass;<br>—se ( <i>de or a</i> ), to approach,<br>draw near. | el fósforo, the match.                             |
| el apetito, the appetite.   | la gracia, the grace, cleverness;<br>—s, thanks.   |
| aprovechar, to profit ( <i>by a thing</i> ).                                      | el gusto, the taste, pleasure, en-<br>joyment.     |
| el aroma, the fragrance, aroma.   | igualmente, <i>adv.</i> , equally, like-<br>wise.  |
| asar, to roast; poco asado, —a,<br>rare, not well done.                           | la judía, the French bean, kidney-<br>bean.        |
| el asiento, the seat, place.  | levantar, to raise; —se, to rise,<br>get up.       |
| el azúcar, the sugar.   | el pedazo, the piece.                              |
| cocer, to cook; bien cocido, —a,<br>well done.                                    | permitir, to permit, allow.                        |
| el criado, the man servant; <i>f.</i> , la<br>criada, the maid.                   | el pollo, the chicken.                             |
| delicioso, —a, delightful, de-<br>licious.  | la preferencia, the preference,<br>choice.         |
| encender, to kindle, light.   | a propósito, <i>adv.</i> , apropos, by the<br>way. |
| excelente, excellent.   |  |



regalar, to present, favor.  
la salsa, the sauce, gravy, dress-  
ing.

el teatro, the theater.

hágame el favor de, be so kind as to, please.

tierno, -a, tender.  
el vino, the wine.  
volver, to turn, return.

### EJERCICIO XVIII (Exercise XVIII)

#### El Huésped y el Invitado en el Comedor

(The Host and Guest in the Dining-room)

*El huésped.* Hágame el favor de tomar este asiento. —  
*El invitado.* Con mucho gusto. — Permítame V. que le 2  
sirva<sup>1</sup> un poco de sopa. — Muchísimas gracias. Tomaré un  
poquito. — Ahora voy<sup>2</sup> a darle a V. un pedacito de esta 4  
carne. ¿La prefiere V. poco asada o bien cocida? — No tengo  
preferencia, señor. — Le pondré<sup>3</sup> un poquito de salsa también, 6  
si V. gusta. — Sí, me gusta mucho la salsa. Esta carne es  
tierna como pollo, y estas judías son deliciosas. — ¿Pero 8  
dónde está el pan? Parece que la criada ha olvidado ponerlo  
en la mesa. — Aquí está. — Es verdad. No lo había ob- 10  
servado. Hágame el favor de acercármelo. — Con mucho  
gusto. — Permítame V. que le sirva<sup>1</sup> otro vaso de vino. — 12  
Muchas gracias. Este vino es riquísimo.<sup>4</sup> — ¿No quiere<sup>5</sup> V.  
más carne? — Gracias.<sup>6</sup> Nunca tengo gran apetito, y he 14  
comido ya mucho. Todo me ha gustado. — Aquí hay azúcar  
para el café, si V. lo quiere. — Sí, gracias. Siempre tomo el 16  
café con leche y azúcar. — ¿Fuma V.? Estos cigarros me  
los regaló mi tío cuando volvió de Cuba, y son muy buenos. 18  
Aquí hay fósforos. — Mil gracias. (*Encendiendo su cigarro.*)  
Tiene un aroma excelente. A propósito, si tuviera V. gusto 20  
en acompañarme al teatro esta noche, tengo dos billetes  
para *El Afinador* de Vital Aza.<sup>7</sup> — Sí, me gustaría muchísimo 22  
acompañarle a V. — Bueno. (*Levantándose.*) Que aprove-  
che. — Gracias. Igualmente. 24

<sup>1</sup> *Pres. subj. of servir*, 'to serve,' cf. § 392, 2.

<sup>2</sup> *Pres. ind. of ir.*

<sup>3</sup> *Fut. of poner.*

<sup>4</sup> The superlative of *rico*, 'rich,' is often translated 'delicious,' as here.

<sup>5</sup> *Pres. ind. of querer*, 'to wish,' 'like.'

<sup>6</sup> *Gracias*, unless the context shows differently, indicates refusal, and is translated: 'No, thank you.'

<sup>7</sup> *Vital Aza* (1851-1913) has written many successful comedies. *El Afinador*, 'The Piano Tuner,' is among his best known comedies.

### EJERCICIO ORAL XVIII (Oral Exercise XVIII)

1. He sees us; we see him. 2. He spoke to him; we spoke to them. 3. I do not like him. 4. I was going to give (**dar**) him the box of matches, but I did not find him. 5. The guest gives him a cigar. 6. Who gives you the cigar? 7. Are you Spanish? — I am. 8. Is the bread white? — It is. 9. Permitting me [to] give him a piece of meat. 10. He had to give them the box of matches. 11. We were to write to them. 12. He introduced himself to the professor. 13. We used to see it every day. 14. I thank you (*give you [the] thanks*) for the match. 15. To himself; to herself; to themselves. 16. He presented the handkerchiefs to them (*f.*). 17. The guest had two tickets for the theater, and his host accompanied him that evening.

### TEMA XVIII (Composition XVIII)

*Host.* Won't you take a little of this meat? Here is a piece well done, if you like it. — *Guest.* Thank you. I prefer it so. — This gravy is excellent. Do you wish a little on your meat? — Yes, if you please. I like roast meat with gravy. — Will you allow me [to] give you some of these garbanzos and some potatoes? — Yes, certainly. Garbanzos are always delicious. — Will you be so kind as to pass me the bread? Thank you. — Did you intend going (*inf.*) to the theater this evening? — No. What is given this evening? — Vital Aza's *El Afinador*. If you wish to go, I have two tickets. — It would please me very much, I assure you. You are very good to (**de**) invite (**invitar**) me. Will you take something more? — No, I thank you. I have already eaten a great deal. The meal has been excellent. — Take one of these cigars which my uncle gave to me. There are matches in that little box. — Thank you. — Let us stroll until eight o'clock, then it will be time to (**de**) go to the theater. — Good.

### CONVERSACIÓN XVIII (Conversation XVIII)

1. ¿Cuáles son las formas del acusativo de los pronombres personales empleados con verbos? ¿del dativo? 2. ¿Dónde se

ponen los pronombres personales empleados con el infinitivo, el gerundio y el afirmativo del imperativo? 3. ¿Dónde se ponen generalmente los pronombres personales? 4. ¿Qué persona de los pronombres complementos se usa para traducir *you*?

5. ¿Dónde están el huésped y el invitado? 6. ¿Qué cosas comen? 7. ¿Qué prefiere el invitado, carne poco asada o bien cocida? 8. ¿Qué hay en la mesa para comer? 9. ¿Qué se pone generalmente en el café? 10. ¿De quién recibió el huésped los cigarros? 11. ¿Son buenos los cigarros de Cuba? 12. ¿Qué se dice al levantarse de la mesa?

## LECCIÓN XIX

(Lesson XIX)

### PRONOMBRES PERSONALES COMPLEMENTOS

(Objective Personal Pronouns)

**199.** When two object pronouns are used with a verb, the direct object is generally of the third person. If the direct object is of the first or second person, the indirect object usually takes the prepositional form (cf. § 208), and is placed after the verb with *a*.

**Me** **la** **presentó**  
**Me** **presentó** **a** **ella**

He introduced her to me  
He introduced me to her

**200.** The direct object pronouns **le**, **les**, 'you,' are not often used with an indirect object, especially when the indirect object is a pronoun. To avoid ambiguity or awkwardness of expression, recourse is had to some other construction, usually the passive voice.

NOT: ¿Quién **me** **le** **envió** **a** **V.**?

BUT: ¿Por quién **me** **fué** **V.** **enviado**?

NOT: ¿Quién **se** **le** **presentó** **a** **V.** **a** **él**?

BUT: ¿Por quién **le** **fué** **V.** **presentado**?

} Who sent you to me?

} Who introduced you to him?

**201.** When a direct and indirect object pronoun are used with a verb, the indirect precedes the direct, but **se** precedes all other forms.

**Muéstramelos**, Show them to me

**Se** **me** **parece**, It seems to me

**Nos** **lo** **mostraron**, They showed it to us

202. If both object pronouns are of the third person, **se** is used for euphony instead of the indirect object **le** or **les**.

Se lo dió

He gave it to him (her, it, you [s. or *pl.*], them)

203. The ethical dative and dative of interest are much more commonly used in Spanish than in English. They frequently form a redundant construction, and should not be translated into English. These datives precede all other object pronouns, except **se** (cf. § 201).

Me lo mataron

They killed him (for me)

Te llevas mis plumas

You are taking my pens

Se me quitaron los sombreros

They took their hats off

Se lo comió

He ate it

NOTE. — After impersonal **ser**, a dative personal pronoun is often used to denote to whom the impersonal expression is to be applied.

Me es imposible salir ahora    It is impossible for me to go out now

## VERBOS

(Verbs)

204. Some of the commonest verbs in Spanish are irregular. Their conjugation will be given in full in this and in the succeeding lessons, and each verb should be learned carefully.

205. Besides **estar**, there are but two irregular verbs in **-ar**, viz. **andar** and **dar**.

206. **dar**, 'to give.'

dar, dando, dado

### INDICATIVO

*Presente*    doy, das, da, damos, dais, dan

*Imperfecto*    d-aba, -abas, -aba, -ábamos, -abais, -aban

*Pretérito*    dí, diste, dió, dimos, disteis, dieron

*Futuro*    dar-é, -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án

*Condicional*    dar-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían

### SUBJUNTIVO

*Presente*    dé, des, dé, demos, deis, den

*Imperfecto*, 1ª forma: d-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran

*Imperfecto*, 2ª forma: d-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen

*Futuro*    d-iere, -ieres, -iere, -iéremos, -iereis, -ieren

### IMPERATIVO

da

dad

207. *andar*, 'to go.'<sup>1</sup>*andar*, *andando*, *andado*

## INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<i>and-o, -as, -a, -amos, -áis, -an</i>
<i>Imperfecto</i>	<i>and-aba, -abas, -aba, -ábamos, -abais, -aban</i>
<i>Preterito</i>	<i>anduve, anduviste, anduvo, anduvimos, anduvisteis, anduvieron</i>
<i>Futuro</i>	<i>andar-é, -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án</i>
<i>Condicional</i>	<i>andar-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían</i>

## SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<i>and-e, -es, -e, -emos, -éis, -en</i>
<i>Imperfecto, 1ª forma:</i>	<i>anduv-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran</i>
<i>Imperfecto, 2ª forma:</i>	<i>anduv-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen</i>
<i>Futuro</i>	<i>anduv-iere, -ieres, -iere, -iéremos, -iereis, -ieren</i>

## VOCABULARIO XIX

(Vocabulary XIX)

<i>el aficionado</i> , the amateur, admirer.	<i>invitar</i> , to invite.
<i>el ajedrez</i> , the chess, game of chess.	<i>jugar</i> , to play.
<i>el asunto</i> , the subject, topic.	<i>el limón</i> , the lemon.
<i>el casino</i> , the casino, club.	<i>mostrar</i> , to show.
<i>cerca</i> , <i>adv.</i> , near; — <i>de</i> , <i>prep.</i> , near, close to, about.	<i>el naípe</i> , the playing-card.
<i>la cerveza</i> , the beer.	<i>el periódico</i> , the paper, newspaper.
<i>la corrida (de toros)</i> , the bullfight.	<i>el rato</i> , the space of time, while.
<i>despedirse</i> , to take leave.	<i>el refresco</i> , the refreshment, cold drink.
<i>discutir</i> , to discuss.	<i>reunir</i> , to join, bring together; — <i>se</i> , to gather (together).
<i>divertir</i> , to divert, amuse, entertain; — <i>se</i> , to have a good time.	<i>el sentido</i> , the sense, meaning.
<i>el dominó</i> , the domino, game of dominoes.	<i>el socio</i> , the member, partner.
<i>la esquina</i> , the corner.	<i>la suerte</i> , the fate, sort, skilful maneuver (of a bull-fighter).
<i>interesar</i> , to interest.	<i>el torero</i> , the bull-fighter.
<i>la invitación</i> , the invitation.	<i>el toro</i> , the bull; <i>los —s</i> , the bullfight.
	<i>tratar</i> , to treat ( <i>a subject</i> ), discuss.

## EJERCICIO XIX

(Exercise XIX)

Cuando estuve en Madrid yo pasaba mucho tiempo cada día en los cafés con mis amigos españoles. Hay un gran número de cafés en Madrid. Andando por las calles se los

<sup>1</sup> *Andar* means 'to go,' 'walk,' merely indicating motion or progress, without mentioning destination or purpose, which is indicated by *ir*, 'to go' (cf. § 255), e.g., *andar por la calle*, 'to go along the street,' but *ir a la escuela*, 'to go to school.'

ve<sup>1</sup> en casi todas las esquinas principales. Allí nos<sup>2</sup> reunía- 4  
mos para leer los periódicos, hablar de cosas diversas y tomar  
café, o algún refresco de cerveza, de limón, etc. 6

Un día que estábamos sentados en el café Inglés, se<sup>2</sup> acercó 8  
a nuestra mesilla un joven torero. Mi amigo me presentó a 8  
él, y le invitó a sentarse.<sup>2</sup> Tomamos un refresco, y después  
de hablar un ratito de la corrida del jueves, él se<sup>2</sup> ofreció a lle- 10  
varnos a su casino, que estaba cerca. Fuimos con él, y allí  
nos presentó a varios señores, aficionados a los toros y socios 12  
del casino, que eran todos muy agradables. Todo el mundo  
se<sup>2</sup> divertía; muchos discutían las suertes de la última corrida; 14  
algunos jugaban al ajedrez; otros al dominó o a los naipes.

Después de pasar una noche muy agradable en el casino, 16  
nos<sup>2</sup> despedimos del torero y de sus amigos, y nos<sup>2</sup> fuimos a 18  
casa.

### EJERCICIO ORAL XIX (Oral Exercise XIX)

1. It seems to me. 2. He showed them to us. 3. He intro-  
duced her to him; me to him; you to him; him to him. 4. Who  
introduced you to him? 5. To show them it; showing them it.  
6. I give it to you. 7. This watch does not go. 8. Give it to me.  
9. The bull-fighter accompanied him to the club. 10. May they  
give them many thanks. 11. These tickets are for Thursday's  
bull-fight; my cousin gave them to me. 12. Some were play-  
ing cards, when we entered the club. 13. The word **suerte** has  
another meaning than 'fate' or 'sort,' when one speaks of bull-  
fights. 14. The members showed it to me. 15. I took leave of  
them at the corner. 16. Let us take a cold drink at this café.  
17. The subject interested me, and I discussed it with all the  
members. 18. The child's mother gave him a piece of chicken,  
and he ate it. 19. This lesson treats of personal pronouns.

### TEMA XIX (Composition XIX)

One day when I was going along one of the principal streets  
of Madrid, a friend approached me, accompanied by (de) a 2  
Spanish bull-fighter. My friend introduced him to me, and

<sup>1</sup> Cf. § 217.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. § 213.

we talked a while about the bull-fights of the past week. 4  
 I showed him by my conversation that they interested me.  
 Then he offered [to] take us all to his club and introduce us 6  
 to several amateurs of bull-fighting. We thanked him for  
 (por) his invitation, and went with him to the club. Every- 8  
 body was busy either (o) playing or reading or talking. Natu-  
 rally the bull-fights were the principal topics of conversation. 10  
 There were many who were playing chess or dominoes, and  
 all seemed [to] be amusing (*inf.*) themselves. We took leave 12  
 of our friends at about eleven o'clock, after passing (*inf.*) a  
 very pleasant evening. 14

### CONVERSACIÓN XIX (Conversation XIX)

1. ¿De qué trata esta lección? 2. ¿Cuál es la posición de los pronombres empleados como regímenes con un verbo? 3. ¿Cuándo se emplea *se* en vez de *le* o *les*? 4. ¿Cuál es el presente de indicativo del verbo *dar*? ¿el pretérito? ¿el imperfecto de subjuntivo? 5. ¿Qué significa *andar*? 6. ¿Cuál es el sentido de *ir*? 7. Conjugue V. el pretérito del verbo *andar*.

8. ¿Dónde se pasa mucho tiempo cada día en Madrid? 9. ¿Qué se toma en los cafés? 10. ¿Hay muchos cafés en Madrid? 11. ¿Quién se acercó a la mesilla donde estaban sentados los señores? 12. ¿Quiénes eran los socios del casino? 13. ¿Qué hacían esos señores allí? 14. ¿Cuántos jugaban al ajedrez? 15. ¿Se divertía todo el mundo? 16. ¿Qué cosas discutían los aficionados a las corridas?

### LECCIÓN XX

(Lesson XX)

#### PRONOMBRES PERSONALES COMPLEMENTOS (Objective Personal Pronouns)

208.

#### Con Preposiciones<sup>1</sup> (With Prepositions)

*Singular*

(para) mí  
 “ ti  
 “ él  
 “ ella

(for) me  
 “ thee  
 “ him, it  
 “ her, it

<sup>1</sup> Called in French grammars *disjunctive pronouns*.

(para) ello  
 “ usted  
 “ sí (*reflexive*)

(for) it  
 “ you  
 “ himself, herself, itself, yourself

*Plural*

(para) nosotros (-as)  
 “ vosotros (-as)  
 “ ellos  
 “ ellas  
 “ ustedes  
 “ sí (*reflexive*)

(for) us  
 “ you  
 “ them (*m.*)  
 “ them (*f.*)  
 “ you  
 “ themselves, yourselves

NOTE. — Ello meaning ‘it’ represents a whole phrase or idea, and does not refer to a specific antecedent.

Tiene mucha razón en ello

He is very right in it (*or that*)

209. These forms stand immediately after the prepositions that govern them. With **con**, however, instead of **con mí**, **con ti** and **con sí**, the forms **conmigo**, **contigo** and **consigo** are used.

Habla por ella, He speaks for her    Habla conmigo, He is talking with me

210. These forms with the preposition **a** are often used for emphasis. They may precede or follow the verb, except when the verb is in the imperative affirmative, when they follow. They are generally used redundantly with other object pronouns. Nouns are sometimes used in the same way.

Dígaselo a él, Tell it to him

A mí me lo dijo, He told it to me

Se lo dijo a mi padre, He told it to my father

211. Since **le** may mean ‘to him,’ ‘to her,’ ‘to it,’ ‘to you,’ and **les**, ‘to them’ (*m. and f.*) and ‘to you’ (*pl.*), a pronoun following **a** is often required for clearness.

Le habla { a él  
 a ella  
 a usted

He speaks { to him  
 to her  
 to you

Les habla { a ellos  
 a ellas  
 a ustedes

He speaks { to them (*m.*)  
 to them (*f.*)  
 to you (*pl.*)

Se lo da { a él  
 a ella  
 a usted(es)  
 a ellos  
 a ellas

He gives { it to him  
 it to her  
 it to you  
 it to them (*m.*)  
 it to them (*f.*)



### VERBOS (Verbs)

#### 212. *querer*, 'to wish,' 'want,' 'desire,' 'like,' 'love.'

*querer*, *quriendo*, *querido*

#### INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<i>quiero</i> , <i>quieres</i> , <i>quiere</i> , <i>queremos</i> , <i>queréis</i> , <i>quieren</i>
<i>Imperfecto</i>	<i>quer-ía</i> , <i>-ías</i> , <i>-ía</i> , <i>-íamos</i> , <i>-íais</i> , <i>-ían</i>
<i>Preterito</i>	<i>quise</i> , <i>quisiste</i> , <i>quiso</i> , <i>quisimos</i> , <i>quisisteis</i> , <i>quisieron</i>
<i>Futuro</i>	<i>querr-é</i> , <i>-ás</i> , <i>-á</i> , <i>-emos</i> , <i>-éis</i> , <i>-án</i>
<i>Condicional</i>	<i>querr-ía</i> , <i>-ías</i> , <i>-ía</i> , <i>-íamos</i> , <i>-íais</i> , <i>-ían</i>

#### SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<i>quiera</i> , <i>quieras</i> , <i>quiera</i> , <i>queramos</i> , <i>queráis</i> , <i>quieran</i>
<i>Imperfecto</i> , 1 <sup>a</sup> forma:	<i>quis-iera</i> , <i>-ieras</i> , <i>-iera</i> , <i>-iéramos</i> , <i>-ierais</i> , <i>-ieran</i>
<i>Imperfecto</i> , 2 <sup>a</sup> forma:	<i>quis-iese</i> , <i>-ieses</i> , <i>-iese</i> , <i>-iésemos</i> , <i>-ieseis</i> , <i>-iesen</i>
<i>Futuro</i>	<i>quis-iere</i> , <i>-ieres</i> , <i>-iere</i> , <i>-iéremos</i> , <i>-iereis</i> , <i>-ieren</i>

#### IMPERATIVO

*quiere*

*quered*

### VOCABULARIO XX (Vocabulary XX)

la *barba*, the chin, beard.  
 la *boca*, the mouth.  
 el *brazo*, the arm.  
 el *cabello* } the hair (used also in  
 el *pelo* } plural).  
 la *cabeza*, the head.  
 la *cadera*, the hip.  
 la *cara*, the face, head of a coin.  
 el *codo*, the elbow.  
 el *corazón*, the heart.  
 el *cuerpo*, the body.  
 el *dedo*, the finger, toe.  
 el *diente*, the tooth.  
 la *espalda*, the back.  
 la *extremidad*, the extremity.  
 el *labio*, the lip.

la *mejilla*, the cheek.  
 la *muñeca*, the wrist.  
 la *nariz*, the nose.  
 el *ojo*, the eye.  
 la *oreja*, the ear, outer ear.  
 el *órgano*, the organ.  
 el *pecho*, the breast.  
 el *pie*, the foot; a —, *adv.*, on foot.  
 la *pierna*, the leg.  
     *precioso*, -a, precious, valuable.  
 los *pulmones*, the lungs.  
 la *rodilla*, the knee.  
 el *talón*, the heel.  
 el *tronco*, the trunk (of body or  
     *tree*).  
     *vital*, *adj.*, vital, of life.

### EJERCICIO XX (Exercise XX)

Nuestro cuerpo tiene tres partes principales. Son la  
 cabeza, el tronco y las extremidades. Las extremidades 2  
 superiores se llaman los brazos. Las partes principales de  
 ellos son las manos, que terminan en dedos, la muñeca, el 4  
 codo y el hombro. Las extremidades inferiores se llaman  
 las piernas. Ellas se componen de los pies con sus dedos y 6

sus talones, de las rodillas y de las caderas que, como los hombros, forman también parte del tronco. 8

La parte principal de la cabeza es la cara. En ella están los ojos, que son los órganos de la vista, el sentido más 10 precioso de todos. En la cara están también la nariz, la boca con los labios, los dientes y la lengua, la barba, las mejillas 12 y las orejas.

Entre la cabeza y el tronco está el cuello. En el tronco, 14 entre el pecho y la espalda, están los principales órganos vitales, que son el corazón y los pulmones. 16

### EJERCICIO ORAL XX

(Oral Exercise XX)

1. Are those for me? 2. Yes, I presented them to you. 3. She writes to him; to her; to you. 4. We give it to her; to him; to them; to you. 5. He keeps it for himself. 6. I should like [to] talk with him. 7. Why do you not talk with me? 8. They wanted [to] give it to them. 9. The study of Spanish is easy for us. 10. I do not like beards. 11. That poor man has only one leg. 12. We have ten fingers and ten toes. 13. The vital organs are in the head and the trunk. 14. I wish [to] speak to him. 15. Speak to him, and tell me if he desires anything. 16. Some of the parts of one's head are the hair, the face, the ears, the nose, the mouth and the chin. 17. Many Spaniards wear beards.

### TEMA XX

(Composition XX)

The principal parts of the body are the trunk, the head, the arms and the legs. In the trunk are the heart and the 2 lungs, two important vital organs. In the head are the organs of four of the senses. The most important of them 4 is without doubt the sense of sight. The principal organs of (the) speech are the lips, the teeth and the tongue. 6

Other parts of the head are the hair, the ears, the nose, the cheeks and the chin. 8

In Spanish there is only one word for 'beard' and 'chin.' The toes (of the feet) are called the same as the fingers (of 10 the hand). Man has two shoulders, two hips, two elbows, two knees, two hands and two feet. 12

### CONVERSACIÓN XX (Conversation XX)

1. ¿Cuáles son las formas de los pronombres personales empleados con preposiciones? 2. ¿Cómo se dice: *with me? with thee? with himself?* 3. Conjugue V. el pretérito del verbo **querer**. 4. ¿Qué significa **se lo da**?

5. ¿Cuáles son las partes principales del brazo? 6. ¿Cuáles son las partes principales de la pierna? 7. ¿Cuáles son los principales órganos vitales, y dónde están? 8. ¿Le gusta a V. la barba? 9. ¿Es costumbre general en España usar barba? 10. ¿Cuántas lecciones han estudiado VV. hasta ahora? 11. ¿Cuál le gusta más, la lectura o la conversación?

### LECCIÓN XXI (Lesson XXI)

#### PRONOMBRES REFLEXIVOS (Reflexive Pronouns)

**213.** The reflexive object pronouns are the same as the regular personal object pronouns in the first and second persons (cf. § 191). In the third person, masculine and feminine, singular and plural, the reflexive pronoun is **se**, when used with verbs, and **sí** when used with prepositions.

<b>yo</b>	<b>me levanto</b>	I rise
<b>tú</b>	<b>te levantas</b>	thou risest
<b>él (ella, usted)</b>	<b>se levanta</b>	he (she, you) rise(s)
<b>nosotros</b>	<b>nos levantamos</b>	we rise
<b>vosotros</b>	<b>os levantáis</b>	you rise
<b>ellos (ellas, ustedes)</b>	<b>se levantan</b>	they (you) rise

1. Many verbs are used reflexively in Spanish that are not so used in English. With such verbs the reflexive pronoun must not be translated. The following are a few of the more common ones: (*Learn*)

<b>acordarse (de)</b> , to remember	<b>levantarse</b> , to rise, get up
<b>acostarse</b> , to go to bed, lie down	<b>quedarse</b> , to remain, stay
<b>alegrarse (de)</b> , to rejoice (at), be glad (of)	<b>quejarse (de)</b> , to complain (of)
<b>aparecerse</b> , to appear	<b>reírse (de)</b> , to laugh (at)
<b>atreverse</b> , to dare, venture	<b>sentarse</b> , to sit down
<b>burlarse (de)</b> , to laugh (at), make fun (of)	

2. Some few Spanish verbs change their meaning when used reflexively.

**dormir**, to sleep  
**hacer**, to make, do  
**ir**, to go  
**llevar**, to take  
**poner**, to place, put

**dormirse**, to go to sleep  
**hacerse** (*with predicate noun*) to become  
**irse**, to go away  
**llevarse**, to take away  
**ponerse** (*with predicate adjective*) to become

214. The forms **nos**, **os** and **se** (*pl.*) may be used with reciprocal value.

**nos queremos**, we like each other      **se hablan**, they talk to each other

NOTE. — The reciprocal force is sometimes brought out more clearly by the addition of some such phrase as **el uno al otro**, **unos a otros**, etc.

215. In English the reflexive pronouns have the same form as the intensive pronouns, 'myself,' etc. In Spanish, however, there are separate forms. The intensives are made by using **mismo** with the subject pronoun, with the prepositional forms, or with a noun (cf. §§ 187-188).

**Yo mismo lo vi**, I saw it myself      **Ella se viste a sí misma**, She dresses herself  
**El rey mismo lo hace**, The king himself does it

216. The reflexive **se** may be used with verbs in a passive sense.

**Se venden libros**  
**Se me habían dado cartas**

Books are sold  
 Letters had been given to me, *or* I had been given letters

217. The reflexive **se** may be used with verbs to form an impersonal construction (similar to the French *on*, or the German *man*), and then the verb is employed in the singular. The verb in this construction is used actively and may govern a direct or indirect object.

**Se habla de ella**  
**Se le dió los libros**

One speaks of her, *or* she is spoken of  
 They gave him the books

NOTE. — The third person plural of transitive verbs is also often used in Spanish in the sense of the French *on* or the German *man*, which require the verb in the singular. This is similar to the English usage.

**Dicen que su padre ha muerto**      They say that his father has died

218. The impersonal reflexive is sometimes used with an indirect object pronoun which has the force of an ethical dative

and which in English is sometimes translated as the subject of an active verb.

Se me figura, I imagine

Se me olvida, I forget

## VERBOS

(Verbs)

### 219. *hacer*,<sup>1</sup> 'to make,' 'do.'

*hacer, haciendo, hecho*

#### INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<b>hago, haces, hace, hacemos, hacéis, hacen</b>
<i>Imperfecto</i>	<b>hac-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían</b>
<i>Preterito</i>	<b>hice, hiciste, hizo, hicimos, hicisteis, hicieron</b>
<i>Futuro</i>	<b>har-é, -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án</b>
<i>Condicional</i>	<b>har-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían</b>

#### SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<b>haga, hagas, haga, hagamos, hagáis, hagan</b>
<i>Imperfecto, 1ª forma:</i>	<b>hic-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran</b>
<i>Imperfecto, 2ª forma:</i>	<b>hic-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen</b>
<i>Futuro</i>	<b>hic-iere, -ieres, -iere, -iéremos, -iereis, -ieren</b>

#### IMPERATIVO

**haz**

**haced**

NOTE. — *Licuefacer, rarefacer* (*pp. rarefacto*), *satisfacer* and *tumefacer* (*pp. tumefacto*) retain the *f* of the Latin original. *Satisfacer* has the form *satisface* as well as *satisfaz* in the singular imperative.

## VOCABULARIO XXI

(Vocabulary XXI)

<b>acepillar</b> , to brush.	<b>enjudar</b> , to dry, wipe.
<b>acerca</b> , <i>prep.</i> , about, concerning; — <b>de</b> , in regard to.	<b>el jabón</b> , the soap.
<b>además</b> , <i>adv.</i> , moreover, besides; — <b>de</b> , <i>prep.</i> , besides, in addition to.	<b>el lavabo</b> , the wash-stand.
<b>afeitar</b> , to shave.	<b>listo</b> , -a, ready.
<b>antes</b> , <i>adv.</i> , first, before; — <b>de</b> , <i>prep.</i> , before.	<b>madrugar</b> , to rise early.
<b>el aseo</b> , the cleanliness, neatness, toilet.	<b>el peine</b> , the comb.
<b>bajar</b> , to descend, lower, go down.	<b>a pesar de</b> , <i>prep.</i> , in spite of.
<b>el barbero</b> , the barber.	<b>la prisa</b> , the hurry, haste, speed.
<b>la biblioteca</b> , the library.	<b>el refrán</b> , the proverb, saying, adage.
<b>la compra</b> , the purchase.	<b>regatear</b> , to bargain, haggle.
<b>el dependiente</b> , the clerk.	<b>la salud</b> , the health.
<b>el despacho</b> , the office.	<b>temprano</b> , <i>adv.</i> , early.
<b>Dios</b> , <i>m.</i> , God.	<b>terminar</b> , to end, finish.
	<b>la toalla</b> , the towel.
	<b>el trabajo</b> , the work.
	<b>vestir</b> , to clothe, don, put on.

**como de costumbre**, as usual.

<sup>1</sup> Used impersonally in speaking of the weather (cf. § 176, 2).

## EJERCICIO XXI

(Exercise XXI)

Me acuesto<sup>1</sup> generalmente a las diez o a las diez y media de la noche, y me levanto a las seis de la mañana. Creo en el refrán que dice: «Al que madruga, Dios le ayuda.» Además, es mejor para la salud levantarse temprano. Después de levantarme, voy<sup>2</sup> al lavabo, donde tengo peines, cepillos, jabón, toallas para enjugarme y todo lo necesario para el aseo. Primero me lavo las manos y la cara, y me limpio los dientes. Termino de vestirme, y me acepillo los cabellos. Entonces bajo al comedor, donde tomo el desayuno con mi familia. Después de despedirme de ella, voy al barbero para hacerme afeitar y para leer el periódico. Después estoy listo para el trabajo del día. Me quedo en el despacho trabajando hasta las doce. Tomo entonces el almuerzo. A las cuatro y media me paseo solo o con amigos, antes de volver a casa. Terminada la comida, voy al teatro o paso la noche en casa con la familia.

## EJERCICIO ORAL XXI

(Oral Exercise XXI)

1. Conjugate: I rise, thou, etc. 2. I rejoice, thou, etc. 3. I do not dare [to] do it. 4. He went to sleep at nine o'clock. 5. We used to complain. 6. They talk to each other. 7. The child dresses itself. 8. Has he made the purchases? 9. Are combs sold here? 10. Spanish is spoken here. 11. He became a professor. 12. The gentleman sat down in the library until his friend arrived. 13. It is not possible [to] wash one's self well without soap. 14. After we get up, we wash our hands and face. 15. Then we brush our teeth. 16. When I am ready, I go down and eat breakfast with my family. 17. When one rises early, one can be sure that God will help him. 18. In America we do not have to bargain with the clerks. 19. I went to bed late last night, but, in spite of this, I arose early as usual.

## TEMA XXI

(Composition XXI)

Last night I went (fuí) to the theater. I arrived (llegué) home at half past twelve. I went to bed very late, and I

<sup>1</sup> Pres. ind. of acostarse.<sup>2</sup> Pres. ind. of ir.

assure you that I soon fell asleep, for I was sleepy. In spite of this, I arose at six, as usual. After washing (*inf.*) myself 4 and cleaning my teeth, I finished dressing (*inf. after de*) myself. Then I went down[-stairs] to (*para*) eat breakfast with 6 my family. After breakfast, I sat down in the library and read the newspaper until eight o'clock. Then I remembered 8 that I had to make a few purchases before going (*inf.*) to the office. I took leave of my family and went hastily (*with* 10 *haste*) to the stores, where, after bargaining with the clerks, I bought what (*lo que*) I desired. I reached the office ready 12 for work at nine o'clock.

## CONVERSACIÓN XXI

(Conversation XXI)

1. Conjugue V. el verbo reflexivo **quedarse** en todos los tiempos que V. conoce. 2. ¿Qué se puede emplear en vez de la voz pasiva? 3. ¿Qué significa **dormirse**? ¿**irse**? ¿**ponerse**? 4. Conjugue V. el pretérito del verbo **hacer**; el futuro; la segunda forma del imperfecto de subjuntivo. 5. ¿Cómo se dice 6 *p. m.*? ¿6 *a. m.*?

6. ¿Por qué se levanta temprano este señor? 7. ¿A qué hora se levanta? 8. ¿Es temprano levantarse a las seis de la mañana? 9. ¿Cuáles son los artículos que empleó este señor para el aseo? 10. ¿Qué se hace con los cepillos? 11. ¿Dónde leyó el periódico? 12. ¿Qué hace un barbero? 13. ¿Para qué sirve un despacho? 14. ¿Dónde pasa las noches este señor? 15. ¿Puede V. decirme el refrán que se emplea en la lección de hoy?

## LECCIÓN XXII

(Lesson XXII)

## LAS PREPOSICIONES PARA Y POR

(The Prepositions *para* and *por*)

220. In the use of **para** and **por** there is often doubt and confusion when they are employed to translate, under varying conditions, the same English prepositions, especially the preposition 'for.' In a broad sense, **para** indicates purpose, desti-

nation or qualification, and **por** indicates source, motive, acceptance or exchange.

unos zapatos hechos <b>por</b> el zapatero	some shoes made by the cobbler for
para el dentista	the dentist
Comemos <b>para</b> vivir	We eat to live
para la próxima vez	for the next time
Habla muy bien español <b>para</b> un inglés	He speaks Spanish very well for an Englishman
Lo hizo <b>por</b> miedo	He did it from fear
Lo hice <b>por</b> mi madre	I did it for my mother
Me tomaron <b>por</b> español	They took me for a Spaniard
Le di dinero <b>para</b> pan	I gave him money for bread ( <i>to buy bread</i> )
Le di dinero <b>por</b> pan	I gave him money for bread ( <i>in exchange for</i> )

221. After **estar**, with a personal subject, **para** before an infinitive indicates action soon to take place, while **por** indicates merely inclination.

Estaba el hombre <b>para</b> salir	The man was on the point of going out
Estaba el hombre <b>por</b> salir	The man was disposed to go out

222. After **estar**, with a subject that is not personal, **para** before an infinitive indicates action soon to take place, but **por** indicates action yet to be carried out.

El libro <b>está para</b> terminar	The book is about finished
El libro <b>está por</b> terminar	The book is yet to be finished

223. The infinitive in Spanish is used after all prepositions where in English a present participle is used, except the preposition **en**, which usually governs the present participle rather than the infinitive.

<b>para</b> viajar, for traveling	<b>sin</b> hablar, without speaking
<b>en</b> hablar ( <i>or</i> [en] hablando), in ( <i>or</i> while) speaking	

1. The present participle, with or without the preposition **en**, may be used to translate an English present participle, often introduced by 'on,' 'in,' 'while,' 'by,' etc.

(En) hablando con él aprendí la verdad	In (by, while, etc.) speaking with him I learned the truth
--	--

2. The infinitive after **al** may be used to translate an English present participle introduced by 'on,' or a clause introduced by 'when,' 'as,' 'after,' etc.

<b>al</b> llegar a Córdoba	on arriving ( <i>or</i> when [after] we arrived) at Cordova
----------------------------	---



# VERBOS (Verbs)

## 224. caer, 'to fall.'

caer, cayendo, caído

### INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	caigo, caes, cae, caemos, caéis, caen
<i>Imperfecto</i>	ca-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían
<i>Preterito</i>	caí, caíste, cayó, caímos, caísteis, cayeron
<i>Futuro</i>	caer-é, -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án
<i>Condicional</i>	caer-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían

### SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	caiga, caigas, caiga, caigamos, caigáis, caigan
<i>Imperfecto</i> , 1ª forma:	ca-yera, -yeras, -yera, -yéramos, -yerais, -yeran
<i>Imperfecto</i> , 2ª forma:	ca-yese, -yese, -yese, -yésemos, -yeseis, -yesen
<i>Futuro</i>	ca-yere, -yeres, -yere, -yéremos, -yereis, -yeren

### IMPERATIVO

cae

caed

## 225. asir, 'to grasp,' 'seize.'

asir, asiendo, asido

### INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	asgo, ases, ase, asimos, asís, asen
<i>Imperfecto</i>	as-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían
<i>Preterito</i>	as-í, -iste, -ió, -imos, -isteis, -ieron
<i>Futuro</i>	asir-é, -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án
<i>Condicional</i>	asir-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían

### SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	asga, asgas, asga, asgamos, asgáis, asgan
<i>Imperfecto</i> , 1ª forma:	as-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran
<i>Imperfecto</i> , 2ª forma:	as-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen
<i>Futuro</i>	as-iere, -ieres, -iere, -iéremos, -iereis, -ieren

### IMPERATIVO

ase

asid

## VOCABULARIO XXII (Vocabulary XXII)

el acero, the steel.

agudo, -a, sharp-pointed, sharp.

la aguja, the needle.

el albañil, the mason, bricklayer.

la alhaja, the jewel, gem.

la cal, the lime.

el carpintero, the carpenter.

la construcción, the construction.

construir, to construct, build.

cortante, *adj.*, cutting, sharp.

el ejemplo, the example.

el esqueleto, the skeleton, frame-work.

la fabricación, the fabrication, manufacture.

general, *adj.*, general.

el herrero, the smith, ironworker.

el hierro, the iron.

el joyero, the jeweler.  
 el ladrillo, the brick.  
 el lujo, the luxury, extravagance.  
 el martillo, the hammer.  
 el material, the material.  
 el medio, the middle, center, way,  
     means; *por* — *de*, *prep.*, by  
     means of.

el mineral, the mineral.  
 el mueblaje, the furniture.  
 el oro, the gold.  
 la plata, the silver.  
 el puente, the bridge.  
 la sierra, the saw.  
 la vajilla, the table-service.  
 el vapor, the steamer, steamship.

### EJERCICIO XXII (Exercise XXII)

Los principales materiales de construcción són la madera, la piedra, el hierro y el acero. Por medio del martillo y de la sierra el carpintero trabaja la madera para hacer mueblaje o para construir casas. Toda clase de construcciones de piedra, ladrillo, arena y cal se hacen por el albañil. El hierro y el acero, trabajados por el herrero, se usan para el esqueleto de los edificios grandes, para los vapores y para los puentes. El acero se emplea también para hacer artículos agudos y cortantes, como, por ejemplo, las agujas y los cuchillos. Hay algunos minerales, como el oro y la plata, que los joyeros convierten<sup>1</sup> en alhajas y artículos de lujo. El oro y la plata sirven también para la fabricación de relojes, de vajilla y de otros artículos de uso general.

### EJERCICIO ORAL XXII (Oral Exercise XXII)

1. I may fall; I may seize; you may fall; you may seize; he may fall; he may seize; etc. 2. When he fell, he seized the hand of his friend. 3. Iron is used by ironworkers for the construction of bridges. 4. These jewels were manufactured by the jeweler. 5. Wood is much used as a material for construction. 6. In Spain there are not many houses of wood. 7. This building was constructed by two masons. 8. Without speaking to the youth, I saw (*vi*) that he was English. 9. The book which I have here is yet to be finished. 10. You are right, the book is about finished. 11. The mason was on the point of falling, when he seized the iron which was near him. 12. For the next time, we

<sup>1</sup> *Pres. ind. of convertir*, 'to convert.'

shall have Lesson XXIII. 13. On arriving at the chapel, I found my father there. 14. This, for example, is iron for that large building near the church.

TEMA XXII  
(Composition XXII)

The construction of a large building is certainly a marvelous sight for those (los) who have never seen it. In the framework the great pieces of iron and steel are put in position by the ironworkers. Carpenters are busy on all sides (por todas partes), working with hammer and saw. The brick and stone for the walls and chimneys are laid by the masons. There are so many things that are [being] done all at once that it does not seem possible that a building is gradually [being] formed. It is true that formerly there were many large edifices and monuments, but the people required much more time to (para) construct them than is necessary for us in the present century, when we have all the necessary materials and tools (herramientas).

CONVERSACIÓN XXII  
(Conversation XXII)

1. Conjugue V. el pretérito de indicativo del verbo **caer**; el presente de subjuntivo del verbo **asir**. 2. ¿Cuáles son las preposiciones que se emplean para traducir **para** y **por**? 3. ¿Cómo se dice: *The man was disposed to visit Spain*? 4. ¿Qué forma del verbo se usa generalmente después de preposiciones en castellano?

5. ¿De qué trata el ejercicio xxii? 6. ¿Cuáles son los principales materiales de construcción? 7. ¿Qué hace el carpintero? ¿el albañil? ¿el joyero? 8. ¿Qué clase de artículos se fabrican con el acero? 9. ¿Qué se fabrica con el oro y la plata? 10. ¿En qué construcciones se emplean el hierro y el acero en vez de madera? 11. ¿Para qué sirven las alhajas? 12. ¿Cuántas clases de relojes hay? 13. ¿Para qué sirve el reloj?

## LECCIÓN XXIII

(Lesson XXIII)

## ADVERBIOS

(Adverbs)

## Formación

(Formation)

226. Adverbs with the termination **-mente** are derived from adjectives in the following manner:

1. Adjectives ending in **-o** add **-mente** to the feminine form.

claro, clear

claramente, clearly

2. Adjectives that have the same form for both genders add **-mente** to the common form.

fácil, easy, fácilmente, easily

pobre, poor, pobremente, poorly

227. Adjectives with a written accent retain this accent in the adverbs formed from them by the addition of **-mente**.

difícil, difficult, difícilmente, difficultly      hábil, clever, hábilmente, cleverly

228. When two or more adverbs in **-mente** are used together and connected by a conjunction, **-mente** is added to the last adjective only, but the preceding adjective stands in the feminine form.

clara y distintamente, clearly and distinctly

229. Adverbs in **-mente** expressing manner may be replaced by prepositional phrases in which an appropriate adjective is employed with the noun **manera** or **modo**, 'way,' 'manner,' or an appropriate noun, with the preposition **con**, 'with.'

correctamente	} correctly
de una manera correcta	
de un modo correcto	
con corrección	

230. **Recientemente**, 'recently,' is shortened to **recién**, when it precedes a past participle used adjectively.

el recién llegado, the newly arrived person

los recién casados, the newly married (couple)

### Construcción (Position)

**231.** Adverbs of manner generally precede the adjectives and adverbs that they modify. They may precede or follow verbs. When they follow, they usually come immediately after the verb. Great freedom is allowed in the position of adverbs of time or place.

<b>Ella es sumamente hermosa</b>	She is exceedingly beautiful
<b>muy bien</b>	very well
<b>Habla perfectamente el castellano</b>	He speaks Spanish perfectly
<b>Iré al teatro mañana</b>	I shall go to the theater to-morrow
<b>Aquí está el libro</b>	Here is the book
<b>Vi a su hermano arriba</b>	I saw your brother up-stairs

### VERBOS (Verbs)

#### 232. poder, 'to be able,' 'can.'

poder, pudiendo, podido

##### INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<b>puedo, puedes, puede, podemos, podéis, pueden</b>
<i>Imperfecto</i>	<b>pod-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían</b>
<i>Pretérito</i>	<b>pude, pudiste, pudo, pudimos, pudisteis, pudieron</b>
<i>Futuro</i>	<b>podr-é, -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án</b>
<i>Condicional</i>	<b>podr-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían</b>

##### SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<b>pueda, puedas, pueda, podamos, podáis, puedan</b>
<i>Imperfecto, 1ª forma:</i>	<b>pud-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran</b>
<i>Imperfecto, 2ª forma:</i>	<b>pud-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen</b>
<i>Futuro</i>	<b>pud-iere, -ieres, -iere, -iéremos, -iereis, -ieren</b>

##### IMPERATIVO<sup>1</sup>

**puede**

**poded**

#### 233. poner, 'to place,' 'put.'

poner, poniendo, puesto

##### INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<b>pongo, pones, pone, ponemos, ponéis, ponen</b>
<i>Imperfecto</i>	<b>pon-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían</b>
<i>Pretérito</i>	<b>puse, pusiste, puso, pusimos, pusisteis, pusieron</b>
<i>Futuro</i>	<b>pondr-é, -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án</b>
<i>Condicional</i>	<b>pondr-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían</b>

<sup>1</sup> The imperative is rarely used, owing to its meaning.

## SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	ponga, pongas, ponga, pongamos, pongáis, pongan
<i>Imperfecto, 1ª forma:</i>	pus-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran
<i>Imperfecto, 2ª forma:</i>	pus-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen
<i>Futuro</i>	pus-iere, -ieres, -iere, -iéremos, -iereis, -ieren

## IMPERATIVO

pon

poned

## VOCABULARIO XXIII

(Vocabulary XXIII)

- la acción, the action.  
 admirar, to admire.  
 alerta, -a, alert; estar -a, to be on the watch.  
 la antigüedad, the antiquity.  
 atar, to tie.  
 casi, *adv.*, nearly, almost.  
 la cesta, the basket, cesta (*sort of racket fastened to the hand for playing pelota*).  
 coger, to catch, hold, gather.  
 contra, *prep.*, against.  
 dudoso, -a, doubtful.  
 elevar, to elevate, erect.  
 la estatua, the statue.  
 extraordinario, -a, extraordinary.  
 faltar, to fail, lack.  
 el frontón, the wall, frontón (*of a pelota court*), pelota court.  
 fuerte, *adj.*, strong, hard, severe; *adv.*, strongly, loudly.  
 el honor, the honor.  
 el juego, the game, play.  
 el jugador, the player.  
 lanzar, to hurl, throw.  
 la maña, the skill, cleverness.  
 ocupar, to occupy.  
 opuesto, -a, opposite, opposed.  
 el partido, the side (*persons who play a game*).  
 la pelota, the pelota, handball, ball.  
 popular, *adj.*, popular.  
 la profesión, the profession; de —, professional.  
 sumamente, *adv.*, exceedingly.  
 el vascongado, the Basque (*native of the Basque provinces*).

## EJERCICIO XXIII

(Exercise XXIII)

El juego de pelota, muy popular en España, es sumamente antiguo. Era tan popular en la antigüedad que hasta se elevaron estatuas a los jugadores. Casi todos los españoles juegan<sup>1</sup> más o menos a la pelota, pero naturalmente los mejores jugadores son los de profesión. Éstos son generalmente vascongados, y tienen que ser hombres muy fuertes, con brazos y muñecas de hierro. El jugador lleva atada a la mano la cesta en la cual va la pelota que lanza contra el frontón con una fuerza extraordinaria.

Las reglas del juego no son muy difíciles, pero para jugar bien hay que estar alerta y emplear toda la maña y fuerza

<sup>1</sup> *Pres. ind. of jugar.*

posibles. Cada partido consta de dos jugadores. Uno <sup>12</sup> principia el juego lanzando la pelota contra el frontón. Uno de los jugadores del partido opuesto coge la pelota en su <sup>14</sup> cesta, lanzándola otra vez contra el frontón, acción que se repite<sup>1</sup> hasta que falte<sup>2</sup> uno. 16

### EJERCICIO ORAL XXIII (Oral Exercise XXIII)

1. The game of pelota is exceedingly old. 2. Each player has a cesta strongly tied to his hand. 3. The professional players can play exceedingly well. 4. The ball is skilfully thrown against the wall. 5. He placed himself near the player. 6. This game is popularly called 'handball.' 7. I was able to explain it to him in a simple manner. 8. If they can only exert themselves more, they will not fail. 9. I put the statue where he wishes (it). 10. He will be able [to] explain the game more easily. 11. The players talk loudly. 12. Almost every man was accompanied by a prettily dressed young lady. 13. Put the cards in the little basket. 14. These games are exceedingly difficult. 15. We passed the day very pleasantly. 16. He had put his pipe on one of the very beautiful tables in the library.

### TEMA XXIII (Composition XXIII)

Naturally for the Spanish bull-fights are more interesting than pelota, but if one should visit (*imp. subj.*) the famous <sup>2</sup> frontón of Madrid at the time of an important pelota game, one would see there, at (the) least, four or five thousand per- <sup>4</sup> sons, all, without doubt, admirers of this game, which has always been so (*tan*) popular among the Basques. The <sup>6</sup> players themselves are almost always Basques, for they are the best pelota players of Spain. These professional play- <sup>8</sup> ers often learn the game when they are very young. By play- <sup>10</sup> ing a great deal, they possess not only the necessary strength <sup>12</sup> but (*sino*) also the skill which is needed perhaps more than great strength. The cleverness with which they catch and

<sup>1</sup> *Pres. ind. of repetir*, 'to repeat.'

<sup>2</sup> Cf. § 397, 1.

throw the ball is marvelous, and after once attending (*inf.*) a game of pelota, one can easily see why it is so interesting. 14

### CONVERSACIÓN XXIII (Conversation XXIII)

1. Dígame V. el presente de indicativo del verbo **poder**; del verbo **poner**.
2. ¿Cuál es el participio pasivo del verbo **poner**?
3. ¿Cómo se forman los adverbios que terminan en **-mente**?
4. ¿Cuándo se dice **recién** en vez de **recientemente**?
5. ¿Qué puede V. decirme acerca de la construcción de los adverbios?
6. ¿Es antiguo el juego de pelota?
7. ¿Era muy popular en la antigüedad?
8. ¿Quiénes son los mejores jugadores de España?
9. ¿Por qué tienen que ser muy fuertes los jugadores de pelota?
10. ¿Son sencillas las reglas del juego?
11. ¿Cuántas personas hay en cada partido?
12. ¿Con qué cosa se coge la pelota?
13. ¿Le gustaría a V. jugar a la pelota?

### LECCIÓN XXIV (Lesson XXIV)

#### COMPARATIVOS (Comparatives)

#### Comparativos de Desigualdad (Superioridad e Inferioridad) (Comparatives of Inequality [Superiority and Inferiority])

234. The comparative of superiority of adjectives and adverbs is formed by placing **más**, 'more,' and the comparative of inferiority, by placing **menos**, 'less,' before the positive.

**más pobre**, poorer

**menos generalmente**, less generally

235. The following four adjectives have, in addition to the regular, an irregular comparative, derived from the Latin:

**bueno**, good

**mejor**, better

**malo**, bad, poor

**peor**, worse

**grande**, large

**mayor**, larger, older, elder

**pequeño**, small, little

**menor**, smaller, younger

236. **Mejor** and **peor** are more commonly used than the regular forms, but **mayor** and **menor** are not often used, except in the sense of age or rank when referring to persons.



Este libro es mejor que el otro  
mi hermano mayor, my elder brother

This book is better than the other  
su hermana menor, his younger sister

237. The following four adverbs have likewise an irregular comparative:

**mucho**, much  
**poco**, little  
**bien**, well  
**mal**, ill, badly

**más**, more  
**menos**, less  
**mejor**, better  
**peor**, worse

NOTE. — **Más bien** means 'rather.'

Es perezoso más bien que estúpido      He is lazy rather than stupid

238. The word 'than' in the second member of a comparison of inequality is translated:

1. By **que**, when both members of the comparison possess the same quality, though in varying degree.

Él es más alto que yo      He is taller than I

2. By **de**, before numerals or numerical expressions in affirmative sentences; and by **de** or **que**, preferably the latter, in negative sentences.

Él tiene más de cien libros  
Él no tiene más que dos

He has more than one hundred books  
He has no more than two

3. By **de lo que**, when the second member of the comparison contains a verb which could be followed in English by a repetition of the verb used in the first member.

Ella es mejor de lo que dicen      She is better than they say (she is)

NOTE. — But if the point of comparison is a noun appearing as object of the verb of the first member and omitted in the second, the neuter **lo** is replaced by the proper form of the article (**el**, **la**, **los**, **las**).

Él tiene más libros de los que hay en      He has more books than there are  
la biblioteca      (books) in the library

### Comparativos de Igualdad (Comparatives of Equality)

239. In comparatives of equality, 'as . . . as' is rendered by **tan . . . como**.

Pedro es tan alto como Juan      Peter is as tall as John

240. 'As much . . . as,' 'as many . . . as,' are with intervening nouns rendered by **tanto . . . cuanto**, which agree with the nouns in gender and number. **Como** commonly replaces **cuan-**

and is invariable. Both of these comparatives may be summed up in the word **cuanto** used alone.

**Él posee tanto dinero como** (or **cuanto**) **necesita**      He has as much money as he needs

**Él tiene tantas peras como** (or **cuantas**) **tengo yo**      He has as many pears as I

**Él tiene cuanto necesita**      He has as much as he needs

**241.** The comparative expressions 'the more . . . the more,' 'the less . . . the less,' are rendered by **cuanto más** (**menos**) . . . **tanto más** (**menos**) or **mientras más** (**menos**) . . . **más** (**menos**).

**Cuanto más se estudia tanto más se aprende**      The more one studies the more one learns

**Mientras más trabajo menos quedo satisfecho**      The more I work the less satisfied I am

NOTE. — **Tanto** may sometimes be omitted.

## VERBOS

(Verbs)

### 242. **saber**, 'to know,'<sup>1</sup> 'know how.'

**saber, sabiendo, sabido**

#### INDICATIVO

*Presente*      **sé, sabes, sabe, sabemos, sabéis, saben**

*Imperfecto*      **sab-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían**

*Pretérito*      **supe, supiste, supo, supimos, supisteis, supieron**

*Futuro*      **sabr-é, -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án**

*Condicional*      **sabr-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían**

#### SUBJUNTIVO

*Presente*      **sepa, sepas, sepa, sepamos, sepáis, sepan**

*Imperfecto*, 1<sup>a</sup> forma: **sup-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran**

*Imperfecto*, 2<sup>a</sup> forma: **sup-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen**

*Futuro*      **sup-iere, -ieres, -iere, -iéremos, -iereis, -ieren**

#### IMPERATIVO

**sabe**

**sabed**

## VOCABULARIO XXIV

(Vocabulary XXIV)

**el alojamiento**, the lodging.

**el coche**, the coach, car.

**la comodidad**, the comfort, ease, convenience.

**cómodo**, -a, comfortable, convenient.

**el compartimiento**, the compartment.

**completo**, -a, complete; **por** —, completely.

**despacio**, *adv.*, slowly.

**el destino**, the destination.

<sup>1</sup> **Saber** means 'to know,' 'have knowledge,' while 'to know' in the sense of 'to be acquainted with' is expressed by **conocer** (cf. § 337).

<b>la dificultad</b> , the difficulty.	<b>de modo que</b> , <i>conj.</i> , so that,
<b>dividido</b> , -a, divided.	so as.
<b>estúpido</b> , -a, stupid.	<b>o . . . o</b> , <i>conj.</i> , either . . . or
<b>la fila</b> , the row.	<b>perezoso</b> , -a, lazy.
<b>el hotel</b> , the hotel.	<b>pobre</b> , <i>adj.</i> , poor.
<b>incómodo</b> , -a, uncomfortable,	<b>a través de</b> , <i>prep.</i> , across,
inconvenient.	through.
<b>inoportuno</b> , -a, inopportune,	<b>va</b> ( <i>pl.</i> , -n), go(es) ( <i>pres. ind.</i>
inconvenient.	of ir); — <b>de espaldas</b> , ride(s)
<b>lento</b> , -a, slow.	backwards.
<b>el malestar</b> , the discomfort.	<b>el viaje</b> , the trip, journey, voyage.
<b>merecer</b> , to deserve, be worthy	<b>el viajero</b> , the traveler.
of.	<b>visto</b> , -a ( <i>pp.</i> of <b>ver</b> ), seen.
<b>al fin (y al cabo)</b> , at last.	

#### EJERCICIO XXIV (Exercise XXIV)

El viajar en España no es tan fácil como en los Estados Unidos. En primer lugar los trenes son más lentos y mucho 2  
menos cómodos. Salen a horas inoportunas, o muy tarde por<sup>1</sup> la noche o muy temprano por la mañana, y llegan a su destino 4  
a otras horas no menos incómodas.

Los coches están divididos en compartimientos que tienen, 6  
cada uno, unos diez o doce asientos, puestos en dos filas a través del coche, de modo que la mitad de los viajeros van de 8  
espaldas. Hay tres clases de compartimientos. La primera es la mejor para viajar con comodidad y evitar el malestar 10  
lo más posible.

Cuanto más desea uno terminar su viaje, tanto más 12  
despacio anda el tren, y cuando al fin y al cabo llega el viajero a una ciudad, muy a menudo halla alojamiento en un hotel 14  
muy malo, porque los hoteles, con algunas excepciones, no son tan cómodos como los nuestros. 16

Pero, a pesar de tantas dificultades que tiene el viajar por España, es éste un país muy interesante, que merece ser visto. 18

#### EJERCICIO ORAL XXIV (Oral Exercise XXIV)

1. Slow, slower; uncomfortable, more uncomfortable. 2. Early, very early; generally, more generally. 3. My elder brother; my younger sister. 4. The trains are as slow as they

<sup>1</sup> 'at night.'

are uncomfortable. 5. The trip lasted more than twenty hours. 6. I know that there are not more than thirteen travelers in the waiting room. 7. He has more than he deserves. 8. He has as much as he desires. 9. He knew that they always talk faster in Spain than in the United States. 10. They have brought as much as they possess. 11. These poor pupils are lazy rather than stupid. 12. These books are worse than the others. 13. The more one has the more one wants. 14. He speaks Spanish better than I. 15. The child knows how to read as well as his elder brother. 16. He will soon know that there are more difficulties than his friends say. 17. This lesson is more complete than the others.

TEMA XXIV  
(Composition XXIV)

In the United States the trains are more comfortable than in Spain, where they are usually very bad. They leave at very inconvenient hours, either late at night or extremely early in the morning. They go very slowly, and the traveler often arrives late at his destination.

The cars are divided into compartments, with two rows of seats arranged so that half of the travelers go backwards. There are three classes of compartments, but the first class is much more comfortable than the second or third. The more one desires [to] arrive at his destination, the more necessary it is [to] travel in first-class coaches, for often the trains with first-class coaches arrive first. Generally there are no second or third-class coaches on the best trains.

In spite of the uncomfortable trains and hotels, Spain is a very interesting country in which [to] travel and deserves [to] be seen.

CONVERSACIÓN XXIV  
(Conversation XXIV)

1. Conjugue V. el verbo **saber** en todos los tiempos del indicativo. 2. ¿Cómo se forma el comparativo de superioridad? 3. ¿Cuál es el comparativo de **bueno**? ¿de **malo**? ¿de **grande**? 4. ¿Cómo se forma el comparativo de igualdad? 5. ¿Cómo se dice en español *the more . . . the more, the less . . . the less*?

6. ¿Qué tal es el viajar en España? 7. ¿Es cómodo el viajar en los Estados Unidos? 8. ¿Son buenos los hoteles españoles? 9. ¿Es España un país que merece ser visto? 10. ¿En cuántas clases están divididos los coches españoles? 11. ¿Cómo van la mitad de los viajeros en los compartimientos? 12. ¿Le gusta a V. viajar?

## LECCIÓN XXV

(Lesson XXV)

### SUPERLATIVO RELATIVO

(Relative Superlative)

**243.** The relative superlative is that form of the adjective or adverb which denotes the highest degree of the quality expressed, in relation to, or in comparison with, any lesser degree of the same.

With adjectives it is made by placing a definite article (or possessive adjective) before the comparative. When the superlative follows the noun, the article is not repeated. The article has the gender and number of the noun modified.

fácil, easy	más fácil, easier	el más fácil, easiest
bueno, good	mejor, better	el mejor, best
la lección fácil, the easy lesson	la lección más fácil, the easiest lesson	

NOTE. — There is no distinction in form between the comparative with the definite article and the superlative.

1. The article is omitted before a predicate adjective in the superlative that represents the highest degree of a quality attributed to the subject without reference to other persons or things.

Es ahora que me parece más difícil	It is now that it seems to me most difficult
------------------------------------	--

2. When the superlative follows a noun that is in apposition with another noun, the article may be used before the superlative.

«Don Quijote,» obra la más famosa de Cervantes	‘Don Quixote,’ the most famous work of Cervantes
--	--

**244.** After a superlative adjective, the English preposition ‘in’ is usually rendered by *de*.

el más grande del mundo, the largest in the world

245. 'Most,' as used before a noun in English, is translated in Spanish by **la mayor parte de**. If the noun is plural, the verb is likewise plural.

**la mayor parte de la crítica**

most (of the) criticism

**La mayor parte de los hombres piensan así**

Most men think thus

246. With adverbs the article is not used to form the superlative, though an article applying to a following substantive sometimes precedes. If necessary to distinguish a superlative from a comparative adverb recourse may be had to a circumlocution.

**Él estudia más diligentemente**

He studies more (*or* most) diligently

**la mejor vestida**

the best (*or* better) dressed (woman)

**Él lo hace mejor que yo, pero su hermano lo hace mejor todavía**

He does it better than I, but his brother does it the best

## VERBOS

(Verbs)

### 247. **decir**, 'to say,' 'tell.'

**decir, diciendo, dicho**

#### INDICATIVO

*Presente* **digo, dices, dice, decimos, decís, dicen**

*Imperfecto* **dec-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían**

*Preterito* **dije, dijiste, dijo, dijimos, dijisteis, dijeron<sup>1</sup>**

*Futuro* **dir-é, -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án**

*Condicional* **dir-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían**

#### SUBJUNTIVO

*Presente* **diga, digas, diga, digamos, digáis, digan**

*Imperfecto*, 1<sup>a</sup> forma: **dij-era,<sup>1</sup> -eras, -era, -éramos, -erais, -eran**

*Imperfecto*, 2<sup>a</sup> forma: **dij-ese,<sup>1</sup> -eses, -ese, -ésemos, -eseis, -esen**

*Futuro* **dij-ere,<sup>1</sup> -eres, -ere, -éremos, -ereis, -eren**

#### IMPERATIVO

**di**

**decid**

### 248. **traducir**, 'to translate.'

**traducir, traduciendo, traducido**

#### INDICATIVO

*Presente* **traduzco, traduces, traduce, traducimos, traducís, traducen**

*Imperfecto* **traduc-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían**

*Preterito* **traduje, tradujiste, tradujo, tradujimos, tradujisteis, tradujeron<sup>1</sup>**

<sup>1</sup> Note the loss of *i* from *ie* of the regular ending (cf. also *traer*, p. 152, footnote 1).

<i>Futuro</i>	traducir-é, -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án
<i>Condicional</i>	traducir-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían

## SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	traduzca, traduzcas, traduzca, traduzcamos, traduzcáis, traduzcan
<i>Imperfecto, 1ª forma:</i>	traduj-era, <sup>1</sup> -eras, -era, -éramos, -erais, -eran
<i>Imperfecto, 2ª forma:</i>	traduj-ese, <sup>1</sup> -eses, -ese, -ésemos, -eseis, -esen
<i>Futuro</i>	traduj-ere, <sup>1</sup> -eres, -ere, -éremos, -ereis, -eren

## IMPERATIVO

traduce

traducid

VOCABULARIO XXV  
(Vocabulary XXV)

<b>americano</b> , -a, American.	<b>la iglesia</b> , the church.
<b>la ciencia</b> , the science.	<b>la instrucción</b> , the instruction, education.
<b>comparar</b> , to compare.	<b>íntimo</b> , -a, intimate.
<b>común</b> , <i>adj.</i> , common.	<b>la libertad</b> , the liberty.
<b>el conocimiento</b> , the knowledge, acquaintance.	<b>limitar</b> , to limit, restrict.
<b>consistir (en)</b> , to consist of (in).	<b>la literatura</b> , the literature.
<b>cualquier(a)</b> ( <i>pl.</i> , <i>cualesquiera</i> ), <i>adj. and pron.</i> , any (whatever), any (you please).	<b>el marido</b> , the husband.
<b>el cuidado</b> , the care.	<b>el miembro</b> , the member.
<b>diferente</b> , <i>adj.</i> , different.	<b>la nación</b> , the nation.
<b>la diversión</b> , the diversion, amusement.	<b>el parque</b> , the park.
<b>el esposo</b> , the husband; <i>f.</i> , <b>la esposa</b> , the wife.	<b>(la) política</b> , (the) politics.
<b>la fiesta</b> , the festival, fête, holiday.	<b>religioso</b> , -a, religious, devout.
<b>fuera</b> , <i>adv.</i> , outside, without; <i>prep.</i> , out of, outside.	<b>sin embargo</b> , <i>adv.</i> , however, nevertheless.
	<b>sino</b> , <i>conj.</i> , but, but rather.
	<b>la tertulia</b> , the party, soirée.
	<b>la vida</b> , the life.

EJERCICIO XXV  
(Exercise XXV)

La vida de la familia española es muy diferente de la vida de la familia americana. En España las mujeres no tienen la misma libertad que las de los Estados Unidos. Generalmente no salen solas sino acompañadas de sus maridos o de algún otro miembro de la familia.

Sus diversiones más comunes consisten en pasear con sus familias por las calles o por los parques de la ciudad, en asistir al teatro y a las corridas de toros, y en tertulias en las casas de sus amigas más íntimas.

Las mujeres en España no reciben una instrucción tan

<sup>1</sup> See p. 120, footnote 1.

completa como las mujeres americanas. Su conocimiento de la literatura y de las ciencias es generalmente de lo más 12 limitado, pero hay algunas que pueden compararse con las más instruidas de cualquier nación. 14

Las mujeres españolas son muy religiosas. Asisten a las varias misas de la iglesia, y observan con cuidado las más 16 importantes de las fiestas religiosas. Sin embargo, la mayor parte del tiempo se quedan en casa cuidando de sus niños. 18 Son muy buenas esposas y madres.

Los hombres tienen mucha más libertad que las mujeres. 20 Están fuera de casa la mayor parte del tiempo, y pasan muchas horas en el café hablando de política con sus amigos. 22 Ésta es su diversión más común.

### EJERCICIO ORAL XXV

(Oral Exercise XXV)

1. Easiest; most difficult; most Americans. 2. Little, less, least; early, very early, the earliest. 3. My youngest brother. 4. The most intimate friend of the family. 5. They say that this is their greatest diversion. 6. He then translated the most difficult part of the lesson. 7. Spanish women have the most limited knowledge. 8. It was then that it seemed to me most difficult. 9. La Señora Pardo Bazán, the most famous woman of Spain. 10. He speaks Spanish better than I, but his brother speaks best. 11. I translate Spanish and speak it now without difficulty. 12. They said that the church fêtes were the most important. 13. I shall say the same as most men say. 14. The simple life is always the best. 15. It is not for you, but for me. 16. This church is the largest, but not the most beautiful in the world.

### TEMA XXV

(Composition XXV)

The women of Spain do not have as much liberty as American women. They are obliged to remain at home most of 2 the time looking after their children. When they go out in the streets, they are generally accompanied by some member 4 of their family.

Spanish women are all very religious. They spend a great 6



deal of time in the churches. They always attend mass, and never fail to (**en**) observe the most important religious festivals. Their commonest diversions are attending (*inf.*) the theaters or the most important bull-fights, or passing (*inf.*) the evening with their intimate friends. Generally (the) Spanish women are not so [well] educated as American women. However, there are exceptions, as, for example, la Señora Doña<sup>1</sup> Emilia Pardo Bazán,<sup>2</sup> the most famous woman of Spain to-day.

The men attend church very little. They spend most of their time out of the house. They go to the cafés, and often pass hours talking of politics with their friends.

### CONVERSACIÓN XXV

(Conversation XXV)

1. Conjugue V. el futuro del verbo **decir**; del verbo **traducir**.
2. Conjugue V. el pretérito del verbo **decir**; del verbo **traducir**.
3. ¿Cómo se forma el superlativo relativo en español? 4. ¿Cómo se traduce *most* cuando se emplea delante de un sustantivo?

5. ¿Tienen las mujeres españolas la misma libertad que las americanas? 6. ¿En qué consisten las diversiones de las mujeres españolas? 7. ¿Asisten con frecuencia a las misas? 8. ¿Quiénes son más religiosos, las mujeres o los hombres españoles? 9. ¿Están en casa la mayor parte del tiempo los hombres? 10. ¿Cuál es la principal diversión de los hombres? 11. ¿Le gusta a V. hablar de política? 12. ¿Le gusta a V. más hablar de literatura?

### LECCIÓN XXVI

(Lesson XXVI)

#### SUPERLATIVO ABSOLUTO

(Absolute Superlative)

**249.** The absolute superlative is that form of the adjective or adverb which denotes a high degree of the quality expressed, without relation to, or comparison with, any lesser degree of the same.

With adjectives it is formed by placing before them an ad-

<sup>1</sup> Cf. § 297.

<sup>2</sup> **Emilia Pardo Bazán** (born at La Coruña in Galicia in 1851) is perhaps the world's most distinguished contemporary authoress. Cf. p. 211, footnote 1.

verbal expression such as **muy**, 'very,' **sumamente**, 'extremely,' etc., or by adding to them the suffix **-ísimo**, **-a**, which is joined directly to a consonant, or takes the place of a final vowel or diphthong. A written accent occurring in the positive form of the adjective is dropped.

**bueno**, good  
**fácil**, easy  
**limpio**, clean  
**frío**, cold

**muy bueno**, very good  
**facilísimo**, very easy  
**limpísimo**, very clean  
**fríísimo**, very cold

NOTE.— In colloquial style **re**, and sometimes **rete**, may be prefixed to adjectives or adverbs to give them intensity. **Muy** usually precedes this compound.

**muy retebonito**, very very pretty    **muy rebién**, very well indeed

250. Before **-ísimo** the regular orthographic changes take place; **c**, **g**, and **z** become respectively **qu**, **gu**, and **c**, and accented **ue** and **ie** return to their respective original Latin vowels **o** and **e** when they lose the tonic accent.

**rico**, rich  
**largo**, long  
**feliz**, happy  
**bueno**, good  
**cierto**, certain

**riquísimo**, very rich  
**larguísimo**, very long  
**felicísimo**, very happy  
**bonísimo**, very good  
**certísimo**, very certain

251. The ending **-ble** reverts to the Latin **-bil**, and some adjectives revert to the original Latin for the entire form.

**amable**, kind  
**fiel**, faithful  
**sabio**, wise

**amabilísimo**, very kind  
**fidelísimo**, very faithful  
**sapientísimo**, very wise

252. A few adjectives in **-ro**, **-re**, derived from Latin adjectives in **-er**, follow the Latin original, and form the absolute superlative in **-érrimo**. A written accent occurring in the positive form of the adjective is dropped.

**mísero**, wretched  
**célebre**, famous

**misérrimo**, very wretched  
**celebérrimo**, very famous

253. With adverbs the absolute superlative is formed in the same way as with adjectives, or by placing the neuter article **lo** before a relative superlative adverb followed by any word or phrase expressing possibility.

**bien**, well  
**pronto**, soon

**muy bien**, very well  
**prontísimo**, very soon

**lo más diligentemente posible**, the most diligently (possible), as diligently as possible.

254. When an absolute superlative adverb is formed by the addition of **-mente** to the absolute superlative of an adjective, the adjective must be in the feminine. The written accent of **-ísima** is retained.

fácil, easy

facilísimo, very easy

fácilmente, easily

facilísimamente, most easily

## VERBOS

(Verbs)

255. *ir*,<sup>1</sup> 'to go.'*ir*, *yendo*, *ido*

## INDICATIVO

*Presente* voy, vas, va, vamos, vais, van*Imperfecto* iba, ibas, iba, íbamos, ibais, iban*Preterito* fui,<sup>2</sup> fuiste, fué, fuimos, fuisteis, fueron*Futuro* ir-é, -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án*Condicional* ir-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían

## SUBJUNTIVO

*Presente* vaya,ayas, vaya, vayamos, vayáis, vayan*Imperfecto*, 1ª forma: fuera, fueras, fuera, fuéramos, fuerais, fueran*Imperfecto*, 2ª forma: fuese, fueses, fuese, fuésemos, fueseis, fuesen*Futuro* fuere, fueres, fuere, fuéremos, fuereis, fuerenIMPERATIVO<sup>3</sup>

vé

id

256. *venir*, 'to come.'*venir*, *viniendo*, *venido*

## INDICATIVO

*Presente* vengo, vienes, viene, venimos, venís, vienen*Imperfecto* ven-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían*Preterito* vine, viniste, vino, vinimos, vinisteis, vinieron*Futuro* vendr-é, -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án*Condicional* vendr-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían

## SUBJUNTIVO

*Presente* venga, vengas, venga, vengamos, vengáis, vengan*Imperfecto*, 1ª forma: vin-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran*Imperfecto*, 2ª forma: vin-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen*Futuro* vin-iere, -ieres, -iere, -iéremos, -iereis, -ieren

## IMPERATIVO

ven

venid

<sup>1</sup> Cf. p. 95, footnote 1.<sup>2</sup> Notice that the preterit of *ir* is exactly the same as that of *ser* (cf. § 189).<sup>3</sup> There is a form **vamos** used as a first person imperative in optative constructions, **vamos**, 'let us go.' This form is also used as an exclamation,—**¡Vamos!** 'Well! I declare!'

## VOCABULARIO XXVI

(Vocabulary XXVI)

<b>admitir</b> , to admit.	<b>insolente</b> , <i>adj.</i> , insolent.
<b>atlético</b> , -a, athletic.	<b>el jardín</b> , the garden.
<b>atrevido</b> , -a, bold, daring.	<b>el laboratorio</b> , the laboratory.
<b>el cardenal</b> , the cardinal.	<b>original</b> , <i>adj.</i> , original.
<b>célebre</b> , <i>adj.</i> , celebrated, famous.	<b>la práctica</b> , the practice.
<b>la conferencia</b> , the lecture.	<b>el principio</b> , the principle, beginning; <b>a —s (de)</b> , about the beginning (of).
<b>el curso</b> , the course.	<b>propio</b> , -a, proper, suitable, own, self.
<b>dedicar</b> , to devote, dedicate.	<b>la sombra</b> , the shadow.
<b>lo(s) (las) demás</b> , the rest, remainder, others.	<b>sufrir</b> , to suffer, undergo, endure.
<b>el examen</b> , the examination.	<b>trasladar</b> , to move; remove.
<b>la facultad</b> , the faculty.	<b>la universidad</b> , the university.
<b>fundar</b> , to found.	
<b>el ingreso</b> , the entrance.	
<b>dar un paseo</b> , to take a walk.	
<b>echar flores</b> , to pay compliments, make remarks.	

## EJERCICIO XXVI

(Exercise XXVI)

Hay diez universidades en España, todas bajo la dirección del estado. La universidad de Salamanca, fundada a principios del siglo trece, es la más antigua de todas, y la de Madrid es la más grande. La universidad de Salamanca no es más que una sombra de lo que era antes, mientras que la universidad de Madrid tiene ahora cerca de 10,000 estudiantes. Esta celeberrima universidad, fundada originalmente por el cardenal Jiménez de Cisneros<sup>1</sup> en Alcalá de Henares<sup>2</sup> en el siglo diez y seis, se trasladó a Madrid en el año 1836. La universidad está dividida en cinco facultades. Para ser admitido en cualquiera de éstas, el estudiante sufre un examen de ingreso. Los cursos se presentan generalmente en forma de conferencias y de práctica en los laboratorios.

Los estudiantes de Madrid no se dedican a diversiones atléticas, pero se divierten<sup>3</sup> muchísimo de su propia manera. Tienen su casino, asisten con frecuencia a los teatros o a las corridas de toros, y casi todas las tardes dan un paseo con

<sup>1</sup> Spanish cardinal and statesman (1437–1517).

<sup>2</sup> Cf. *gen. vocab.*, Alcalá de Henares.

<sup>3</sup> *Pres. ind.* of divertir.

sus amigos por el Prado<sup>1</sup> o por los jardines del Buen Retiro.<sup>2</sup> 18  
 Como los demás jóvenes españoles, echan flores a cualquiera  
 muchacha que pase.<sup>3</sup> Esta costumbre nos parece algunas 20  
 veces atrevida e insolentísima, pero se observa muchísimo en  
 España. 22

EJERCICIO ORAL XXVI  
 (Oral Exercise XXVI)

1. Very good; very easy; very famous. 2. Most easily; most  
 happily. 3. As slowly as possible. 4. This picture is very very  
 pretty. 5. I am going to (a) visit a very celebrated university.  
 6. Let us go and (*lit.* 'to,' a) see the gardens of the Buen Retiro.  
 7. We shall come as soon as possible. 8. The students used to  
 go to the Prado. 9. It is necessary [to] pass an entrance ex-  
 amination in order to be a student. 10. Are the examinations  
 difficult? 11. They are sometimes very very difficult. 12. I  
 came here to (*para*) study, and not to (*para*) find diversions.  
 13. These examinations are very long. 14. Let us go to the  
 lecture. 15. Are you not coming with us to the Prado? 17. Not  
 to-day, thank you.

TEMA XXVI  
 (Composition XXVI)

The oldest university in (*de*) Spain is the University of  
 Salamanca. It was founded in the thirteenth century, and 2  
 at that time (*en aquel entonces*) was one of the four most  
 famous universities of Europe. But now the University of 4  
 Madrid, situated as it is in the principal city of Spain, has  
 become the largest and the most important. It has a very 6  
 great number of excellent men in its faculty. It has nearly  
 10,000 students. 8

The work of the students is almost the same as that (10)  
 of the students in the United States. After their work of 10  
 the day, the students often take a stroll in the parks and in the  
 principal parts of the city. In the evening, they go to the 12  
 theater, and in general amuse themselves as do the students  
 of the United States. They do not have very many athletic 14

<sup>1</sup> A promenade in Madrid (*lit.* 'meadow').

<sup>2</sup> A park in Madrid (*lit.* 'Good retreat').

<sup>3</sup> Cf. § 396.

diversions, but they are very great admirers of the bull-fights, and can almost always be seen in great numbers on these 16 occasions.

CONVERSACIÓN XXVI  
(Conversation XXVI)

1. ¿Cómo se forma el superlativo absoluto en español?
2. Delante de la terminación **-ísimo** ¿en qué se cambia **c, g y z**?
3. ¿Cuál es el superlativo absoluto de **miserio**? ¿de **sabio**? ¿de **bueno**?
4. Conjugue V. el pretérito del verbo **ir**; del verbo **venir**.
5. ¿Cuáles de los tiempos del verbo **venir** son regulares?
6. ¿Cuántas universidades hay en España?
7. ¿Cuál es la más antigua?
8. ¿Qué universidad es la más grande hoy día?
9. ¿Qué puede V. decirme de esta celebrísima universidad?
10. ¿Cómo se presentan los cursos en las universidades de España?
11. ¿Se dedican a diversiones atléticas los estudiantes españoles?
12. ¿Cuáles son sus principales diversiones?
13. ¿Dónde se puede pasear en Madrid?
14. ¿Qué es el Buen Retiro?

LECCIÓN XXVII  
(Lesson XXVII)

PRONOMBRES Y ADJETIVOS RELATIVOS  
(Relative Pronouns and Adjectives)

257. The forms of the relatives are:

<i>Singular</i>	<i>Plural</i>	
que	que	who, whom, which, that
quien	quienes	who, whom
el cual	los cuales	} who, whom, which
la cual	las cuales	
el que	los que	
la que	las que	
lo cual		} which
lo que		
cuyo	cuyos	} whose, of which
cuya	cuyas	
cuanto	cuantos	} all that, as much as, as many as
cuanta	cuantas	

258. The relative pronoun is never omitted in Spanish as it sometimes is in English. It agrees with its antecedent in gender and number.

el lugar que me gusta, the place (that) I like  
la ciudad a la cual voy, the city to which I am going

**259.** **Que** is invariable, and when used as the subject or the object of a verb, may refer to persons or things. When used as the object of a preposition, it refers only to things.

**Es un hombre que vale mucho**

He is a man (who is) worth a great deal

**Nueva York es una ciudad que conozco**

New York is a city that I am acquainted with

**el libro de que hablan**

the book of which they are speaking

**260.** **Quien** (quienes) refers only to persons or personified things, and is used principally after prepositions. When used as the subject or the object of a verb, **quien** either includes its antecedent or introduces a clause which supplements an antecedent clause otherwise complete in itself. In the latter case **que** may be used.

**el muchacho con quien habló V.**

the boy with whom you spoke

**Soy yo quien lo hice**

I am the one who did it

**Quien más me gustó en la comedia fué la reina**

The one I liked best in the play was the queen

**Me quedo en casa para escribir a mi hermano Juan, quien (or que) está enfermo ahora**

I am staying home to write to my brother John, who is at present ill

**261.** **Cual** and **que**, preceded by **el**, **la**, **los**, **las**, refer to both persons and things as subjects or objects of a verb, or objects of a preposition. They are more definite than **quien** or **que** alone, and are used particularly in cases of ambiguity, when the relative might refer to any one of two or more nouns. If the nouns are of the same gender and number, **el cual**, etc., **el que**, etc., refer to the more remote antecedent. The forms **el cual**, etc., are more commonly applied to persons than **el que**, etc.

**Yo la encontré en el mismo jardín en el que habíamos pasado tantas horas juntos**

I met her in the same garden in which we had passed so many hours together

**Vi a la señora del médico, la cual estaba enferma**

I saw the wife of the doctor, who was ill

**El cuarto de San Ignacio, el cual (el que) está en el tercer piso, es muy grande**

The room of St. Ignatius, which is on the third floor, is very large

**262.** **El cual** (**la cual**, etc.) may also be used adjectively.

**Trató de saltar el río, en el cual esfuerzo salió mal**

He tried to jump the river, in which effort he failed

**263.** Lo cual and lo que refer only to a whole sentence, phrase or idea.

Hallé en la carta cien duros,  
 { lo cual }  
 { lo que } me gustó mucho

I found one hundred dollars in the  
 letter, which pleased me very  
 much

**264.** Cuyo (-a, -os, -as) is a possessive relative used only adjectively and referring to either persons or things. It agrees in gender and number with the thing possessed.

el hombre cuyas hijas están aquí, the man whose daughters are here

**265.** De quien (de quienes) is often used where one might expect cuyo, etc., and, in certain cases, as a dative of interest, a quien (a quienes) is used instead of the possessive relative adjective.

la mujer de quien me gusta tanto la voz (*or* la mujer cuya voz me gusta tanto), the woman whose voice I like so much

el enfermo a quien amputaron el brazo, the patient whose arm was amputated

**266.** Cuanto (-a, -os, -as) is used both as a pronoun and as an adjective. It usually includes its antecedent.

Dije cuanto quise  
 De cuantas lenguas he estudiado, no  
 puedo hablar ninguna

I said all that I wished  
 Of all the languages that I have  
 studied, I can't speak any

**267.** Quien and cual are sometimes repeated as correlatives, either in the singular or in the plural. In this construction they sometimes take the accent and sometimes do not.

Quién aconseja la retirada; quién,  
 morir peleando  
 Todos, cuales más, cuales menos,  
 son culpables

Some advise retreat; others, to die  
 fighting  
 All, some more, some less, are to  
 blame

**268.** The adverbs donde and cuando are often used to replace a relative governed by a preposition. With donde the preposition is sometimes expressed.

La calle donde (*or* en donde, *or* en  
 la que) vivo, es ancha  
 La hora del crepúsculo es cuando (*or*  
 la en que) gozo más de la natu-  
 raleza

The street in which I live is wide

The twilight hour is when I enjoy  
 nature most



# VOCABULARIO XXVII

(Vocabulary XXVII)

abigarrado, -a, motley.	el doctor, the doctor.
académico, -a, academic.	durante, <i>prep.</i> , during.
la apertura, the opening.	la escalera, the staircase.
azul, <i>adj.</i> , blue.	la marcha, the march, procession.
el bedel, the beadle.	el músico, the musician.
blanco, -a, white.	la notabilidad, the notability, eminent person, authority.
la campana, the bell.	el Paraninfo, the Paranymp, Commencement Hall.
el catedrático, the professor.	el premio, the prize.
la ceremonia, the ceremony.	la procesión, the procession.
el claustro, the cloister.	el rector, the rector, president.
el conjunto, the whole, ensemble, aggregate.	repartir, to distribute.
declarar, to declare.	seguir, to follow, continue.
el diploma, the diploma.	sonar, to ring, sound.
el discurso, the speech, address.	
de antaño, of yore, of long ago, of former times.	
dar media vuelta, to go halfway round.	
tener lugar, to take place.	

## EJERCICIO XXVII

(Exercise XXVII)

Cuando estuve en Salamanca el año pasado, asistí a la apertura de cursos de la universidad, la cual tuvo lugar el día primero de octubre.— Al dar las doce en el reloj de la universidad, sonó la campana grande. Entonces principió su marcha por los claustros de la universidad una procesión de notabilidades, en la que iban primero los bedeles en elegantes trajes de antaño. Seguían después los estudiantes que habían recibido premios. Detrás de ellos iban los doctores, cuyos trajes académicos, en los que el amarillo, el azul, el rojo y el blanco representaban cada cual su determinada facultad, formaban un conjunto tan abigarrado como vistoso. Por último, iban el rector<sup>1</sup> y las notabilidades de la ciudad, seguidos de los músicos.

Después de haber andado por los claustros, bajaron por la famosa escalera, dieron media vuelta al patio y entraron en el Paraninfo, donde un catedrático leyó un discurso y el rector repartió los diplomas. Terminada la ceremonia, el

<sup>1</sup> The present rector of the University of Salamanca is the distinguished writer, Miguel de Unamuno, who is almost as well known in Latin America as in Spain.

rector declaró abierto el curso, después de lo cual todos volvieron a sus casas.<sup>1</sup>

EJERCICIO ORAL XXVII  
(Oral Exercise XXVII)

1. The bell, of which I was speaking, rang during the morning.
2. He is a professor I like. 3. He who reads, learns. 4. What you said is not true. 5. The man whose house is near ours is a musician. 6. The city where he lives is very large. 7. He told (contó) me [of] the opening of [the] courses at Salamanca, which pleased me very much. 8. This letter is for the president's wife, who is in the reception room. 9. He believed all that I said. 10. Some wish [to] remain, others, [to] go. 11. The bell rang, after which the procession began its march. 12. The beadle with whom I was speaking was very pleasant. 13. Of all the prizes I have received, I like this one best. 14. He is the one who entered the cloister. 15. The stairway of that house, which is very beautiful, cost (costó) five thousand dollars. 16. The opening took place in June, in which month I left Spain for the United States.

TEMA XXVII  
(Composition XXVII)

The opening of [the] courses in the University of Salamanca takes place the first of October. At the stroke of twelve by the university clock, a procession, which is formed in the cloisters, begins its march. The procession consists of beades, dressed in costumes of former times, students who have received prizes, doctors, city authorities and the president of the university. The colors of the academic gowns of the professors, which represent the different faculties of the university, form a very showy ensemble.

The procession goes half-way round the inner court, after having (*inf.*) descended the famous stairway, and enters a hall, in which a professor reads an address. After which, the president distributes the diplomas, and then declares the course open for that year. This ceremony, which is always

<sup>1</sup> This description is taken largely from *Salamanca por dentro*, by Francisco Fernández Villegas.

interesting even to Spaniards, has remained the same as (que) in past centuries.

16

### CONVERSACIÓN XXVII (Conversation XXVII)

1. ¿Cuáles son los pronombres relativos? 2. ¿Qué forma se emplea después de una preposición para indicar personas? 3. ¿Cuáles son las formas empleadas para indicar una frase entera? 4. ¿Cuáles son las formas de los relativos posesivos?

5. ¿Cuándo tuvo lugar la apertura de cursos en la universidad de Salamanca? 6. ¿A qué hora principió la marcha de la procesión? 7. ¿Quiénes iban primero en la procesión? 8. ¿Cómo estaban vestidos los doctores? 9. Después de haber andado por los claustros ¿qué hizo la procesión? 10. ¿Qué hizo uno de los catedráticos en el Paraninfo? 11. Después del discurso del catedrático ¿qué hizo el rector? 12. Entonces ¿qué hicieron los que estaban presentes?

### LECCIÓN XXVIII (Lesson XXVIII)

#### PRONOMBRES Y ADJETIVOS INTERROGATIVOS (Interrogative Pronouns and Adjectives)

269. The interrogatives have forms like the relatives, but are distinguished by a written accent, whether in direct or indirect questions, and in the case of **cuál** by the omission of the article.

The forms of the interrogative pronouns and adjectives are:

**qué**, what? which? (*pronoun and adjective*)

**quién**, **quiénes**, who? (*pronoun*)

**cuál**, **cuáles**, which (one)? what (one)? (*pronoun and adjective*)

**cuyo**, **-a**, **-os**, **-as**, whose? (*adjective*)

**cuánto**, **-a**, **-os**, **-as**, how much? how many? (*pronoun and adjective*)

270. **Qué** is invariable in form, and is used both pronominally and adjectively. As an adjective it may precede nouns representing either persons or things; as a pronoun it is neuter.

¿Qué comedias ha visto V.?

What plays have you seen?

¿Qué quiere V.?

What do you wish?

Quiero saber qué ha sido de eso

I want to know what came of that

271. **Qué** is also used in exclamations. Before nouns, whether modified or not by qualifying adjectives, **qué** may be translated by 'what a (*or an*).'. With an attributive adjective greater emphasis may be given by placing **más** or **tan** before the adjective, which in this case follows the noun. Before adverbs or predicate adjectives, whether the verb is expressed or understood, **qué** may be translated by 'how.'

¡Qué grosería!	What coarseness!
¡Qué lástima!	What a pity!
¡Qué bonita escena!	What a pretty scene!
¡Qué noche más (tan) hermosa!	What a fine night!
¡Qué bien te sienta esta vida!	How well this life agrees with you!
¡Qué gordo estás!	How fleshy you are!
¡Qué gracioso!	How funny!

272. **Qué** with **tal** forms an interrogative phrase used both adjectively and adverbially. It asks after the quality or condition of the person or thing, and should be distinguished from **¿cómo?** which inquires regarding way, means, or manner. Sometimes **tal** is omitted.

¿Qué (tal) tiempo hace?	What kind of weather is it?
¿Qué tal? ( <i>a greeting very frequently used in Spain</i> )	How goes it?
¿Qué tal se viaja en España?	How is traveling in Spain ( <i>comfortable or otherwise</i> )?
¿Cómo se viaja en España?	How do you travel in Spain ( <i>by train, stage, or otherwise</i> )?

BUT: There is little or no distinction in phrases asking after the health of a person, such as:

¿Qué tal está V.?	How are you?
¿Cómo está V.?	

273. **Quién** (**quiénes**) is used only as pronoun and only of persons.

¿Quién habla?	Who is speaking?
¿A quiénes vió V.?	Whom did you see?

274. **Cuál** (**cuáles**), 'which,' 'which one,' refers to both persons and things, and is used as adjective and pronoun.

¿Cuál de los niños prefiere V.?	Which child do you prefer?
¿Cuál carta es la de V.?	Which is your letter?

275. **Cuál** as a pronoun seeks information about individual persons or things that have been specified actually or by implication; **qué** asks for a definition or information, without implying that the thing asked about has been previously mentioned.

- ¿Cuál está en la caja? Which one (*of two or more things that have been mentioned*) is in the box?  
 ¿Qué está en la caja? What is in the box?

**276. Cúyo** (-a, -os, -as), 'whose?' refers only to persons. Like a possessive adjective, it agrees in gender and number with the thing possessed. It is little used, except where followed by the verb *ser*, and even then is commonly replaced by *de quién*, or in certain cases by *a quién*.

- |  |                                       |
|--|---------------------------------------|
| ¿De cuya hija habla V.?                          | } Of whose daughter are you speaking? |
| ¿De la hija de quién habla V.? ( <i>better</i> ) |                                       |
| ¿Cúyos son estos libros?                         | } Whose books are these?              |
| ¿De quién son estos libros?                      |                                       |
| ¿A quién amputaron el brazo?                     | Whose arm did they amputate?          |

**277. Cuánto** (-a, -os, -as), 'how much' (*pl.*, 'how many'), agrees in gender and number with the word modified or for which it stands.

- |                            |                           |
|----------------------------|---------------------------|
| ¿Cuántos han venido?       | How many have come?       |
| ¿Cuánto tiempo quedará V.? | How long will you remain? |

**278. Cuánto** (-a, -os, -as) is also used in exclamations in the sense of 'how,' 'how much,' 'how many.' The shortened form *cuán* is used before adverbs or adjectives.

- |                           |                       |
|---------------------------|-----------------------|
| ¡Cuánto me gusta viajar!  | How I like to travel! |
| ¡Cuántas vidas perdidas!  | How many lives lost!  |
| ¡Cuán dichosas son!       | How happy they are!   |
| ¡Cuán fácilmente aprende! | How easily he learns! |

## VOCABULARIO XXVIII

(Vocabulary XXVIII)

- |  |  |
|--|--|
| <i>allá</i> , <i>adv.</i> , there; <i>más</i> —, farther on. | <i>francés</i> , <i>adj.</i> , French; <i>subst. m.</i> , Frenchman. |
| <i>la animación</i> , the animation.                         | <i>en frente de</i> , <i>prep.</i> , opposite.                       |
| <i>animado</i> , -a, lively, animated.                       | <i>la fuente</i> , the fountain.                                     |
| <i>arrojar</i> , to throw, cast(out), expel.                 | <i>el hecho</i> , the feat, exploit, deed.                           |
| <i>atravesar</i> , to cross, pierce.                         | <i>el interés</i> , the interest.                                    |
| <i>la avenida</i> , the avenue.                              | <i>irregular</i> , <i>adj.</i> , irregular.                          |
| <i>bullicioso</i> , -a, noisy, lively.                       | <i>lejos</i> , <i>adv.</i> , distant, far off.                       |
| ¡caramba! ( <i>exclamation</i> ) gee!                        | <i>madrileño</i> , -a, of ( <i>or</i> belonging to) Madrid.          |
| good heavens! by Jove!                                       | <i>el mártir</i> , the martyr.                                       |
| <i>el centro</i> , the center.                               | <i>el museo</i> , the museum.  |
| <i>cerrar</i> , to close, shut.                              | <i>la obra</i> , the work ( <i>creation</i> ).                       |
| <i>cuidadoso</i> , -a, careful.                              | <i>el pintor</i> , the painter.                                      |
| <i>dentro</i> ( <i>de</i> ), <i>prep.</i> , within.          | <i>la plaza</i> , the (public) square.                               |
| <i>diferir</i> , to defer, delay.                            | <i>sobre todo</i> , <i>adv.</i> , especially.                        |
| <i>el esfuerzo</i> , the effort, attempt.                    | <i>trágico</i> , -a, tragical.                                       |
| <i>Europa</i> , <i>f.</i> , Europe.                          |  |

EJERCICIO XXVIII  
(Exercise XXVIII)

—¿Qué vamos a hacer esta tarde? Podemos dar un paseo, y le mostraré a V. algunos puntos de interés que hay en Madrid. — Con mucho gusto. — Atravesaremos primero la Puerta del Sol.<sup>1</sup> — ¡Qué animación! Parece que todo el mundo se reúne aquí. — Es verdad. La Puerta del Sol es el centro de la vida madrileña. — ¿Es ésta la calle de Alcalá por la que estamos entrando? — Sí, señor, y el Prado no está lejos. Principia en aquella plaza con la fuente, que se puede ver desde aquí. — Veo la plaza. ¿Cómo se llama? — Se llama la Plaza de Madrid. Ahora entramos en el Prado. — ¿Cuál es aquel monumento que está más allá en el Prado? — Es el monumento del Dos de Mayo, dedicado a los mártires de la libertad que murieron<sup>2</sup> el dos de mayo de 1808 en su esfuerzo de arrojar a los Franceses de la ciudad. — Ya me acuerdo<sup>3</sup> de aquel hecho trágico. — Aquel edificio que está al lado de nosotros es el famoso Museo del Prado, uno de los mejores museos de Europa. Allí se pueden ver las principales obras de los más célebres pintores españoles, sobre todo las de Velázquez y de Murillo. — ¿Quiere V. que entremos<sup>4</sup> en el museo? — A ver.<sup>5</sup> ¿Qué hora es? ¡Caramba! Ya son las cuatro, la hora de cerrar. Tendremos que diferir nuestra visita hasta mañana.

EJERCICIO ORAL XXVIII  
(Oral Exercise XXVIII)

1. Which avenue is this? 2. What is a grammar? 3. Whose works are those? 4. To whom did he dedicate his book? 5. How many pictures there are in this museum! 6. What Frenchmen are these? 7. How far the Prado is! 8. Who lives opposite the public square? 9. Which square is in the center of Madrid? 10. How lazy some people are! 11. How are you? 12. How long will you remain in Madrid? 13. How was the meal? 14. What kind of weather is it? 15. What part of Madrid life do you like? 16. What a beautiful avenue! This

<sup>1</sup> The **Puerta del Sol** is the principal square of Madrid. It is in the center of the business section.

<sup>2</sup> *Preterit of morir.*

<sup>3</sup> *Pres. ind. of acordarse.*

<sup>4</sup> Cf. §392, 1.

<sup>5</sup> *Trans. 'Let's see.'*

must be the Prado. 17. Why is there always so much noisy animation in the Puerta del Sol? 18. When did the Spanish make an attempt to expel the French from the city? 19. Is this part of the city always very lively? 20. They cross the irregular streets carefully.

TEMA XXVIII  
(Composition XXVIII)

How are you this evening? — Very well, thanks, in spite of [the fact] that I have had a very busy afternoon. — 2  
Is that so? How did you pass the afternoon? — Well, first I went to the Puerta del Sol, in order to see that famous 4  
center of Madrid life, and from there I walked along Alcalá Street. — What things of interest did you see? — I saw the 6  
various buildings, but I did not enter any, because I wanted to go to the Prado. — Did you go there? — Yes, 8  
sir. — It was so late when you went out that I did not believe you would have time to visit the Prado, too. You saw the 10  
Plaza de Madrid, the Museo del Prado and the other important monuments in that part of the city? — Naturally. 12  
I wished to see all that I could. — You must come to Madrid again when you have<sup>1</sup> more time to devote to our interesting 14  
and famous museums.

CONVERSACIÓN XXVIII  
(Conversation XXVIII)

1. ¿Cuáles son los pronombres interrogativos? 2. ¿Cuál es el interrogativo empleado sólo como pronombre? 3. ¿Cuándo se dice **cuán** en vez de **cuánto**? 4. ¿Hay alguna forma interrogativa que se emplea sólo como adjetivo? 5. ¿Qué significa **qué tal**? 6. ¿Qué clase de ejercicio tenemos para hoy? 7. ¿Le gustan a V. las lecciones de conversación?

8. ¿Qué es la Puerta del Sol? 9. ¿Por qué se llama esta plaza el centro de la vida madrileña? 10. ¿Cuáles son las cosas de interés que se ven paseándose por la calle de Alcalá y el Prado? 11. Dígame V. algo del monumento del Dos de Mayo. 12. ¿Por qué no se puede entrar en el Museo del Prado después de las cuatro?

<sup>1</sup> Use subjunctive. Cf. § 397, 1.

## LECCIÓN XXIX

(Lesson XXIX)

## NEGACIÓN

(Negation)

279. A sentence is usually made negative by placing **no** before the verb. In compound tenses **no** precedes the auxiliary.

No hablo español

I don't speak Spanish

Mi amigo no ha llegado

My friend has not arrived

280. If the verb is understood, **no** follows a personal pronoun, and may precede or follow other words.

yo no, not I

generalmente no, generally not

no éste

no siempre, not always

éste no } not this one

todavía no, not yet

281. After verbs of saying, thinking, etc., **no**, 'no' or 'not,' and **sí**, 'yes' or 'so,' are introduced by **que**, which is not to be translated.

Yo creo que no, I think not

Yo digo que sí, I say yes

282. When other negative words follow the verb, **no** is retained, but when they precede the verb, **no** is omitted. Such words are **nada**, 'nothing,' 'not anything'; **nadie**, 'nobody,' 'not any one'; **ni**, 'neither,' 'nor'; **ninguno**, 'no one,' 'none'; **nunca**,<sup>1</sup> 'never,' 'ever'; **jamás**<sup>1</sup> (*emphatic*), 'never,' 'ever'; **tampoco**, 'not either.'

Es la mejor cosa que jamás haya visto

It is the best thing that I have ever seen

No hablo a nadie

I speak to no one

Nadie habla

No one is speaking

No lo haré jamás }

I will never do it

Jamás lo haré }

NOTE. — When **no** precedes the verb, certain words that have no negative force in themselves, such as '**cosa**,' '**palabra**,' etc., may follow the verb with negative force.

No hay cosa que me guste aquí

There is nothing that pleases me here

No ha dicho palabra

He hasn't said a word

283. Several such negatives may be used together, after the verb, when **no** precedes, or may be distributed at will, provided one, at least, precedes.

Él no habla nunca mal de nadie

He never speaks ill of any one

Nadie nunca habla mal de él tampoco

Nobody ever speaks ill of him either

<sup>1</sup> Both **nunca** and **jamás** have affirmative force with an affirmative verb.



**284.** In Spanish there are three words, **pero**, **mas**, **sino**, to translate the conjunction 'but.' The two former may be used interchangeably, although **mas** belongs rather to literary style. **Sino** is used only to introduce a positive idea in direct contrast to a preceding negative, and in this case the preceding verb is understood and not repeated. If there is a different verb in the second part of the negation, 'but' is translated by **sino que**.

Tengo un lápiz, pero no tengo una pluma	I have a pencil, but I haven't a pen
Lo cuenta así el historiador, mas no es verdad	The chronicler thus relates it, but it is not true
No bebe vino, sino agua	He is not drinking wine, but water
No deseo, sino que mando que V. salga	I don't desire but I command you to leave

**285.** **Sino** (si no) retaining its original value of 'if not,' and translated by 'but,' 'unless,' 'save,' 'except,' etc., is often used to present an alternative in questions expecting a negative answer.

¿A quién acudiré sino a mi amigo?	To whom shall I turn but (except, save, or if not) to my friend?
-----------------------------------	--

**286.** As an adverb 'but' is often translated by **no . . . sino**, and 'no . . . but' by **no . . . más . . . que**.

No habla sino raramente	He speaks but seldom
No tiene más hermanos que Juan	He has no brothers but John

## VOCABULARIO XXIX

(Vocabulary XXIX)

alargar, to lengthen, extend.	el humor, the humor; de mal —, in bad humor.
el ansia, <i>f.</i> , the anxiety, eagerness.	el látigo, the whip.
el automóvil, the automobile.	el (or la) mar, the sea, any large quantity.
bondadoso, -a, kind.	a medida que, <i>conj.</i> , according as, as far as.
el cochero, the coachman.	montar, to mount.
el colmo, the height.	la muchedumbre, the crowd.
contestar, to answer, reply.	el obstáculo, the obstacle.
crecer, to increase, grow.	el pasatiempo, the pastime.
chasquear, to click, snap, crack.	el paso, the pace, step.
efectivamente, <i>adv.</i> , actually, in fact.	penetrar, to penetrate.
el empujón, the push, violent shove.	el río, the river.
la entrada, the entrance.	el vendedor, the seller, vender.
estrecho, -a, narrow.	verdadero, -a, true, real.
el estruendo, the noise, clamor.	vociferar, to vociferate, shout.
a fuerza de, <i>prep.</i> , by dint of.	
el grito, the cry, shout.	

### EJERCICIO XXIX (Exercise XXIX)

«No ha visto animación bulliciosa en ciudades quien<sup>1</sup> no ha visto a nuestro Madrid en tarde de toros,» decía Emilio Castelar.<sup>2</sup> Efectivamente todas las calles están entonces animadísimas. La calle de Alcalá es un verdadero río de coches, de automóviles y de gente a pie, todos alargando el paso en su ansia de llegar a un mismo destino, la Plaza de Toros.<sup>3</sup> A medida que se acerca uno a la entrada, el estruendo crece. Los vendedores de refrescos gritan, los cocheros vociferan chasqueando sus látigos, y a traves de tantos obstáculos la muchedumbre penetra no sin dificultad. Tampoco es cosa fácil pasar por las estrechas entradas de la plaza, porque todos desean entrar a una vez. Pero nadie está de mal humor, y al fin y al cabo, a fuerza de empujones bondadosos, toda esta mar de gente se halla en la plaza, donde la animación llega a su colmo.

### EJERCICIO ORAL XXIX (Oral Exercise XXIX)

1. I never speak to any one about (de) anything. 2. The coachman has no whips but this [one]. 3. I do not snap the whip. 4. They think not. 5. He has never seen Madrid. 6. That bull-fight is the best I have ever seen. 7. To whom will he shout but to the noisy venders? 8. Neither the procession nor the bull-fight pleased him. 9. Nobody is in bad humor on the afternoon of a bull-fight. 10. He does not like the noise, but I like it. 11. I do not wish a coach, but an automobile. 12. Where shall I go but to the bull-fight? 13. All the men were mounted on beautiful horses. 14. We never can penetrate (through) this crowd. 15. Here we are at our destination, are

<sup>1</sup> Cf. § 260.

<sup>2</sup> **Emilio Castelar** (1832-1899) was an orator and writer. His *Una Corrida de Toros* gives an interesting view of the bull-fight from the Spanish standpoint.

<sup>3</sup> **La Plaza de Toros**, where the bull-fights are held, lies to the east of the city.

we not? — I think so, sir. 16. The people in the Plaza cannot hear the cries of the coachmen. 17. Can you always answer in Spanish now?

TEMA XXIX  
(Composition XXIX)

There are not many bull-fights which can be compared with those that take place in the famous Plaza de Toros 2 in Madrid. They always attract great crowds, for on the day of a bull-fight nobody seems [to] think of (*pensar en*) 4 anything else (*otra cosa*). The people all forget their work for a few hours, and enjoy the diversions which such a 6 day offers.

There are never as many people on the streets of Madrid 8 as on the afternoon of a bull-fight. Alcalá Street is an animated river of admirers of this pastime, all of them going 10 to the Plaza de Toros. There is animation everywhere, but nothing can equal that which is seen at the entrance to the 12 Plaza, where everybody in his eagerness makes great efforts to (*para*) enter at the same time. Finally, all are within the 14 gates and in their seats, awaiting the beginning of that most typical (*típico*) Spanish pastime — the bull-fight. 16

CONVERSACIÓN XXIX  
(Conversation XXIX)

1. ¿Cómo se forma la negación en español? 2. ¿Se usa el *no* cuando hay otra palabra de negación delante del verbo? 3. ¿Cuáles son las tres palabras para traducir la conjunción *but*? 4. ¿Cómo se traduce el adverbio *but*? 5. ¿Cómo se dice en español: *I think so*?

6. ¿Cuándo hay animación bulliciosa en Madrid? 7. ¿A qué se parece la calle de Alcalá en tarde de toros? 8. ¿Cuándo crece el estruendo? 9. ¿Qué hacen los cocheros? 10. ¿Cómo se entra en la Plaza de Toros? 11. ¿Es fácil penetrar a través de tantos obstáculos? 12. ¿Hay mucha animación en la plaza? 13. ¿Qué significa *la mar de gente*? 14. ¿Le gustaría a V. ver una corrida de toros?

## LECCIÓN XXX

(Lesson XXX)

## ADVERBIOS

(Adverbs)

## Usos Particulares

(Special Uses)

287. Adverbs are of two classes, those with the termination **-mente** (already described § 226), and those without special termination.

288. Of the latter class, the following have peculiarities in use that deserve particular attention:

**aquí, acá**, here (*near the speaker*)

**allí, allá**, there (*distant from both speaker and person addressed*)

**ahí**, there (*near the person addressed*)

**aun (aún)**, still, yet, even

**mucho**, much, very

**muy**, much, very

289. **Aquí** and **allí** denote rest in a place; **acá** and **allá**, motion towards a place; **ahí** may denote either. These distinctions are not rigorously observed.

**Está aquí**, He is here (*near me*)

**¡Ven acá!** Come here! (*to me*)

**Allí está**, There it is (*over yonder*)

**Allá va**, There he goes (*over yonder*)

**Ahí está**, There he is (*near you*)

**Ahí va**, There he goes (*your way*)

290. **Aun** is made dissyllabic when it follows the word that it modifies, and is written with an accent, **aún**.

**No ha llegado aún** (*or todavía*) }

**Aun** (*or todavía*) **no ha llegado** }

**Nadie puede hacerlo aun con ayuda**

**cuando aún no la había terminado**

He has not yet arrived

No one, even with aid, can do it

when as yet he had not finished it

291. **Muy** modifying adjectives and adverbs is translated 'very.' Before past participles it is translated 'much.' It is never used before a simple verb.

**muy estudioso**, very studious

**muy bien**, very well

**Es muy usado**, It is much used

292. **Muy** cannot stand alone as may 'very' in English. After a question or statement in which **muy** occurs, **mucho** is used to indicate acquiescence.

**¿Habla muy bien el español? — Mucho**

**Él es muy trabajador. — Sí, mucho**

Does he speak Spanish well? — Very

He is very industrious. — Yes, very

**293. Mucho** is used before comparatives of both adjectives and adverbs, and after past participles conjugated with **haber**.

<b>Es mucho más contento que yo</b>	He is much happier than I
<b>Lo ha escrito hoy mucho mejor</b>	He has written it much better to-day
<b>Ha estudiado mucho</b>	He has studied a great deal

**294. Mucho** is rarely modified by **muy**. 'Very much' should be translated by **muchísimo** or by **mucho** alone.

<b>¿Le gusta a V.?— Sí, mucho (or muchísimo)</b>	Do you like it?— Yes, very much
--	---------------------------------

**295.** The adjective **mucho** (**-a, -os, -as**) is used before nouns in idiomatic expressions with **tener** (cf. § 180), to translate the English adverbs 'very,' 'very much.'

<b>Tengo mucha hambre</b>	I am very hungry
<b>Tenía mucho miedo</b>	He was very much afraid

### VERBOS (Verbs)

#### 296. ver, 'to see.'

ver, viendo, visto

#### INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<b>veo, ves, ve, vemos, veis, ven</b>
<i>Imperfecto</i>	<b>ve-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían</b>
<i>Pretérito</i>	<b>vi, viste, vió, vimos, visteis, vieron</b>
<i>Futuro</i>	<b>ver-é, -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án</b>
<i>Condicional</i>	<b>ver-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían</b>

#### SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<b>vea, veas, vea, veamos, veáis, vean</b>
<i>Imperfecto, 1ª forma:</i>	<b>v-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran</b>
<i>Imperfecto, 2ª forma:</i>	<b>v-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen</b>
<i>Futuro</i>	<b>v-iere, -ieres, -iere, -iéremos, -iereis, -ieren</b>

#### IMPERATIVO

ve

ved

### VOCABULARIO XXX (Vocabulary XXX)

<b>acometer</b> , to attack, undertake.	( <i>he who sticks banderillas, or</i>
<b>el alguacil</b> , the alguacil, mounted police officer.	<i>small decorated darts, into the top of the bull's shoulders</i> ).
<b>anunciar</b> , to announce.	<b>la capa</b> , the cape.
<b>la aprobación</b> , the approbation, approval.	<b>la cerviz</b> , the cervix, nape of the neck.
<b>el banderillero</b> , the banderillero	<b>el clarín</b> , the bugle, clarion.

clavar, to nail, fix.  
 el comienzo, the beginning, start.  
 correr, to run.  
 la cuadrilla, the procession (of bull-fighters).  
 el chulo, the chulo (bull-fighter's assistant).  
 el despejo, the clearing (of the arena), removal (of obstacles).  
 engalanar, to adorn, deck.  
 entusiasmado, -a, enthusiastic.  
 el espada, the matador (he who slays the bull by a sword-thrust downward between the shoulders).  
 figurarse, to imagine.

furioso, -a, furious.  
 la ira, the anger, wrath.  
 el jaco, the nag.  
 lleno, -a, full.  
 matar, to kill.  
 la muerte, the death.  
 la mula, the mule.  
 la música, the music, band.  
 el picador, the picador (he who, on horseback, baits the bull with a long staff armed with a pointed iron tip).  
 el raso, the satin.  
 el sonido, the sound.  
 trastear, to worry (excite the bull with a red flag or a sword).

### EJERCICIO XXX (Exercise XXX)

Figúrese V. la Plaza de Toros llena de gente entusiasmada, esperando con anhelo el comienzo de la corrida. Todo es animación, y se hace el despejo no sin dificultad. Pero al fin y al cabo suena<sup>1</sup> el clarín que anuncia la entrada de la cuadrilla. Las puertas de la plaza se abren, y sale una vistosa procesión, compuesta<sup>2</sup> de alguaciles montados en caballos briosos, de banderilleros en trajes de raso, de espadas con capas de varios colores vistosos, de picadores sobre sus jacos, de chulos y de mulas engalanadas. El clarín suena otra vez, el toro sale furioso a la plaza, corre en varias direcciones, acomete a los picadores y a los toreros que quedan en la plaza. La gente grita y vocifera. Llamado por aquí, atraído por allá, la ira del toro va creciendo, y crece más aún cuando, después de otro sonido del clarín, los banderilleros le clavan en la cerviz las banderillas de diversos colores. Vuelve<sup>3</sup> a sonar el clarín, anunciando la hora de la muerte. El primer espada se dirige hacia el toro, le trastea un rato, mostrando algunas veces una maña extraordinaria, y al fin lo mata entre los gritos de aprobación de la gente. Suena la música, salen las mulas engalanadas, y se llevan al toro y a los caballos muertos.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Pres. ind. of sonar.

<sup>2</sup> Past part. of componer.

<sup>3</sup> Volver a + inf. means 'to (do something) again.'

<sup>4</sup> Past part. of morir, 'to die.'

### EJERCICIO ORAL XXX

(Oral Exercise XXX)

1. He is here. 2. She goes there. 3. There they are. 4. They are coming here. 5. Here and there. 6. He has not yet arrived. 7. He is still in Madrid. 8. Do you like bull-fights? — Very much. 9. Is the clothing brilliant? — Very. 10. These colors are much used this spring. 11. This place is much more adorned than that. 12. These horses are very hungry. 13. They will have seen this bull-fight, too. 14. I saw the bull fall. 15. We used to see picturesque processions there, even in winter. 16. I see that the banderilleros are [over] there with their banderillas. 17. The picadors have very old nags. 18. Do you see the bull-fighter? He holds his sword with very great skill. 19. The bull is attracted here and there by the capes of the bull-fighters.

### TEMA XXX

(Composition XXX)

If one has never seen a bull-fight, one cannot imagine the great interest that it always creates. Even foreigners (**ex- 2**  
**tranjeros**) generally attend at least one bull-fight, when they go to Spain. In the summer, the best place to (**para**) see 4  
bull-fights is San Sebastián,<sup>1</sup> for all the famous matadors are there at (**en**) that season. 6

A bull-fight is divided into three parts. In the first part, after the cuadrilla, the bull attacks the picadors, who await 8  
him on their horses, or rather nags. In the second part, the daring banderilleros fix the banderillas in the bull's neck. 10  
The third part begins when the matador arrives. The bull attacks him furiously, and it is only with the greatest skill 12  
that the bull is finally killed.

### CONVERSACIÓN XXX

(Conversation XXX)

1. Conjugue V. el presente de indicativo del verbo **ver**; el imperfecto de indicativo. 2. ¿Qué forma del subjuntivo de este verbo es irregular? 3. ¿Cuáles son los adverbios que significan *here*? ¿Cuáles son los que significan *there*? 4. ¿Cuándo se em-

<sup>1</sup> San Sebastián, *see general vocabulary.*

plea la forma **aún**? 5. ¿Cómo se traduce *very much* en español?

6. ¿Qué es una cuadrilla? 7. ¿Cuáles son las personas que componen la cuadrilla? 8. ¿Cuántas veces suena el clarín durante una corrida? 9. ¿Qué hace la gente? 10. ¿Qué hacen los banderilleros? 11. ¿Quién mata al toro? 12. Antes de matar al toro ¿qué hace el primer espada? 13. ¿Cuándo suena la música? 14. ¿Cómo se llevan al toro y a los caballos muertos?

## LECCIÓN XXXI

(Lesson XXXI)

### TÉRMINOS DE TRATAMIENTO

(Forms of Address)

**297.** There are in Spanish four ways of addressing a gentleman. The equivalent feminine forms are used to address a married lady.

**Don** (*doña, f.*) is used only before the Christian name; **señor** (*señora, f.*), before the family name. The two may be combined before the whole name or before the Christian name. **Doña** is rarely used before the Christian name of a young lady.

Señor Don Juan Valera

Señor Valera

Don Juan

Señor Don Juan

Señora Doña Emilia Pardo Bazán

Señora Pardo Bazán

Doña Emilia

Señora Doña Emilia

**298.** **Señorito**, a diminutive form of **señor**, is applied to young men, and is seldom used except familiarly or by servants; but **señorita**, a diminutive form of **señora** applied to young ladies, is commonly used to translate the English 'Miss.' **Señorita** may precede the Christian name.

**299.** The terms **señor** and **señora** are often used in polite address before titles, or when speaking of another's relatives.

Buenos días, Señor Conde  
¿Cómo está su señora esposa?

Good day, Count  
How is your wife?

**300.** The definite article or the possessive adjective precedes all these terms when they are not used in direct address (cf. § 32, 7).

el señor Quintana, Mr. Quintana  
la señorita Ojeda, Miss Ojeda

su señor padre, your father  
la señora condesa, the countess



**301. Caballero**, though not used with the Christian or the family name, is frequently employed among equals as a term of address, and is less deferential than **señor**.

Buenos días, caballero

Good day, sir

**302.** It is the custom in Spain to use, in addition to the family name of the father, that of the mother. The mother's name follows that of the father, joined to it by the conjunction **y**. A lady upon marriage replaces the mother's name by that of her husband, preceded by **de**.

Señor Don Marcelino Menéndez y Pelayo

Señora Doña Antonia Andrés de Digón

### Saludos y Despedidas

(Greetings and Leave-takings)

**303.** Note the following expressions of greeting or leave-taking:

¡Hola!	Hello!
¡Buenos días!	Good morning!
¡Buenas tardes!	Good afternoon!
¡Buenas noches!	Good evening ( <i>or</i> good night)!
¿Cómo está usted?	How are you? How do you do?
Muy bien, gracias, ¿y usted?	Very well, thank you, and you?
Regular	Fairly well; so so
¿Qué tal?	How goes it? ( <i>familiar</i> )
Me alegro de verle a V.	I am glad to see you
¡Adiós!	Good-by; ( <i>also as greeting</i> ) good day!
¡Abur! ( <i>or</i> ¡Agur!) [ <i>coll.</i> ]	Good-by! Farewell!
¡Vaya usted con Dios!	God be with you; good-by!
¡Hasta luego!	Until by and by; so long ( <i>familiar</i> ); I'll see you later!
¡Hasta la vista!	Until we meet again; au revoir!
¡Hasta mañana!	Until to-morrow!
¡Hasta la tarde!	Until this afternoon!
¡Hasta la noche!	Until to-night!
¡Que V. lo pase bien!	Good luck to you!
¡A los pies de V.!	At your feet! ( <i>formal, to ladies</i> )
¡Beso a V. la mano!	I kiss your hand ( <i>reply to preceding</i> )

### VERBOS

(Verbs)

**304. oír**, 'to hear.'

oír, oyendo, oído

#### INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	oigo, oyes, oye, oímos, oís, oyen
<i>Imperfecto</i>	o-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían
<i>Pretérito</i>	oí, oíste, oyó, oímos, oísteis, oyeron
<i>Futuro</i>	oir-é, -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án
<i>Condicional</i>	oir-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían

## SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<b>oiga, oigas, oiga,<sup>1</sup> oigamos, oigáis, oigan</b>
<i>Imperfecto</i> , 1 <sup>a</sup> forma:	<b>oyera, oyeras, oyera, oyéramos, oyeráis, oyeran</b>
<i>Imperfecto</i> , 2 <sup>a</sup> forma:	<b>oyese, oyeses, oyese, oyésemos, oyeseis, oyesen</b>
<i>Futuro</i>	<b>oyere, oyeres, oyere, oyéremos, oyereis, oyeren</b>

## IMPERATIVO

oye<sup>1</sup>

oíd

**305. salir<sup>2</sup> 'to go out,' 'come out.'**

salir, saliendo, salido

## INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<b>salgo, sales, sale, salimos, salís, salen</b>
<i>Imperfecto</i>	<b>sal-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían</b>
<i>Pretérito</i>	<b>sal-í, -iste, -ió, -imos, -isteis, -ieron</b>
<i>Futuro</i>	<b>saldr-é, -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án</b>
<i>Condicional</i>	<b>saldr-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían</b>

## SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<b>salga, salgas, salga, salgamos, salgáis, salgan</b>
<i>Imperfecto</i> , 1 <sup>a</sup> forma:	<b>sal-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran</b>
<i>Imperfecto</i> , 2 <sup>a</sup> forma:	<b>sal-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen</b>
<i>Futuro</i>	<b>sal-iere, -ieres, -iere, -iéremos, -iereis, -ieren</b>

## IMPERATIVO

sal

salid

## VOCABULARIO XXXI

(Vocabulary XXXI)

<b>aburrirse</b> , to grow tired, be bored.	<b>mencionar</b> , to mention.
<b>el baño</b> , the bath.	<b>obtener</b> , to obtain, win.
<b>el cantor</b> , the singer.	<b>la ocasión</b> , the occasion, opportunity.
<b>la condesa</b> , the countess.	<b>los Pirineos</b> , the Pyrenees.
<b>decidirse</b> (a), to decide, be determined (to).	<b>el presidente</b> , the president.
<b>encontrar</b> , to meet, encounter, find.	<b>el recuerdo</b> , the remembrance, regard.
<b>equivocarse</b> , to be mistaken.	<b>sentir</b> , to feel, be sorry (for);
<b>la excursión</b> , the excursion.	<b>lo siento mucho</b> , I am very sorry.
<b>forzoso</b> , -a, necessary, obligatory.	<b>serio</b> , -a, serious.
<b>indispuesto</b> , -a, indisposed.	<b>el servicio</b> , the service.
<b>junto</b> , -a, together, united.	<b>sobremanner</b> , <i>adv.</i> , beyond measure, exceedingly.
<b>la lástima</b> , the pity.	<b>veranear</b> , to spend ( <i>or</i> pass) the summer.
<b>la mención</b> , the mention.	

 **echar de menos**, to miss. **tener la intención** (de), to intend (to).

<sup>1</sup> Oiga V. in polite language, and oye in familiar speech, are used to attract the attention of a person addressed, or to begin a sentence, much as 'Say' is used in English.

Oye, Pepe, ¿vas al teatro? 'Say, Joe, are you going to the theater?'

<sup>2</sup> Note the similarity in conjugation between salir and valer (cf. § 324).

EJERCICIO XXXI  
(Exercise XXXI)

Muy buenas noches, señora. — Buenas noches, Don Juan.  
 ¡Cuánto me alegro de verle por aquí! ¿Cómo está V. ahora? 2  
 — Mucho mejor, gracias, y tengo mucho gusto en poder  
 asistir otra vez a su tertulia. — ¿Su señora madre no le ha 4  
 acompañado? — Se halla un poco indispuesta, y se ha deci-  
 dido a no salir esta noche. — ¡Qué lástima! La vamos a echar 6  
 de menos. Permítame presentarle a la señora condesa de X.  
 — Tantísimo gusto en conocer a V., condesa. Si no me equi- 8  
 voco, fuí presentado a su señor padre el año pasado en el  
 Casino de San Sebastián. — Puede ser, señor. Efectiva- 10  
 mente mis padres veranean en San Sebastián casi todos los  
 años. ¡Qué ciudad más alegre! Todo me gusta allí, las 12  
 diversiones del Casino, los baños de mar en la Concha y las  
 excursiones por los Pirineos. — Sin hacer mención de los 14  
 toros. Uno no tiene el tiempo de aburrirse allí. — Tiene V.  
 razón, señor. (*Un criado anuncia que el coche de Don Juan 16*  
*está a la puerta.*) — Lo siento mucho, señoras, pero me es  
 forzoso despedirme de VV. A los pies de V., condesa. — 18  
 Beso a V. la mano. — Adiós, señora. — Adiós, Don Juan.  
 Mil recuerdos a su señora madre. 20

EJERCICIO ORAL XXXI  
(Oral Exercise XXXI)

1. I hear; they hear; he heard; that they may hear; I go out;  
 I shall go out; you will go out; we should go out. 2. Hear; go  
 out; say. 3. Good morning, how are you to-day? 4. How is  
 your father? 5. Is he well this morning? 6. Good-by, my  
 friend, my carriage is at the door, and I must go. 7. The presi-  
 dent was introduced to the countess. 8. I always like to attend  
 the evening parties at Mrs. X.'s. 9. I met (a) two friends of  
 mine this morning. 10. They were going to San Sebastián  
 together. 11. Did they decide to go at last? 12. That is a  
 serious subject (*asunto*), and I shall not mention it again. 13. I  
 am going to miss you. 14. That gentleman in the dining-room  
 is exceedingly poor. 15. What a pity! 16. Good-by, my friend,  
 a thousand regards to your mother. 17. I am very sorry, but I

have not had an opportunity to (de) speak to the countess.  
18. Where do you intend to spend the summer?

TEMA XXXI  
(Composition XXXI)

Good afternoon, John, how goes it? — So, so. And how are you? — Very well, thanks. What have you to do this evening? — Not very much. Why? — Well, Mrs. X., who is a very intimate friend of my mother, is going to (a) have an evening party at her house, and I should like you to accompany me (**que me acompañase**). She has obtained the services of one or two excellent singers, and, if you like good music, you will have an opportunity to (de) hear it there. — It would please me very much [to] accompany you, I assure you. When and where shall I see you? — If you will be at the club at eight o'clock, I can call for you (**puedo ir a buscarle**) with my automobile. Mother is a little indisposed, and does not intend to go out this evening. — Well then, until to-night. — Good-by. Good luck to you.

CONVERSACIÓN XXXI  
(Conversation XXXI)

1. Conjugue V. el presente de indicativo del verbo **oír**; el imperfecto de subjuntivo. 2. ¿Cuál es el futuro del verbo **salir**? ¿el presente de subjuntivo? 3. Dígame V. algunos saludos españoles; algunas despedidas. 4. ¿Cuándo se usa **señor** en un término de tratamiento?

5. ¿Qué es una tertulia? 6. ¿Quiénes asistían a la tertulia de que se habla en esta lección? 7. ¿Dónde veraneaban los padres de la condesa? 8. ¿Qué diversiones hay en San Sebastián? 9. ¿Se aburre uno allí? 10. ¿Qué dijo Don Juan al despedirse de las señoras? 11. ¿Dónde veranea V., señor?

LECCIÓN XXXII  
(Lesson XXXII)

RÉGIMEN DIRECTO (O ACUSATIVO) CON A  
(Direct Object [or Accusative] with a)

306. In Spanish the preposition **a** has two distinct uses: (1) as a preposition, (2) as a sign of the direct object. In the latter

use it has no prepositional force, and is not to be translated. As a sign of the direct object, *a* is used in the following cases:

1. When the direct object of the verb is a noun indicating a definite known person or persons. The distinction, however, is not always easily made, and exceptions sometimes occur.

<b>Vi a mi hermano ayer</b>	I saw my brother yesterday
<b>Haga el favor de servir a María</b>	Please serve Mary
<b>Busco a un criado mío</b>	I am looking for a servant of mine
<b>BUT: Busco un criado</b>	I am looking for a servant ( <i>no definite servant</i> )

NOTE. — Sometimes, to avoid ambiguity, it is necessary to omit the *a*.  
**Recomendé el criado a mi madre** I recommended the servant to my mother

*a*. Certain verbs change their meaning according to whether or not *a* is used with the direct object.

<b>Él enseña los perros al público</b>	He shows the dogs to the public
<b>Él enseña a los perros</b>	He teaches dogs
<b>Mi hermana quiere un criado japonés</b>	My sister wishes a Japanese servant
<b>Mi hermana quiere a un criado japonés</b>	My sister loves a Japanese servant
<b>Los bandidos robaron los niños</b>	The bandits stole the children
<b>Los bandidos robaron a los niños</b>	The bandits robbed the children

2. When the direct object of the verb is a pronoun referring to persons. This includes a redundant use of the personal pronouns (cf. § 211).

<b>La señora a la cual visité está enferma</b>	The lady whom I visited is ill
<b>¿A quién invita V.?</b>	Whom are you inviting?
<b>Le veo a V.</b>	I see you

3. When the direct object of the verb is a noun indicating a higher animal or one regarded as intelligent or appreciative, or a personified thing.

<b>El toro mató al caballo</b>	The bull killed the horse
<b>Ama mucho a su perro</b>	He loves his dog very much
<b>Persiguió al león</b>	He pursued the lion
<b>Ella acariciaba a sus gatos</b>	She was petting her cats
<b>Temían a la muerte</b>	They feared Death
<b>Las campanas aclaman a la victoria</b>	The bells acclaim victory

4. To avoid ambiguity, when both the subject and object of the verb denote things.

<b>Al terror sucedió la calma</b>	Calm succeeded terror
<b>Alcanzó el rápido al tren expreso</b>	The flyer overtook the express-train

5. When the direct object of the verb is a geographical proper name, unless regularly preceded by the definite article.

<b>Encontramos a Granada deliciosa</b>	<b>We find Granada delightful</b>
<b>Yo visité a España el año pasado</b>	<b>I visited Spain last year</b>
<b>BUT: Quiero ver el Japón</b>	<b>I want to see Japan</b>

## VERBOS

(Verbs)

### 307. traer, 'to carry,' 'bring.'

traer, trayendo, traído

#### INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	traigo, traes, trae, traemos, traéis, traen
<i>Imperfecto</i>	tra-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían
<i>Pretérito</i>	traje, trajiste, trajo, trajimos, trajisteis, trajeron <sup>1</sup>
<i>Futuro</i>	traer-é, -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án
<i>Condicional</i>	traer-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían

#### SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	traiga, traigas, traiga, traigamos, traigáis, traigan
<i>Imperfecto, 1ª forma:</i>	traj-era, <sup>1</sup> -eras, -era, -éramos, -erais, -eran
<i>Imperfecto, 2ª forma:</i>	traj-ese, <sup>1</sup> -eses, -ese, -ésemos, -eseis, -esen
<i>Futuro</i>	traj-ere, <sup>1</sup> -eres, -ere, -éremos, -ereis, -eren

#### IMPERATIVO

trae

traed

## VOCABULARIO XXXII

(Vocabulary XXXII)

el actor, the actor.	el género, the class, kind, branch.
la afición, the affection, fondness.	hábil, <i>adj.</i> , clever, expert, skilful.
alternativamente, <i>adv.</i> , alternatively.	italiano, -a, Italian.
el autor, the author, writer.	moderno, -a, modern.
cantar, to sing.	módico, -a, moderate ( <i>in price</i> ).
clásico, -a, classical, classic.	musical, <i>adj.</i> , musical.
declamar, to declaim, recite.	la ópera, the opera.
dejar, to leave, let, allow; —	el papel, the paper, rôle; <b>hacer</b>
de, to cease, stop, fail.	un —, to play a rôle.
el drama, the drama, play.	el precio, the price.
dramático, -a, dramatical, dramatic.	el repertorio, the repertory.
europeo, -a, European.	la representación, the representation, performance.
extranjero, -a, foreign.	señalar, to point out, indicate.
la función, the function, performance.	teatral, <i>adj.</i> , theatrical.
	la traducción, the translation.
	la zarzuela, the musical comedy.

a más no poder, to the utmost.

de mala gana, unwillingly, reluctantly.

<sup>1</sup> Note the loss of the i from the ie of the regular ending (cf. also **decir** and **traducir**, p. 120, footnote 1).

EJERCICIO XXXII  
(Exercise XXXII)

El que visita a Madrid por primera vez no debe dejar de asistir a algunas representaciones teatrales. Hay teatros de todos los géneros. Para el aficionado a la ópera, hay el Teatro Real. En él representan las mejores óperas de todos los países europeos, pero con más frecuencia las de la escuela italiana. Si uno tiene afición al drama, hay teatros, como el Teatro Español y el Teatro de la Comedia, donde se representan de vez en cuando las obras de Lope de Vega, de Calderón y otros autores clásicos, pero donde el repertorio consta generalmente de comedias por autores españoles modernos o de traducciones de dramas extranjeros. En aquellos teatros los papeles se representan por actores muy hábiles. Entre los más conocidos se puede mencionar a María Guerrero, la Bernhardt de España.

Para los que quieren divertirse con otra clase de representaciones, hay el Teatro de la Zarzuela, el Teatro de Lara y el Teatro de Apolo, donde se dan tres o cuatro funciones cada noche. Estas funciones, que se llaman zarzuelas, son obras dramáticas y musicales en que alternativamente se declama y se canta. La entrada, siempre a un precio muy módico, se puede tomar para todas las funciones o para una sola.

EJERCICIO ORAL XXXII  
(Oral Exercise XXXII)

1. I bring; I brought; we brought; they brought; they might bring; you may bring; bringing. 2. He gave Mr. X. several valuable books. 3. These actors have visited Madrid. 4. The Italian author left Spain two years ago. 5. The matador killed the bull. 6. The teacher has seventeen students. 7. Whom did they invite? 8. Did you see María Guerrero? 9. They called the doctor. 10. This lady wishes a servant. 11. This lady loves her servants. 12. Do not fail to (de) visit Madrid. 13. We left New York reluctantly. 14. Can you point out the president? 15. What kind of performances do they give in the Teatro Real?

TEMA XXXII  
(Composition XXXII)

When I was in Madrid two months ago, I met an intimate friend of mine who was spending a week there for the first time. He wanted [to] see some of the theatrical performances, so we went to several theaters together. The first night, we attended a performance at the Teatro Real. The next evening, we saw María Guerrero at the Teatro Español in one of Calderón's famous plays, and the following night we had the pleasure of seeing (*inf.*) Enrique Borrás at the Teatro de la Comedia. Both (**los dos**) are excellent actors, and play their rôles exceedingly well. When we left the Teatro Español, it was about midnight, and we decided [to] see the last performance of the evening at the Teatro de Apolo, for a short musical comedy is always an agreeable diversion after a serious drama.

At the end (**al fin**) of his visit, my friend left Madrid reluctantly, for he had enjoyed himself to the utmost all the week.

CONVERSACIÓN XXXII  
(Conversation XXXII)

1. Conjugue V. el presente de subjuntivo del verbo **traer**; el pretérito; el futuro de subjuntivo. 2. ¿Cuándo se usa el régimen directo con la preposición **a**? 3. ¿Cuál es el plural de **régimen**?

4. ¿Qué clase de teatros hay en Madrid? 5. ¿Qué se representa en el Teatro Real? 6. ¿Dónde se pueden ver buenos dramas? 7. ¿Quién era Calderón? 8. ¿Ha visitado V. a Madrid? 9. ¿Ha visto V. a María Guerrero? 10. ¿Qué es una zarzuela? 11. ¿Hay que tomar entrada para todas las funciones de una noche en el Teatro de Apolo? 12. ¿A quién visita V. en el verano?



## LECCIÓN XXXIII

(Lesson XXXIII)

## NÚMEROS

(Numbers)

## 308.

## Números Cardinales

(Cardinal Numbers)

0	cero	15	quince	100	ciento (cien)
1	uno, -a	16	diez y seis	101	ciento y uno, etc.
2	dos	17	diez y siete	200	doscientos, -as
3	tres	18	diez y ocho	300	trescientos, -as
4	cuatro	19	diez y nueve	400	cuatrocientos, -as
5	cinco	20	veinte	500	quinientos, -as
6	seis	21	veinte y uno	600	seiscientos, -as
7	siete	22	veinte y dos, etc.	700	setecientos, -as
8	ocho	30	treinta	800	ochocientos, -as
9	nueve	40	cuarenta	900	novecientos, -as
10	diez	50	cincuenta	1000	mil
11	once	60	sesenta	2000	dos mil
12	doce	70	setenta	500,000	quinientos (-as) mil
13	trece	80	ochenta	1,000,000	un millón
14	catorce	90	noventa	1,000,000,000	un billón

309. The cardinal numbers, except **uno** and the compounds of **ciento**, are all invariable.

**doce libros**, twelve books — **treinta y dos veces**, thirty-two times

310. **Uno** (-a) agrees in gender with the noun it modifies and drops the final -o when standing immediately before a masculine singular (cf. § 64).

**un plato**, one plate

**una mesa**, one table

BUT: *after the noun*,

**capítulo veinte y uno**, chapter twenty-one

**página veinte y una**, page twenty-one

311. When **uno** (-a) is preceded by another number, the -o is dropped before masculine nouns in the plural, but -a is retained before feminine nouns.

**veinte y un años**, twenty-one years

**doscientos un libros**, two hundred and one books

**ciento y una veces**, one hundred and one times

**las «mil y una noches»**, the 'thousand and one nights'

312. **Diez y seis**, **diez y siete**, etc., **veinte y uno**, **veinte y dos**, **treinta y uno**, etc., are often written as one word, **dieciséis**, **diecisiete**, **diecinueve**, **veintiuno**, **veintidós**, **treintaiuno**, **cuarentaidós**, etc.

**313.** Ciento loses its final syllable when it precedes the word it modifies and is not followed by a smaller numeral. When followed by a smaller numeral, the full form, **ciento**, is used (cf. § 67). The multiples of **ciento** (**doscientos**, etc.) agree in gender and number with the nouns they qualify.

**cien** estudiantes, one hundred students  
**cien mil** votos, a hundred thousand votes  
**cien** bonitas flores, a hundred pretty flowers  
**ciento ochenta páginas**, one hundred and eighty pages  
**doscientas** personas, two hundred people  
**quinientos** árboles, five hundred trees

**314.** Compound numbers are formed the same in Spanish as in English, except that **y**, 'and,' comes only between the last two. **Y** is not used, unless the final one be less than ten, and immediately following the plural of hundreds, thousands, millions, etc., **y** is regularly omitted, even with numbers less than ten.

**mil ochocientos ochenta y seis**, eighteen hundred (and) eighty-six  
**ciento doce**, one hundred (and) twelve  
**trescientos cuarenta y cuatro**, three hundred (and) forty-four  
**trescientos ocho**, three hundred (and) eight

**315.** Above a thousand, one counts by thousands and hundreds, not by hundreds as in English.

**mil ochocientos**, eighteen hundred  
**dos mil cuatrocientos**, twenty-four hundred

**316.** With **ciento** (*or cien*) and **mil** the indefinite article is not used, unless to avoid ambiguity.

**ciento veinticinco**, one hundred twenty-five  
**cien** hombres, a hundred men  
**mil** cosas, a thousand things

BUT: **trescientos un mil cuatro**, 301,004  
*(because trescientos mil cuatro would be 300,004)*

**317.** To ask a person's age, either of the following expressions may be used:

$\left. \begin{array}{l} \text{¿Qué edad (age) tiene?} \\ \text{¿Cuántos años tiene?} \end{array} \right\} \text{How old is he?}$

**318.** In telling a person's age, the verb **tener** is used, followed by the proper cardinal number before **años**.

**Mi hermano tiene veinte y dos años**      My brother is twenty-two

NOTE. — For the way to tell time, cf. §§ 169-171.

### VOCABULARIO XXXIII (Vocabulary XXXIII)

la adoración, the adoration.	la Epifanía, (the) Epiphany.
la Ascensión, the Ascension.	la fecha, the date.
la Asunción, the Assumption.	la Inmaculada Concepción, the Immaculate Conception.
el balcón, the balcony.	instituir, to institute.
católico, -a, Catholic.	Jesús, <i>m.</i> , Jesus.
celebrar, to celebrate, praise.	María, <i>f.</i> , Mary.
el cementerio, the cemetery.	el mundo, the world.
la ceniza, the ash, ashes.	la natividad, the nativity, birth.
la conmemoración, the commemoration.	(la) Navidad, (the) Christmas.
la corona, the wreath, crown.	nuevo, -a, new.
la Cuaresma, (the) Lent.	(la) Pascua, (the) Easter.
cuenta V., count.	el regalo, the gift, present.
la decena, the group of ten numbers, ten.	la resurrección, the resurrection.
la devoción, the devotion.	los Reyes (Magos), the Magi, Wise Men.
el Día de Difuntos, All Souls' Day.	la virgen, the virgin.

### EJERCICIO XXXIII (Exercise XXXIII)

España es el país más católico del mundo, el país donde las fiestas de la iglesia se celebran con más devoción que en ningún otro. La principal de estas fiestas es la de Navidad que se celebra el 25 de diciembre. Siete días después de Navidad viene la fiesta de Año Nuevo, y 12 días después de Navidad, el 6 de enero, la de los Reyes o Epifanía, en la cual se celebra la adoración del Niño Jesús. Los Reyes son el *Santa Claus* de los niños españoles, y en esta fecha se les dan regalos.

La Cuaresma, que principia con el Miércoles de Ceniza y dura 40 días, termina con la fiesta de Pascua en conmemoración de la resurrección del Señor. Entre todas las fiestas religiosas de España, la que se observa con más lujo, con mayores procesiones y con más ceremonia es la de Corpus Christi, que viene el jueves 60 días después de la Pascua, y 20 días después del día de la Ascensión.

El 15 de agosto es la fiesta de la Asunción de la Virgen María, el 8 de septiembre es la de la Natividad de la Virgen. El 2 de noviembre es el Día de Difuntos. La gente va a los cementerios a poner coronas y flores en las tumbas. El 8 de diciembre se celebra la fiesta de la Inmaculada Concepción, fiesta instituida en 1854.

EJERCICIO ORAL XXXIII  
(Oral Exercise XXXIII)

1. We have studied thirty-three lessons in this book. 2. This is lesson thirty-three. 3. In counting by hundreds (**por centenas**), there are only three forms that are not regular, five hundred, seven hundred and nine hundred. 4. My eldest brother is thirty years old. How old are you? 5. Two times (**por**) one are (**son**) two; two times two are four; two times three are six, etc. 6. It is a quarter past eight; half past nine; ten minutes to ten; six minutes past eleven; twelve o'clock; etc. 7. Washington was born (**nació**) the 22d of February, 1732, and died (**murió**) the 14th of December, 1799. 8. The two great holidays in the United States are the Fourth of July and Christmas. 9. Epiphany comes the 6th of January. 10. The birth of the Virgin Mary is celebrated on the 8th of September. 11. The year is composed of 365 days. 12. In New York there are more than 2,500,000 people.

TEMA XXXIII  
(Composition XXXIII)

There are about 12 religious holidays, which are celebrated each year in Spain with great pomp. The first holiday of the year is Epiphany, which comes the 6th of January. On this day the Magi, who are the Santa Claus of the Spanish children, put presents in the children's shoes, which they leave on the balconies. The next holiday is Ash Wednesday, the beginning of Lent. The 40 days of Lent end with Easter, [a] holiday which is often celebrated with processions, in which the various religious brotherhoods (**hermandades**) take part. Other holidays are Corpus Christi, 60 days after Easter, the feast of the Assumption, the 15th of August, and the Nativity of the Virgin, the 8th of September. Twenty-four days after the Nativity comes All Souls' Day. On the 8th of December the feast of the Immaculate Conception takes place. This holiday has been observed since 1854. The last and most celebrated religious holiday of the year is naturally Christmas, the day of the Lord's birth, which comes the 25th of December.

### CONVERSACIÓN XXXIII

(Conversation XXXIII)

1. ¿Cuáles son los números cardinales de uno a diez? ¿de diez a veinte? ¿de veinte a treinta? 2. Cuente V. por decenas hasta ciento. 3. ¿Cómo se dice: 500, 900, 1509, 1899, 1913, 3501, 500,000? 4. ¿Cuándo se dice **cien** en vez de **ciento**? 5. ¿Se usa el artículo indeterminado con **ciento** y **mil**? 6. ¿Hay dos maneras de decir: *How old is he?* ¿Cuáles son?

7. ¿Cuál es la fiesta principal de España, y en qué día se celebra? 8. ¿Cuándo se celebra la fiesta de los Reyes? 9. ¿Cuándo principia la Cuaresma, y cuánto tiempo dura? 10. ¿Qué fiesta se celebra con procesiones? 11. ¿Qué fiesta viene el 15 de agosto? ¿el 8 de septiembre? ¿el 2 de noviembre? 12. ¿Cuándo fué instituida la fiesta de la Inmaculada Concepción?

### LECCIÓN XXXIV

(Lesson XXXIV)

319.

#### Números Ordinales

(Ordinal Numbers)

1st. primero, -a, -os, -as	31st. trigésimo primero <i>or</i> primo, etc.
2d. segundo, -a, -os, -as	40th. cuadragésimo, etc.
3d. tercero, -a, -os, -as	50th. quincuagésimo, etc.
4th. cuarto, -a, -os, -as	60th. sexagésimo, etc.
5th. quinto, etc.	70th. septuagésimo, etc.
6th. sexto <i>or</i> sesto, etc.	80th. octogésimo, etc.
7th. séptimo <i>or</i> sétimo, etc.	90th. nonagésimo, etc.
8th. octavo, etc.	100th. centésimo, etc.
9th. noveno <i>or</i> nono, etc.	101st. centésimo primero <i>or</i> primo, etc.
10th. décimo, etc.	102d. centésimo segundo, etc.
11th. undécimo, etc.	200th. ducentésimo, etc.
12th. duodécimo, etc.	300th. tricentésimo, etc.
13th. décimo tercero <i>or</i> tercio, etc.	400th. cuadringentésimo, etc.
14th. décimo cuarto, etc.	500th. quingentésimo, etc.
15th. décimo quinto, etc.	600th. sexcentésimo, etc.
16th. décimo sexto, etc.	700th. septingentésimo, etc.
17th. décimo séptimo, etc.	800th. octingentésimo, etc.
18th. décimo octavo, etc.	900th. noningentésimo, etc.
19th. décimo noveno <i>or</i> nono, etc.	1000th. milésimo, etc.
20th. vigésimo, etc.	2000th. dos milésimo, etc.
21st. vigésimo primero <i>or</i> primo, etc.	500,000th. quinientos (-as) milésimo, etc.
22d. vigésimo segundo, etc.	1,000,000th. millonésimo, etc.
23d. vigésimo tercero <i>or</i> tercio, etc.	
30th. trigésimo, etc.	

**320.** The ordinal numbers are used as adjectives, and agree in gender and number with the words they modify. In compound ordinals both parts agree. They usually follow, but may precede the noun. Cardinals used for ordinals always follow.

la lección vigésima *tercia*, the twenty-third lesson

las primeras páginas, the first pages

la lección veinte y tres, lesson twenty-three

NOTE. — *Sexto* and *séptimo* are generally pronounced and frequently written *sesto* and *sétimo*. *Primo*, *tercio* and *nono* are sometimes used in compound ordinals. For the apocopation of *primero* and *tercero*, cf. § 64.

**321.** The ordinals are very much less used in Spanish than in English.

In a numbered series, as with volumes, chapters, pages, paragraphs, centuries, etc., ordinals or cardinals may be used up to ten inclusive, but from there on, the cardinals are more common.

la lección sexta }  
la lección seis } lesson six

la página ochenta y dos, the eighty-second page

el renglón doce, the twelfth line

el siglo diez y ocho, the eighteenth century

**322.** In naming popes, sovereigns, etc., the ordinals are used through *décimo* (sometimes *undécimo*), and from there on the cardinals are used.

Pío nono, Pius the Ninth

Alfonso undécimo, Alfonso the Eleventh

Felipe segundo, Philip the Second

Luis once, Louis the Eleventh

Carlos quinto, Charles the Fifth

Alfonso trece, Alfonso the Thirteenth

Alfonso décimo, el Sabio, Alfonso Tenth, the Wise

**323.** Excepting *primero*, the ordinals are always replaced by the cardinals in expressing dates.

el primero de julio, the first of July

el dos de junio, the second of June

el quince de diciembre, the fifteenth of December

## VERBOS

(Verbs)

### 324. *valer*, 'to be worth.'

*valer*, *valiendo*, *valido*

#### INDICATIVO

*Presente* valgo, vales, vale, valemos, valéis, valen

*Imperfecto* val-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían

*Preterito* val-í, -iste, -ió, -imos, -isteis, -ieron

*Futuro* valdr-é, -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án

*Condicional* valdr-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían

## SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<b>valga, valgas, valga, valgamos, valgáis, valgan</b>
<i>Imperfecto, 1ª forma:</i>	<b>val-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran</b>
<i>Imperfecto, 2ª forma:</i>	<b>val-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen</b>
<i>Futuro</i>	<b>val-iere, -ieres, -iere, -iéremos, -iereis, -ieren</b>

## IMPERATIVO

val or vale

valed

## VOCABULARIO XXXIV

(Vocabulary XXXIV)

<b>actual, adj.</b> , present.	<b>el maestro</b> , the master, teacher.
<b>la actualidad</b> , the present (time or state of things).	<b>el nombre</b> , the name.
<b>el apogeo</b> , the apogee, highest degree (height) of greatness.	<b>notable, adj.</b> , notable, remarkable, noteworthy.
<b>la caballería</b> , the chivalry.	<b>la novela</b> , the novel.
<b>contar</b> , to count, relate, tell.	<b>la obra maestra</b> , the masterpiece.
<b>demostrar</b> , to prove, demonstrate.	<b>perder</b> , to lose.
<b>la edad</b> , the age.	<b>picaresco, -a</b> , roguish, knavish, rogue.
<b>eminente, adj.</b> , eminent.	<b>el pícaro</b> , the rogue, rascal.
<b>el emperador</b> , the emperor.	<b>la pieza</b> , the piece.
<b>entero, -a</b> , entire, whole, all.	<b>pintar</b> , to paint.
<b>el éxito</b> , the success, outcome.	<b>el reino</b> , the reign.
<b>el fin</b> , the end; <b>a —es de</b> , about the end of; <b>dar —</b> , to end, conclude.	<b>el rey</b> , the king.
	<b>el ridículo</b> , the ridicule.
	<b>la serie</b> , the series.
	<b>la supremacía</b> , the supremacy.

## EJERCICIO XXXIV

(Exercise XXXIV)

A fines del siglo XV, aparecieron en la literatura española el primer drama, *la Celestina*, y la primera novela de caballería, *el Amadís de Gaula*. Pocos años después, durante el reino de Carlos I (el emperador Carlos V), apareció también la novela picaresca, en que se pinta la vida del pícaro.

El drama y la novela han tenido un éxito notable en la literatura española y han guardado su supremacía hasta la actualidad. Estos dos géneros llegaron a su apogeo durante los reinos de Felipe III y de Felipe IV: la novela, en *Don Quijote*, la obra maestra de Cervantes, que dió fin a los libros de caballería poniéndolos en ridículo; y el drama, en las piezas teatrales de Lope de Vega y de Calderón de la Barca, nombres muy eminentes en la edad de oro de la literatura española. Tampoco en el siglo XX ha perdido España su

superioridad en el drama y en la novela, como lo demuestran Echegaray, el principal autor dramático del día, y Galdós, <sup>16</sup> el maestro de la novela española moderna.

EJERCICIO ORAL XXXIV  
(Oral Exercise XXXIV)

1. This is the thirty-fourth lesson. 2. The cardinal numbers are used much more in Spanish than the ordinal numbers. 3. I am worth; I may be worth; I shall be worth; I should be worth. 4. These will be worth more during the year 1925. 5. He is going to New York for the hundredth time. 6. Charles I of Spain was also the emperor Charles V. 7. The first of March will be here soon. 8. *Sixth* and *seventh* are written in (de) two different ways. 9. The *Amadís de Gaula* was the first great novel of chivalry. 10. There were many famous authors in Spain in the seventeenth century. 11. This is the eighth or ninth play that he has written. 12. The first part of *Don Quijote*, the masterpiece of Cervantes, appeared in 1605, and the second part, in 1615. 13. Lope de Vega wrote more than 1500 plays. 14. Two times (por) one are (son) two; two times (por) two are four; two times (por) three are six, etc. 15. Counting the first and the last, there are only ten.

TEMA XXXIV  
(Composition XXXIV)

In Spanish literature the novel and the drama have always held their supremacy since the *Celestina* appeared in the fif- <sup>2</sup>teenth century. The Golden Age in the seventeenth century, during the reigns of Philip III and Philip IV, was note- <sup>4</sup>worthy for (por) its many authors in every branch of literature. The drama and the novel reached the height of their <sup>6</sup>greatness at that epoch (en aquella época). Even at (en) <sup>8</sup>the present time, these two branches have retained their superiority. Echegaray, a dramatic author, who is also a celebrated engineer, wrote his first play in 1874, when he was <sup>10</sup>42 years old, and since then he has devoted himself almost entirely to the theater. Galdós, besides his many other novels, <sup>12</sup>has written a series of national episodes (*Episodios Naciona-*



les), such as *la Corte de Carlos IV*, etc. He, too, has been <sup>14</sup> attracted by the theater from time to time, but his plays have never obtained the same success as his novels. <sup>16</sup>

### CONVERSACIÓN XXXIV (Conversation XXXIV)

1. Conjugue V. el presente de subjuntivo del verbo **valer**; el futuro de indicativo. 2. ¿Cuáles son los números ordinales hasta el vigésimo? 3. ¿Cuáles son los números ordinales por decenas hasta el centésimo? 4. ¿Cuándo se emplean los números ordinales en español? 5. ¿Cómo se dice: *the first of January*? *the third of March*?

6. ¿De qué géneros de literatura se habla en la lección de hoy? 7. ¿Qué es *la Celestina*? ¿Qué es *el Amadís de Gaula*? 8. ¿Qué es una novela picaresca? 9. ¿Cuándo apareció *Don Quijote*? 10. Qué puede V. decirme de Echegaray y de Galdós? 11. ¿Quién es el actual rey de España? 12. ¿En qué siglo estamos?

### LECCIÓN XXXV (Lesson XXXV)

#### Números Quebrados (Fractions)

**325.** The fractions from thirds to tenths inclusive are formed as in English, i.e. the numerator is a cardinal and the denominator is an ordinal.

$\frac{1}{3}$  un tercio       $\frac{2}{3}$  dos tercios       $\frac{5}{7}$  cinco séptimos       $\frac{1}{10}$  un décimo

**326.** From  $\frac{1}{11}$ , the numerator remains a cardinal, but the denominator is formed from the cardinal by adding the ending -avo. When -avo is joined to the word, a final -e or -a is sometimes dropped, and a preceding c becomes z.

$\frac{1}{11}$  un once-avo, or onzavo       $\frac{2}{21}$  dos veintiun-avos  
 $\frac{7}{15}$  siete quince-avos, or quinzavos       $\frac{1}{100}$  un centavo

**327.** Fractions are also formed by using the ordinals with parte, 'part.'

$\frac{1}{4}$  la cuarta parte       $\frac{2}{20}$  las dos vigésimas partes

**328.** 'Half,' 'a half,' 'one half,' 'half a,' may be expressed by *la mitad*, used substantively or by *medio*, -a, used either substantively or adjectively.

*la mitad de los alumnos*, half of the pupils (una) *media hora*, a half hour  
(una) *hora y media*, an hour and a half un *medio*, one half ( $\frac{1}{2}$ )

**329.****Numerales Colectivos**

(Collective Numerals)

<i>par</i> , <i>m.</i> , pair, couple	<i>veintena</i> , <i>f.</i> , twenty, a score
<i>decena</i> , <i>f.</i> , ten, a group of ten	<i>treintena</i> , <i>f.</i> , thirty, a group of thirty
<i>docena</i> , <i>f.</i> , dozen	<i>cuarentena</i> , <i>f.</i> , forty, twoscore
<i>quincena</i> , <i>f.</i> , fifteen, a group of fifteen	<i>ochentena</i> , <i>f.</i> , eighty, fourscore
<i>centena</i> , <i>f.</i> , or <i>centenar</i> , <i>m.</i> , hundred, a group of a hundred	
<i>millar</i> , <i>m.</i> , thousand, a group of a thousand	

**330.** As collective nouns *centenar* and *millar* are interchangeable with *ciento* and *mil* respectively. To express rate, *ciento* and *millar* are used.

*unos centenares (or cientos) de bichos raros*, some hundreds of strange insects  
*millares (or miles) de pájaros*, thousands of birds  
*puros a seis duros el ciento*, cigars at six dollars a hundred  
*tejas a diez duros el millar*, tiles at \$10 a thousand

**331.****Numerales Múltiplos**

(Multiple Numerals)

simple, single	<i>doble or duplicado</i> , double, twofold
triple or triplicado, triple, threefold	
<i>cuádruplo or cuadruplicado</i> , quadruple, fourfold	
<i>quintuplo or quintuplicado</i> , quintuple, fivefold	
<i>óctuplo</i> , etc., octuple, eightfold	
<i>décuplo</i> , tenfold	<i>céntuplo</i> , a hundredfold

**332.****Locuciones Numerales**

(Numeral Phrases)

<i>una vez</i> , once	<i>diez veces</i> , ten times
<i>dos veces</i> , twice	<i>cien veces</i> , a hundred times
<i>tres veces</i> , three times	<i>mil veces</i> , a thousand times

**VERBOS**

(Verbs)

**333.** *caber*, 'to fit in,' 'be contained in.'  
*caber*, *cabiendo*, *cabido*

INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<i>quepo</i> , <i>cabes</i> , <i>cabe</i> , <i>cabemos</i> , <i>cabéis</i> , <i>cabén</i>
<i>Imperfecto</i>	<i>cab-ía</i> , -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían
<i>Pretérito</i>	<i>cupe</i> , <i>cupiste</i> , <i>cupo</i> , <i>cupimos</i> , <i>cupisteis</i> , <i>cupieron</i>
<i>Futuro</i>	<i>cabr-é</i> , -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án
<i>Condicional</i>	<i>cabr-ía</i> , -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían

## SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	quepa, quepas, quepa, quepamos, quepáis, quepan
<i>Imperfecto, 1ª forma:</i>	cup-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran
<i>Imperfecto, 2ª forma:</i>	cup-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen
<i>Futuro</i>	cup-iere, -ieres, -iere, -iéremos, -iereis, -ieren

## IMPERATIVO

cabe

cabad

VOCABULARIO XXXV  
(Vocabulary XXXV)

la alusión, the allusion.	existir, to exist.
el cálculo, the calculation, computation; hacer —s, to reckon.	gordo, —a, fat.
el céntimo, the centime.	el león, the lion.
la circulación, the circulation.	la moneda, the money, coin.
el cobre, the copper.	ordinario, —a, ordinary.
corriente, <i>adj.</i> , current, common.	el perro, the dog.
la cruz, the cross, tail of a coin.	la peseta, the peseta ( <i>Spanish silver coin worth about twenty cents</i> ).
chico, —a, little, small.	raro, —a, rare, strange.
desaparecer, to disappear.	el real, the real ( <i>old Spanish silver coin worth about five cents</i> ).
el dinero, the money.	respectivo, —a, respective.
distinto, —a, distinct, separate.	el sistema, the system.
el duro, the dollar ( <i>Spanish silver five peseta piece, called also peso</i> ).	la unidad, the unit, unity.
equivaler, to equal.	el valor, the value.
el escudo, the shield, coat of arms.	la venta, the sale; — (al) por menor, retail.

EXERCICIO XXXV  
(Exercise XXXV)

La unidad del dinero español es la peseta, pieza de plata que equivale poco más o menos a 20 *cents*, moneda de los Estados Unidos. Además de la peseta, las monedas corrientes de plata constan de las piezas de 50 céntimos, de 2 y de 5 pesetas, y las de cobre constan de las piezas de 1, de 2, de 5 y de 10 céntimos. Las piezas de 1 y de 2 céntimos,  $\frac{1}{100}$  y  $\frac{2}{100}$  de una peseta respectivamente, no se ven sino raramente. La moneda de 5 céntimos se llama popularmente «perro chico,» y la de 10 céntimos, «perro gordo» o «perro grande,» una alusión, sin duda, a los leones del escudo de España. El real,  $\frac{1}{4}$  de una peseta, no existe como pieza distinta, pero es un término empleado para hacer cálculos en la venta al por menor. La

peseta es  $\frac{1}{5}$  del duro o peso. La moneda de oro casi ha desaparecido, pero el Banco de España ha puesto en circulación 14 billetes de valores que se extienden<sup>1</sup> de 25 a 1000 pesetas.

## EXERCICIO ORAL XXXV

(Oral Exercise XXXV)

1. It is contained in; it was contained in; it shall be contained in; it may be contained in. 2. Fractions are not very difficult in Spanish. 3. A minute is the 60th part of an hour, and a second is  $\frac{1}{60}$  of a minute. 4. A day is the 7th part of a week, and an hour is the 24th part of a day. 5. A peseta is  $\frac{1}{5}$  of a dollar. 6. I have studied  $\frac{1}{3}$  of the next lesson. 7. Here are a couple of Spanish coins. 8. I should like [to] buy  $\frac{1}{2}$  dozen good cigars. 9. Some hundreds of persons attended the sale of those rare books. 10.  $\frac{1}{7}$  is not contained in  $\frac{1}{11}$ . 11. I told him twice that there were thousands of marvelous things in the museum. 12. Some of the multiple numerals are single, double, eightfold, tenfold, a hundredfold. 13. A cent is contained five times in a real. 14. The real,  $\frac{1}{4}$  of a peseta, is an old (*antigua*) Spanish coin, which is but rarely seen.

## TEMA XXXV

(Composition XXXV)

When one is traveling in a foreign country, one ought [to] be well acquainted with the money of that country. In Spain 2 the system of reckoning resembles that of France (*Francia*). The peseta,  $\frac{1}{5}$  of a dollar, is the unit. The real was formerly 4 a common silver coin which was worth about 5 cents of United States money. The term "real" is still used in ordinary 6 calculations. The small copper coins of 1 and 2 centimes, equal to  $\frac{1}{25}$  and  $\frac{2}{25}$  of a real respectively, are not used much 8 in every-day circulation. The pieces of 5 and 10 centimes are called "little dogs" and "big dogs," an allusion to the 10 lion on the tail of the coin. Instead of gold coin, the Spanish use bank notes, put in circulation by the Bank of Spain 12 at Madrid. These notes are of the value of 25, 50, 100, 500 and 1000 pesetas. 14

<sup>1</sup> *Pres. ind. of extenderse, 'to extend.'*

CONVERSACIÓN XXXV  
(Conversation XXXV)

1. Conjugue V. el presente de indicativo del verbo **caber**; el futuro; el imperfecto de subjuntivo. 2. ¿De qué cosas se habla en esta lección? 3. ¿Cómo se forman los números quebrados en español? 4. Dígame V. algunos numerales colectivos. 5. ¿Cómo se dice: *at two dollars a hundred, at five dollars a thousand*?

6. ¿Cuál es la unidad del dinero español? 7. ¿Cuáles son las piezas de cobre? ¿las de plata? 8. ¿Cómo se llama popularmente la moneda de 5 céntimos? ¿la de 10 céntimos? 9. ¿Le gusta a V. jugar a cara o cruz?<sup>1</sup> 10. ¿Cuándo se emplea el término «real»? 11. ¿Hay monedas de oro en España? 12. ¿Qué se emplea en vez de la moneda de oro?

LECCIÓN XXXVI  
(Lesson XXXVI)

— VERBOS  
(Verbs)

**Cambios Ortográficos**  
(Orthographic Changes)

**334.** It is a rule in Spanish that the pronunciation which the verb-stem has in the infinitive must be kept throughout the conjugation. Since certain consonants change their pronunciation according to the vowel which they precede, certain orthographic changes are necessary to preserve the sound of the infinitive stem.

NOTE. — Verbs in **-car, -gar, -guar, -zar, -cer, -cir, -ger, -gir, -guir** and **-quir**, for example, must vary the spelling of the stem before certain endings (cf. § 6).

**335.** Words of the first conjugation ending in **-car, -gar, -guar, -zar**, change respectively **c** to **qu**, **g** to **gu**, **gu** to **gü** and **z** to **c** before an **e** of the ending. This change occurs

<sup>1</sup> The game of “heads or tails” is called in Spanish **cara o cruz**.

throughout the present subjunctive and in the first person singular of the preterit.

	PRETÉRITO	PRESENTE DE SUBJUNTIVO
sacar, to draw out	saqué, sacaste, etc.	saque, saques, etc.
pagar, to pay	pagué, pagaste, etc.	pague, pagues, etc.
averiguar, to verify	averigüé, averiguaste, etc.	averigüe, averigües, etc.
gozar, to enjoy	gocé, gozaste, etc.	goce, goces, etc.

NOTE. — Verbs in *-jar* do not change *j* to *g* before *e*.

*dejar*, to leave, let                      *dejé*, dejaste, etc.

**336.** Verbs in *-cer*, *-cir*, when the *c* is preceded by a consonant, also *cocer*, 'to cook,' and *mecer*, 'to rock,' change *c* to *z* before an *a* or an *o* of the ending. This change takes place in the first person singular of the present indicative and throughout the present subjunctive.

	PRESENTE DE INDICATIVO	PRESENTE DE SUBJUNTIVO
vencer, to conquer	venzo, vences, etc.	venza, venzas, etc.
esparcir, to scatter	esparzo, esparces, etc.	esparza, esparzas, etc.
mecer, to rock	mezo, meces, etc.	meza, mezas, etc.

**337.** Verbs in *-cer*, *-cir*, when the *c* is preceded by a vowel, insert a *z* before the *c* when it is followed by an *a* or an *o* in the ending. This change, which takes place in the first person singular of the present indicative and throughout the present subjunctive, alters rather than preserves the sound of the verb-stem of the infinitive.

	PRESENTE DE INDICATIVO	PRESENTE DE SUBJUNTIVO
conocer, to know, be acquainted with	conozco, conoces, etc.	conozca, conozcas, etc.
lucir, to shine	luzco, luces, etc.	luzca, luzcas, etc.

The following verbs are exceptions:

cocer, cf. § 349	pacer, cf. § 377	balbucir, cf. § 377
hacer, cf. § 219	placer, cf. § 379	decir, cf. § 247
mecer, cf. § 336	yacer, cf. § 385	

**338.** Verbs in *-ger* and *-gir* change *g* to *j* before an *a* or an *o* of the ending. Those in *-guir* and *-quir* change *gu* to *g* and *qu* to *c* before an *a* or an *o* of the ending. These changes take

place in the first person singular of the present indicative and throughout the present subjunctive.

	PRESENTE DE INDICATIVO	PRESENTE DE SUBJUNTIVO
<b>coger</b> , to catch	<b>cojo</b> , coges, etc.	<b>coja</b> , cojas, etc.
<b>dirigir</b> , to direct, guide	<b>dirijo</b> , diriges, etc.	<b>dirija</b> , dirijas, etc.
<b>distinguir</b> , to distinguish	<b>distingo</b> , distingues, etc.	<b>distinga</b> , distingas, etc.
<b>delinquir</b> , to transgress, be delinquent	<b>delinco</b> , delinques, etc.	<b>delinca</b> , delincas, etc.

### VOCABULARIO XXXVI<sup>1</sup> (Vocabulary XXXVI<sup>1</sup>)

<b>el amor</b> , the love.	<b>la independencia</b> , the independ- ence.
<b>la batalla</b> , the battle.	<b>inspirar</b> , to inspire.
<b>la canción</b> , the song, ballad.	<b>mantener</b> , to maintain.
<b>la certeza</b> , the certainty, certi- tude.	<b>la mocedad</b> , the youthful exploit, youth, juvenility.
<b>confundir</b> , to confuse.	<b>morir</b> , to die.
<b>la crónica</b> , the chronicle.	<b>nacer</b> , to be born.
<b>defender</b> , to defend.	<b>nacional</b> , <i>adj.</i> , national.
<b>el defensor</b> , the defender.	<b>la narración</b> , the narration, relation.
<b>la Edad Media</b> , the Middle Ages.	<b>oponer</b> , to oppose.
<b>enemigo</b> , -a, inimical, hostile.	<b>la poesía</b> , the poem, poetry.
<b>escoger</b> , to choose, select.	<b>el poeta</b> , the poet.
<b>favorito</b> , -a, favorite.	<b>la proeza</b> , the prowess, bravery.
<b>glorificar</b> , to glory, praise.	<b>el sobrenombre</b> , the surname, nickname.
<b>la hazaña</b> , the deed, exploit, feat.	<b>la tragedia</b> , the tragedy.
<b>el héroe</b> , the hero.	
<b>la historia</b> , the history, story.	

### EJERCICIO XXXVI (Exercise XXXVI)

Ruy Díaz, el principal héroe nacional de España, nació en Bivar, cerca de Burgos, hacia el año 1040, y murió<sup>2</sup> en Valencia en 1099. Recibió el sobrenombre de «El Cid» por haber vencido en una batalla a cinco reyes moros. El Cid fué el defensor de su nación contra los moros, mantuvo la unidad de Castilla, y la defendió contra el reino enemigo de León. A veces, sin embargo, se opuso a los reyes de su propio país, pero los españoles de la Edad Media con su amor a la independencia admiraban la proeza personal del héroe, y celebraban sus hazañas en poesías y canciones.

<sup>1</sup> The meaning of verbs given to illustrate the orthographic changes in the grammar part of the lesson should be learned.

<sup>2</sup> *Pret. of morir.*

No se puede averiguar con certeza la verdadera historia del Cid, que se ha confundido mucho con las narraciones de los poetas que tanto le glorificaban. La historia de su vida llegó a ser un tema favorito de los poetas de todos los siglos. Además de un gran número de canciones, existen en la literatura española el célebre *Poema del Cid*, la *Crónica del Cid*, y una tragedia por Guillén de Castro, *Las Mocedades del Cid*, que inspiró directamente el drama del *Cid* por el famoso autor dramático francés, Corneille.

EJERCICIO ORAL XXXVI  
(Oral Exercise XXXVI)

1. I draw out; I drew out; that I may draw out. 2. I paid; that I may pay; that he may pay. 3. I verified; that they may verify; he verified. 4. I conquer; I scatter; I rock; I am acquainted with; I catch; I direct. 5. That he may transgress; that he may distinguish; that we may conquer; that we may be acquainted with. 6. I scattered; I shall scatter; that I may scatter; I would scatter. 7. I know the author of the French tragedy. 8. I am directing him to you. 9. I hope that you may direct me to him. 10. I am leaving the poem on the table. 11. I rock the cradle (*cuna*). 12. I know that man by his clothes. 13. The Cid was the defender of his country against the Moors. 14. There are many different stories of the great Spanish hero, Ruy Díaz. 15. The ballads are confused, and I do not distinguish my favorite. 16. I hope that he may conquer the hostile nations.

TEMA XXXVI  
(Composition XXXVI)

This year I am directing my attention (*atención*) to the study of Spanish history and literature. I began by reading several old chronicles which treat of the period between the eleventh and thirteenth centuries. I read several stories about the Cid, all of which I enjoyed very much. I am now very well acquainted with the *Poema del Cid*, which gives a good description of the many deeds of this great Spanish hero, but in all these narrations the true history of the Cid's



life seems to be a little confused (**confusa**). After reading several other works of the Middle Ages, I began the study <sup>10</sup> of the literature of the Golden Age, but here the field is so large that one can only choose some of the more important <sup>12</sup> works in each branch of literature. I am now devoting myself to the study of modern literature, which is, after all, the <sup>14</sup> most lively (**vivo**), and is a subject in which one can always interest one's self. 16

## CONVERSACIÓN XXXVI

(Conversation XXXVI)

1. Conjugue V. el presente de indicativo del verbo **vencer**; el presente de subjuntivo. 2. ¿Cómo se escribe la primera persona del pretérito del verbo **sacar**? ¿del verbo **averiguar**? ¿del verbo **gozar**? 3. ¿Se conjugan de la misma manera los verbos **mecer** y **conocer**? 4. ¿Por qué se hacen los cambios ortográficos en los verbos de esta lección?

5. ¿Quién fué el Cid? 6. ¿Por qué recibió el sobrenombre de «El Cid»? 7. ¿Qué hizo el Cid? 8. ¿Se puede averiguar con certeza la verdadera historia del Cid? 9. ¿Cuál fué un tema favorito para los poetas? 10. ¿Qué tragedia ha escrito Guillén de Castro? 11. ¿Quién era Corneille? 12. ¿Cuándo nació V., señor? 13. ¿Le gusta a V. el estudio de los verbos españoles?

## LECCIÓN XXXVII

(Lesson XXXVII)

## VERBOS

(Verbs)

## Cambios Ortográficos

(Orthographic Changes)

**339.** The following peculiarities occur in verbs whose stem ends in a vowel:

1. Whenever an unaccented *i* of the ending would normally occur between two vowels, whether in regular or irregular verbs, it is changed to *y*.

**creer**, to believe: *Inf.* creer; *Pres. Part.*, creyendo; *Past. Part.*, creído; *Pret. Ind.*, 3d Sing., creyó; 3d Plur., creyeron; *Imp. Subj.*, creyera, etc.; *Imp. Subj.*, creyese, etc.; *Fut. Subj.*, creyere, etc.

NOTE. — With verbs ending in **-guir** and **-quir**, since the **u** is used merely to preserve the hard sound of the preceding consonant and is not considered a separate vowel, the **i** does not change to **y**.

**distinguir**, to distinguish: *distinguir, distinguiendo, distinguido, distinguió, etc.*

**delinquir**, to transgress: *delinquir, delinquiendo, etc.*

2. When an accented **i** of the ending immediately follows a strong vowel of the stem, the **i** receives a written accent, even where in ordinary conjugation no written accent is used.

*Pret. of creer*: *creí, creíste, creyó, creímos, creísteis, creyeron.*

*Pres. Ind. of oír*: *oigo, oyes, oye, oímos, oís, oyen.*

340. When the verb-stem ends in **-ll-** or **-ñ-**, an unaccented **i** in the ending disappears. This occurs in present participles, in the third person singular and plural of the preterit, in both forms of the imperfect subjunctive and in the future subjunctive.

**bullir**, to boil: *Inf.*, *bullir*; *Pres. Part.*, *bullendo*; *Past Part.*, *bullido*; *Pret. 3d Sing.*, *bulló*; *3d Plur.*, *bulleron*; *Imp. Subj.*, *bullera*, etc.; *Imp. Subj.*, *bullese*, etc.; *Fut. Subj.*, *bullere*, etc.

**bruñir**, to polish: *Inf.*, *bruñir*; *Pres. Part.*, *bruñendo*; *Past Part.*, *bruñido*; *Pret. 3d Sing.*, *bruñó*; *3d Plur.*, *bruñeron*; *Imp. Subj.*, *bruñera*, etc.; *Imp. Subj.*, *bruñese*, etc.; *Fut. Subj.*, *bruñere*, etc.

341. Certain words in **-iar** and **-uar** take an accent on the **i** or the **u** throughout the singular and in the third person plural of the present indicative and of the present subjunctive, and in the singular of the imperative. Other verbs in **-iar** and **-uar** do not take the accent. It is only by practice that one can determine whether the accent falls on the **i** and the **u** or not.

### 1. **enviar**, 'to send.'

<i>Presente de Indicativo</i>	<i>envío, envías, envía, enviamos, enviáis, envían</i>
<i>Presente de Subjuntivo</i>	<i>envíe, envíes, envíe, enviemos, enviéis, envíen</i>
<i>Imperativo</i>	<i>envía</i>

### 2. **continuar**, 'to continue.'

<i>Presente de Indicativo</i>	<i>continúo, continúas, continúa, continuamos, continuáis, continúan</i>
<i>Presente de Subjuntivo</i>	<i>continúe, continúes, continúe, continuemos, continuéis, continúen</i>
<i>Imperativo</i>	<i>continúa</i>

BUT: **principiar**, to begin: *principio, principias*, etc.

**averiguar**, to verify: *averiguo, averiguas*, etc.

**santiguarse**, to cross one's self: *yo me santiguo, tu te santiguas*, etc.

# VOCABULARIO XXXVII

(Vocabulary XXXVII)

Argel, Algiers.	izquierdo, -a, left.
la armada, the armada, fleet.	literario, -a, literary.
atacar, to attack.	manco, -a, one-handed, maimed.
el buque, the boat, ship.	noble, <i>adj.</i> , noble, of noble birth.
el cautiverio, the captivity.	la patria, the fatherland, country.
el cautivo, the captive.	el pirata, the pirate.
combatir, to fight, war, combat.	publicar, to publish.
el cuento, the story, tale.	regresar, to return.
difunto, -a, dead, defunct, late.	el regreso, the return.
la educación, the education.	la reina, the queen.
embarcarse, to embark, go on board.	el rescate, the ransom.
el escritor, the writer, author.	el soldado, the soldier.
la guerra, the war.	el soneto, the sonnet.
la herida, the wound.	el turco, the Turk.
	el verso, the verse.

## EJERCICIO XXXVII

(Exercise XXXVII)

Miguel de Cervantes Saavedra, el famoso escritor español, nació en Alcalá de Henares en 1547, y murió en Madrid en 1616. Hijo de padres pobres pero nobles, recibió su educación en la Universidad de Alcalá. Principió a componer versos cuando muy joven, y en 1568 escribió unos sonetos dedicados a la difunta reina Isabel de Valois. En 1570, después de un año pasado en Italia, se embarcó como soldado en la armada que salió de Nápoles para combatir contra los turcos. Se distinguió en la célebre batalla de Lepanto, donde recibió una herida en el brazo izquierdo que le dejó manco. Después de la guerra, el buque, en que regresaba a España, fué atacado por unos piratas moriscos. Llevaron a Cervantes a Argel, donde quedó cinco años, hasta que su familia envió el dinero para pagar su rescate. Durante su cautiverio, Cervantes mostró su gusto literario escribiendo dramas que representaron los otros cautivos. Al llegar a su patria, continuó dedicándose a la literatura. Su primer libro, *La Galatea*, se publicó en 1584, cuatro años después de su regreso a España. Escribió varios cuentos que se publicaron bajo el nombre de *Novelas Ejemplares* ('Exemplary Novels'). Su obra principal, sin embargo, la que no dejará nunca morir

su nombre, es *Don Quijote de la Mancha*, obra que terminó 22  
un año antes de su muerte. Todo estudiante de literatura  
debe conocer este libro. 24

EJERCICIO ORAL XXXVII  
(Oral Exercise XXXVII)

1. He believed that it was the truth. 2. They are sending a letter to his mother. 3. I begin to understand Spanish very well. 4. If I continue the study of Spanish, I shall read *Don Quijote*. 5. He distinguished himself. 6. It boiled; that it may boil; boiling. 7. Polishing; they polished; he polished; that we may polish. 8. I embarked last Tuesday. 9. When I enter the church, I cross myself. 10. We heard the sound very easily, but he says he could not hear it without great difficulty. 11. One cannot always determine where the accent falls in the present indicative, when the verb ends in *-iar* or *-uar*. 12. Cervantes did not believe that he was going to be a captive in Algiers. 13. He read the history of Cervantes' life. 14. I send it to you. 15. Believing that it was true, they sent his ransom to the pirates.

TEMA XXXVII  
(Composition XXXVII)

Miguel de Cervantes Saavedra, the famous author of *Don Quijote*, was born in Alcalá de Henares, a little town near 2  
Madrid, in 1547. He began to write poetry when very young, but he did not devote himself entirely to literature until many 4  
years after. He was in Italy in 1570, when the Spanish and Italian fleets left Naples to fight against the Turks. He be- 6  
came a soldier, and went with the fleets, distinguishing himself in the famous battle of Lepanto. After the war he was taken 8  
by pirates to Algiers, where he believed he would not have to remain long, but his family was not able to send his 10  
ransom until five years later. While in captivity, he used to write plays which the other captives performed. When he 12  
returned to Spain, in 1580, he began to devote himself to literature, and four years later his first book was published. 14  
His masterpiece, *Don Quijote*, appeared in two parts. The first part was published in 1605, and the second in 1615, the 16  
year before his death.

### CONVERSACIÓN XXXVII (Conversation XXXVII)

1. ¿Dónde cae el acento en el presente de indicativo del verbo **enviar**? 2. ¿Cómo se escribe el gerundio del verbo **creer**? ¿del verbo **leer**? ¿del verbo **distinguir**? 3. Conjugue V. el presente de indicativo del verbo **continuar**. 4. ¿Cuál es la tercera persona del singular del pretérito de los verbos **bullir** y **bruñir**?

5. ¿De quién se habla en la lección de hoy? 6. ¿Qué hizo Cervantes en el año 1568? 7. ¿Por qué se embarcó en la armada en 1570? 8. ¿Se distinguió en la batalla de Lepanto? 9. ¿Cuándo fué atacado por piratas? 10. ¿Por qué le llevaron a Argel? 11. ¿Cuánto tiempo pasó en Argel? 12. ¿Qué escribió Cervantes durante su cautiverio? 13. ¿Cuándo se publicó su primer libro? 14. ¿Cuál es la obra maestra de Cervantes?

### LECCIÓN XXXVIII (Lesson XXXVIII)

#### VERBOS (Verbs)

#### Verbos que cambian la Vocal de la Raíz

(Verbs that Change the Stem-Vowel — *lit.* 'Vowel of the Root')

**342.** Certain verbs of the first and second conjugation (verbs in **-ar, -er**), having an **e** or an **o** in the syllable nearest the infinitive ending, change this **e** to **ie** and the **o** to **ue** whenever the tonic accent falls on that syllable. They have their regular form when the tonic accent falls on any other syllable.

The **e** and **o**, therefore, change throughout the singular and in the third person plural of the present indicative and of the present subjunctive and in the singular of the imperative. All other forms are regular.

#### **343. La Vocal de la Raíz: E. Primera Conjugación** (Stem-Vowel **E**. First Conjugation)

**Pensar**, 'to think,' 'intend.'

<i>Presente de Indicativo</i>	<b>pienso, piensas, piensa, pensamos, pensáis, piensan</b>
<i>Presente de Subjuntivo</i>	<b>piense, pienses, piense, pensemos, penséis, piensen</b>
<i>Imperativo</i>	<b>piensa, pensad</b>

All other forms are regular.

**344. La Vocal de la Raíz: E. Segunda Conjugación<sup>1</sup>**

(Stem-Vowel E. Second Conjugation)

**Perder, 'to lose.'**

<i>Presente de Indicativo</i>	<b>pierdo, pierdes, pierde, perdemos, perdéis, pierden</b>
<i>Presente de Subjuntivo</i>	<b>pierda, pierdas, pierda, perdamos, perdáis, pierdan</b>
<i>Imperativo</i>	<b>pierde, perded</b>

All other forms are regular.

**345. La Vocal de la Raíz: O. Primera Conjugación**

(Stem-Vowel O. First Conjugation)

**Contar, 'to count,' 'tell,' 'relate.'**

<i>Presente de Indicativo</i>	<b>cuento, cuentas, cuenta, contamos, contáis, cuentan</b>
<i>Presente de Subjuntivo</i>	<b>cuenta, cuentes, cuente, contemos, contéis, cuenten</b>
<i>Imperativo</i>	<b>cuenta, contad</b>

All other forms are regular.

**346. La Vocal de la Raíz: O. Segunda Conjugación**

(Stem-Vowel O. Second Conjugation)

**Mover, 'to move.'**

<i>Presente de Indicativo</i>	<b>muevo, mueves, mueve, movemos, movéis, mueven</b>
<i>Presente de Subjuntivo</i>	<b>mueva, muevas, mueva, movamos, mováis, muevan</b>
<i>Imperativo</i>	<b>mueve, moved</b>

All other forms are regular.

**347. Errar, 'to err,' 'wander,'** changes the initial *i* of *ie* to *y*, for no Spanish word may begin with *ie*.

<i>Presente de Indicativo</i>	<b>yerro, yerras, yerra, erramos, erráis, yerran</b>
<i>Presente de Subjuntivo</i>	<b>yerre, yerres, yerre, erremos, erréis, yerren</b>
<i>Imperativo</i>	<b>yerra, errad</b>

All other forms are regular.

**348. Oler, 'to smell,' 'scent,'** has an *h* before the *u* of *ue*, for no Spanish word may begin with *ue*.

<i>Presente de Indicativo</i>	<b>huelo, hueles, huele, olemos, oléis, huelen</b>
<i>Presente de Subjuntivo</i>	<b>huela, huelas, huela, olamos, oláis, huelan</b>
<i>Imperativo</i>	<b>huele, oled</b>

All other forms are regular.

NOTE. — An *h* is also inserted in the verbs **desosar**, 'to bone,' and **desovar**, 'to spawn,' wherever the accent falls on the *o* of the stem, which then changes to *ue*.

<i>Presente de Indicativo</i>	<b>deshueso, -as, -a, desosamos, -áis, deshuesan</b>
<i>Presente de Indicativo</i>	<b>deshuevo, -as, -a, desovamos, -áis, deshuevan</b>

<sup>1</sup> **Discernir**, 'to discern' (3d conj.), has similar changes.

**349. Cocer,** 'to cook,' modifies the stem-vowel and undergoes the orthographic changes indicated in § 336 rather than those indicated in § 337.

*Presente de Indicativo* cuezo, cueces, cuece, cocemos, cocéis, cuecen

*Presente de Subjuntivo* cueza, cuezas, cueza, cozamos, cozáis, cuezan

*Imperativo* cuece, coced

All other forms are regular.

**350. Jugar,**<sup>1</sup> 'to play,' changes the u to ue.

*Presente de Indicativo* juego, juegas, juega, jugamos, jugáis, juegan

*Presente de Subjuntivo* juegue, juegues, juegue, juguemos, juguéis, jueguen

*Imperativo* juega, jugad

All other forms are regular, except for orthographic changes.

## VOCABULARIO XXXVIII<sup>2</sup>

(Vocabulary XXXVIII)

advertir, to warn, notify.	el galope, the gallop, haste, speed.
el amo, the master.	el gigante, the giant.
arremeter, to attack, assail.	guiar, to guide.
así como, <i>conj.</i> , as soon as, just as.	la lanza, the lance.
el aspa, <i>f.</i> , the wing (of a windmill).	la lanzada, the blow with a lance.
atender, to mind, heed, attend (to).	la legua, the league.
comenzar, to commence, begin.	maltrecho, -a, hurt, ill-treated, misused.
desaforado, -a, huge, uncommonly large.	el molino, the mill.
descubrir, to discover.	responder, to respond, reply, answer.
el despojo, the plunder, spoils.	rodar, to roll.
encomendar, to commend, commit.	soler, to be wont, accustomed.
enriquecer, to grow rich.	tras, <i>prep.</i> , after, behind.
el escudero, the squire, page.	la ventura, the luck, fortune.
la espuela, the spur; dar de —s, to put the spurs to, spur.	el viento, the wind.
la furia, the fury.	la voz, the voice; dar voces, to cry, call out.

## EJERCICIO XXXVIII

(Exercise XXXVIII)

**Trozo de «Don Quijote» por Miguel de Cervantes Saavedra**  
(Selection from *Don Quijote*)

«En esto descubrieron treinta o cuarenta molinos de viento que hay en aquel campo; y así como don Quijote los vió, <sup>2</sup> dijo a su escudero: La ventura va guiando nuestras cosas mejor de lo que acertáramos a desear;<sup>3</sup> porque ves allí, amigo <sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Jugar means 'to play,' 'sport,' 'play a game.' 'To play' a musical instrument is translated by *tocar*.

<sup>2</sup> Beginning with this lesson, all proper names will henceforth be found in the vocabulary at the back of the book.

<sup>3</sup> *acertáramos a desear*, *trans.* 'we could have hoped for.'

Sancho Panza, donde se descubren treinta o pocos más desaforados gigantes con quien pienso hacer batalla y quitarles a todos las vidas, con cuyos despojos comenzaremos a enriquecer. . . . ¿Qué gigantes? dijo Sancho Panza. Aquellos que allí ves, respondió su amo, de los brazos largos, que<sup>1</sup> los suelen tener algunos de casi dos leguas. . . . Y diciendo esto, dió de espuelas a su caballo Rocinante, sin atender a las voces que su escudero Sancho le daba, advirtiéndole<sup>2</sup> que sin duda alguna eran molinos de viento y no gigantes aquellos que iba a acometer. . . . Levantóse en esto un poco de viento, y las grandes aspas comenzaron a moverse, lo cual visto por don Quijote, dijo: Pues aunque mováis<sup>3</sup> más brazos que los del gigante Briareo,<sup>4</sup> me lo habéis de pagar. Y en diciendo esto, y encomendándose de todo corazón a su señora Dulcinea, arremetió a todo el galope de Rocinante, y embistió<sup>5</sup> con el primer molino que estaba delante, y dándole una lanzada en el aspa, la volvió el viento con tanta furia, que hizo la lanza pedazos, llevándose tras sí al caballo y al caballero, que fué rodando muy maltrecho por el campo.»

EJERCICIO ORAL XXXVIII  
(Oral Exercise XXXVIII)

1. I think; he thinks; we think; they think. 2. I move; we move; they move. 3. I lose; we lose; they lose. 4. I play; that I may play; we play; that we may play. 5. The master warns the squire. 6. He commences to attack the windmill. 7. Giants are not accustomed to (a) call out. 8. Don Quijote rolls through the field. 9. The two men wander all (the) day, and do not find any plunder. 10. As soon as Sancho Panza saw the danger (*peligro*) of his master, he called out to him. 11. Smell these beautiful flowers. 12. They do not intend to reply until about the end of the month. 13. When the wings of the mill move, he gives them a blow with his lance. 14. I think that she cooks and takes care of the children, too. 15. Don Quijote commends himself to his lady with all his heart. 16. They put the

<sup>1</sup> *que* = *porque*, 'for.'

<sup>2</sup> *Pres. part. of advertir*.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. § 397, 4.

<sup>4</sup> The giant Briareus in Greek mythology had a hundred arms.

<sup>5</sup> *Pret. of embestir (con)*, 'to attack.'



spurs to their horses, as they are wont when they attack giants.  
17. I notify my master, and he discovers the plunder.

TEMA XXXVIII  
(Composition XXXVIII)

As soon as Don Quijote sees the windmills in the field which they are crossing, he says to his squire Sancho: "Fortune is guiding us to-day, for here are thirty giants whom I intend to attack." "I warn you," says Sancho, "that they are not giants but windmills. Can you not see their great wings?" "Those are arms, friend Sancho. Do you not know that giants are accustomed to have long arms like those?" And, in spite of all that Sancho says, Don Quijote puts the spurs to Rocinante, commends himself to his lady, and calls out that he will conquer the giants, although they have more arms than Briareus. The wind rises as he is about to attack the first mill, and the wings begin to move, breaking his lance in pieces. He and his horse roll over upon the field, and Sancho finds him very much hurt by the so-called (*supuesto*) giant.

CONVERSACIÓN XXXVIII  
(Conversation XXXVIII)

1. ¿En qué tiempos se cambia la vocal de la raíz en los verbos que estudiamos hoy? ¿en qué personas? 2. ¿Por qué se cambia en estas formas? 3. Conjugue V. el presente de indicativo del verbo **acertar**; el presente de subjuntivo; el pretérito de indicativo. 4. Conjugue V. el presente de indicativo del verbo **rodar**. 5. ¿Por qué se usa **ye** en vez de **ie** en el singular del presente de indicativo del verbo **errar**? 6. Conjugue V. el presente de subjuntivo del verbo **oler**.

7. ¿En qué libro se halla escrita la vida de Don Quijote? 8. ¿Cómo se llamaba el caballo de Don Quijote? 9. ¿Qué descubrieron Don Quijote y su escudero en el campo? 10. ¿Qué dijo Don Quijote al ver los molinos de viento? 11. ¿Qué le respondió Sancho Panza? 12. ¿A quién se encomendó antes de acometer el molino? 13. ¿Qué hizo el aspa del molino? 14. ¿Qué significa la palabra **trozo**?

## LECCIÓN XXXIX

(Lesson XXXIX)

## VERBOS IRREGULARES DE LA TERCERA CONJUGACIÓN

(Irregular Verbs of the Third Conjugation)

**351.** Some verbs of the third conjugation, having an **o** or an **e** in the syllable nearest the infinitive ending, have these modified to **ue** and **ie** respectively, when accented, like verbs of the first and second conjugations already studied. In addition, when unaccented, **o** becomes **u**, and **e** becomes **i**, if the following syllable contains a vowel other than **i** alone. This latter change takes place in the present participle, first and second persons plural of the present subjunctive, in the third person singular and plural of the preterit, throughout the two forms of the imperfect subjunctive and in the future subjunctive.

**352. dormir, 'to sleep.'**

dormir, durmiendo, dormido

## INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<b>duermo, duermes, duerme, dormimos, dormís, duermen</b>
<i>Pretérito</i>	<b>dormí, dormiste, durmió, dormimos, dormisteis, durmieron</b>

## SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<b>duerma, duermas, duerma, durmamos, durmáis, duerman</b>
<i>Imperfecto, 1ª forma:</i>	<b>durm-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran</b>
<i>Imperfecto, 2ª forma:</i>	<b>durm-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen</b>
<i>Futuro</i>	<b>durm-iere, -ieres, -iere, -iéremos, -iereis, -ieren</b>

## IMPERATIVO

**duerme****dormid**

All other forms are regular.

**353.** There are few verbs conjugated like **dormir**. The principal one is **morir**, 'to die,' which has an irregular past participle, **muerto** (cf. § 372).

**354. sentir, 'to feel.'**

sentir, sintiendo, sentido

## INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<b>siento, sientes, siente, sentimos, sentís, sienten</b>
<i>Pretérito</i>	<b>sentí, sentiste, sintió, sentimos, sentisteis, sintieron</b>

## SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	sienta, sientas, sienta, sintamos, sintáis, sientan
<i>Imperfecto, 1ª forma:</i>	sint-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran
<i>Imperfecto, 2ª forma:</i>	sint-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen
<i>Futuro</i>	sint-iere, -ieres, -iere, -iéremos, -iereis, -ieren

## IMPERATIVO

siente

sentid

All other forms are regular.

**355. Adquirir**, 'to acquire,' and **inquirir**, 'to inquire,' change the stem-vowel **i** to **ie** when the accent falls on that syllable.

*Presente de Indicativo* **adquiero, adquieres, adquiere, adquirimos, adquirís, adquieren**

*Presente de Subjuntivo* **adquiera, adquieras,quiera, adquiramos, adquiráis, adquieran**

*Imperativo* **adquiere, adquid**

All other forms are regular, for the stem has **i** where verbs like **sentir** change the stem-vowel **e** to **i**.

**356.** Some verbs of the third conjugation, having an **e** in the syllable nearest the infinitive ending, change the **e** to **i** when accented (i.e. throughout the singular and in the third person plural of the present indicative and subjunctive and in the singular of the imperative); also, when unaccented, the **e** changes to **i**, if the next syllable contains a vowel other than **i** alone. This latter change will occur in the present participle, the first and second persons plural of the present subjunctive, in the third person singular and plural of the preterit, throughout both the forms of the imperfect subjunctive and in the future subjunctive.

**357. pedir**, 'to ask (for),' 'beg,' 'crave,' 'demand.'

**pedir, pidiendo, pedido**

## INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<b>pido, pides, pide, pedimos, pedís, piden</b>
<i>Preterito</i>	<b>pedí, pediste, pidió, pedimos, pedisteis, pidieron</b>

## SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<b>pida, pidas, pida, pidamos, pidáis, pidan</b>
<i>Imperfecto, 1ª forma:</i>	<b>pid-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, ierais, -ieran</b>
<i>Imperfecto, 2ª forma:</i>	<b>pid-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen</b>
<i>Futuro</i>	<b>pid-iere, -ieres, -iere, -iéremos, -iereis, -ieren</b>

## IMPERATIVO

pide

pedid

All other forms are regular.

**358.** Verbs ending in *-eír* change the stem-vowel *e* to *i* in the instances noted above, but the *i* of the stem then assimilates the *i* of the endings that contain *ie* or *ió*.

**reír**, 'to laugh.'

reír, **riendo** (*not riiendo*), **reído**

#### INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<b>río, ríes, ríe, reímos, reís, ríen</b>
<i>Pretérito</i>	<b>reí, reíste, rió,<sup>1</sup> reímos, reísteis, rieron<sup>1</sup></b>

#### SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<b>ría, rías, ría, ríamos, ríais, rían</b>
<i>Imperfecto</i> , 1 <sup>a</sup> forma:	<b>riera,<sup>1</sup> rieras, riera, riéramos, rierais, rieran</b>
<i>Imperfecto</i> , 2 <sup>a</sup> forma:	<b>riese,<sup>1</sup> rieses, riese, riésemos, rieseis, riesen</b>
<i>Futuro</i>	<b>riere,<sup>1</sup> rieres, riere, riéremos, riereis, rieren</b>

#### IMPERATIVO

**ríe**

**reíd**

All other forms are regular.

#### VOCABULARIO XXXIX (Vocabulary XXXIX)

<b>altivo</b> , -a, haughty, proud, lofty.	<b>la faja</b> , the band, belt, border.
<b>la altura</b> , the height.	<b>hospitalario</b> , -a, hospitable.
<b>alzar</b> , to raise; —se, to rise, raise one's self.	<b>la llanura</b> , the plain, field.
<b>asentar</b> , to seat, plant, place.	<b>moruno</b> , -a, Moorish.
<b>la base</b> , the base.	<b>la muralla</b> , the wall, rampart.
<b>bello</b> , -a, beautiful.	<b>el novelista</b> , the novelist.
<b>el camino</b> , the road, way.	<b>el pedestal</b> , the pedestal, foundation.
<b>el castillo</b> , the castle.	<b>pendiente</b> , <i>adj.</i> , hanging, steep.
<b>ceñir</b> , to gird, bind, surround.	<b>recto</b> , -a, straight, direct.
<b>el cerro</b> , the hill.	<b>saludar</b> , to greet, bow, salute.
<b>conservar</b> , to preserve, keep.	<b>la sociedad</b> , the society.
<b>cual</b> , like.	<b>sonreír</b> , to smile.
<b>la curva</b> , the curve, bend.	<b>subir</b> , to ascend, mount.
<b>derecho</b> , -a, right.	<b>vadear</b> , to ford, wade.
<b>la eminencia</b> , the eminence.	<b>el valle</b> , the valley.
	<b>la venta</b> , the roadside inn.

<sup>1</sup> The forms **riyó**, **riyeron**, **riyera**, etc. are also found.

EJERCICIO XXXIX  
(Exercise XXXIX)

Trozo de «La Familia de Alvareda» por Fernán Caballero<sup>1</sup>

«Siguiendo la curva que forman las viejas murallas de Sevilla, ciñéndola cual faja de piedra, al dejar a la derecha el 2 río y las Delicias,<sup>2</sup> se encuentra la puerta de San Fernando.

Desde esta puerta se extiende en línea recta sobre la llanura 4 hasta la base del cerro llamado Buena Vista, un camino, que pasa sobre un puente de piedra el riachuelo<sup>3</sup> Tagarete, y 6 sube la cuesta bastante pendiente del cerro. . . .

Después de subida la altura, el camino la vuelve a bajar 8 por el lado opuesto, y llega a un vallecito por el cual pasa un arroyuelo.<sup>3</sup> . . . 10

Después de vadearlo, el camino sonrío a su derecha a una alegre y hospitalaria ventecilla, y saluda a su izquierda a un 12 castillo moruno, que se asienta altivo sobre una eminencia, pues no parece sino que el suelo se ha alzado para formarle 14 su pedestal.

Este castillo fué dado por Don Pedro de Castilla a su bella 16 y célebre querida Doña María de Padilla cuyo nombre conserva.» 18

<sup>1</sup> Cecilia Böhl von Faber (Arrom), better known by her pen-name Fernán Caballero, was born at Morges, on Lake Geneva, Switzerland, December 25, 1796, and died at Seville, April 7, 1877. Her father was German Consul at Seville, and her mother, a Spanish lady. She is famous among the nineteenth century authors of Spain as the first to rehabilitate the Spanish novel of manners. In 1849 appeared *La Gaviota*, 'The Sea-gull,' which, though from the pen of a woman who was half a foreigner, is genuinely Spanish in inspiration, a true product of the soil. Her works are characterized by their local color, their national spirit and their high moral aim. Indeed, their artistic perfection is not infrequently marred by excess of moralizing.

*La Familia de Alvareda* was her first novel, though it was not published until many years after it was written. The scene is laid in Andalusia, and the story is of certain tragic incidents which are said to have happened near Seville. It is doubtless her best known work.

Fernán Caballero wrote also: *Clemencia*, 'Clemency'; *El Último Consuelo*, 'The Last Consolation'; *La Noche de Navidad*, 'Christmas Night'; *Un Servilón y un Liberalito*, 'An Absolutist and a Liberal'; and many other novels that seem somewhat antiquated in style to-day.

<sup>2</sup> las Delicias, a popular promenade in Seville.

<sup>3</sup> riachuelo and arroyuelo are diminutives of río (river) and arroyo (stream), and mean 'brook' or 'creek.'

### EJERCICIO ORAL XXXIX

(Oral Exercise XXXIX)

1. I die; he dies; we die; they die. 2. I smile; we smile; they smile. 3. I am returning; we are returning; that we may return; that you may return. 4. We are surrounding; they are surrounding; that we may surround; that you may surround. 5. He slept in the little roadside inn. 6. She laughed when I told her the story. 7. A large wall surrounded the castle. 8. Fernán Caballero died in the year 1877. 9. All the children laugh when the teacher smiles. 10. When I ask for money, my father does not always give it to me. 11. The student soon acquires some knowledge of a foreign language. 12. Sleep, little [one], sleep. 13. The road descends again on the other side of the hill. 14. I warn him every day. 15. They always follow that bull-fighter. 16. He dressed himself, and went out before breakfast.

### TEMA XXXIX

(Composition XXXIX)

Fernán Caballero is one of the most famous authors and perhaps the best novelist of the first part of the nineteenth century. Her novels are truly Spanish, and in them she has wished to give a true description of the society, customs and language of the people, especially the people of the south of Spain whom she loved so much.

The selection from *La Familia de Alvarada* is a simple and interesting description, and one feels that it is full of local color (**color local**). It represents a road near Seville. We follow the road which extends in a straight line to Buena Vista hill, passes over little streams, ascends other hills and descends them again, until it finally smiles on (a) a Moorish castle.

### CONVERSACIÓN XXXIX

(Conversation XXXIX)

1. ¿En qué formas se cambia e en i, en los verbos que estudiamos hoy? 2. ¿Cuándo se cambia la vocal de la raíz? 3. Conjugue V. el presente de indicativo del verbo **morir**; el presente de subjuntivo; el pretérito de indicativo. 4. Conjugue V. el presente de indicativo del verbo **ceñir**.

5. ¿Quién es el autor del trozo que hemos leído? 6. ¿De qué libro se ha tomado el trozo? 7. ¿Dónde está Sevilla? 8. ¿Dónde se encuentra la puerta de San Fernando? 9. ¿Qué hay sobre el riachuelo Tagarete? 10. Después de vadear el arroyuelo ¿qué hay en el camino? 11. ¿Dónde está el castillo? 12. ¿Qué es un pedestal? 13. ¿Quién poseía el castillo? 14. ¿De quién conserva el nombre?

## LECCIÓN XL

(Lesson XL)

## VERBOS IRREGULARES

(Irregular Verbs)

**359. Erguir**, 'to erect,' 'lift up,' may change the initial *e* to *ie* (written *ye* because at the beginning of a word, cf. § 347) or *i*, when the accent falls on that syllable. When there is a vowel other than a single *i* in the following syllable, the *e* changes to *i* as in the case of **pedir** (cf. § 357) and verbs of its class.

erguir, irguiendo, erguido

## INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	{ yergo, yergues, yergue }	erguimos, erguís	{ yerguen
<i>Pretérito</i>	{ irgo, irgues, irgue		{ irguen
	erguí, erguiste, irguíó,	erguimos, erguisteis,	irguieron

## SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	{ yerga, yergas, yerga }	irgamos, irgáis	{ yergan
	{ irga, irgas, irga }		{ irgan
<i>Imperfecto</i> ,	1a forma: irgu-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran		
<i>Imperfecto</i> ,	2a forma: irgu-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen		
<i>Futuro</i>	irgu-iere, -ieres, -iere, -iéremos, -iereis, -ieren		

## IMPERATIVO

yergue }	
irgue }	erguid

All other forms are regular.

**360.** Verbs ending in **-uir** of which the *u* is pronounced (not those in **-guir** or **-quir**) insert a *y* after the *u* when accented, or when there is an *a* or an *o* in the following syllable. Moreover, the *i* of the endings *ie* and *ió* changes to *y*, because an unaccented *i* may not stand between two vowels (cf. § 9).

**361. construir, 'to build,' 'construct.'**

construir, construyendo, construido

## INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	construyo, construyes, construye, construimos, construís, construyen
<i>Pretérito</i>	construí, construiste, construyó, construimos, construisteis, construyeron

## SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	construya, construyas, construya, construyamos, construyáis, construyan
<i>Imperfecto</i> , 1 <sup>a</sup> forma:	construyera, construyeras, construyera, construyéramos, construyerais, construyeran
<i>Imperfecto</i> , 2 <sup>a</sup> forma:	construyese, construyeses, construyese, construyésemos, construyeseis, construyesen
<i>Futuro</i>	construyere, construyeres, construyere, construyéremos, construyereis, construyeren

## IMPERATIVO

construye

construid

All other forms are regular.

**362.** Verbs in **-guir** require the dieresis only before an **i** that is retained. It is not written before **y**.

**argüir, 'to argue.'**

argüir, arguyendo, argüido

## INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	arguyo, arguyes, arguye, argüimos, argüís, arguyen
<i>Pretérito</i>	argüí, argüiste, arguyó, argüimos, argüisteis, arguyeron

## SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	arguya, arguyas, arguya, arguyamos, arguyáis, arguyan
<i>Imperfecto</i> , 1 <sup>a</sup> forma:	arguyera, arguyeras, arguyera, arguyéramos, arguyerais, arguyeran
<i>Imperfecto</i> , 2 <sup>a</sup> forma:	arguyese, arguyeses, arguyese, arguyésemos, arguyeseis, arguyesen
<i>Futuro</i>	arguyere, arguyeres, arguyere, arguyéremos, arguyereis, arguyeren

## IMPERATIVO

arguye

argüid

All other forms are regular.

**363.** In the case of **podrir**, 'to putrefy,' 'rot,' 'decay,' the stem-vowel **o** formerly changed to **u** when it received the tonic accent, or when the next syllable contained **a**, **ie**, or **ió**. It is now **u** in all forms other than the infinitive and past participle. There is also an infinitive form **podrir**.

podrir *or* pudrir, pudriendo, podrido



### VOCABULARIO XL (Vocabulary XL)

el <b>acueducto</b> , the aqueduct.	los <b>palillos</b> , the castanets.
<b>barrer</b> , to sweep.	<b>peinar</b> , to comb, groom.
<b>bordar</b> , to embroider.	<b>pescar</b> , to fish.
<b>cazar</b> , to hunt.	la <b>precisión</b> , the precision, exactitude.
<b>contribuir</b> , to contribute.	la <b>presa</b> , the mill-dam.
<b>coser</b> , to sew.	<b>pulcro</b> , -a, beautiful, graceful.
el <b>dulce</b> , the sweetmeat, sweet dish.	el <b>quehacer</b> , the duty, chore.
<b>enseñar</b> , to teach, show.	<b>regalado</b> , -a, spoiled, pampered.
la <b>guitarra</b> , the guitar.	la <b>resulta</b> , the result, consequence.
<b>imposible</b> , <i>adj.</i> , impossible.	el <b>resultado</b> , the result.
<b>interminable</b> , <i>adj.</i> , interminable, endless.	<b>rodear</b> , to surround.
el <b>loro</b> , the parrot.	<b>saludable</b> , <i>adj.</i> , wholesome.
la <b>molienda</b> , the grinding, mill-ing.	el <b>sifón</b> , the underground conduit, siphon.
el <b>molinero</b> , the miller.	<b>trazar</b> , to trace, mark, lay out.
<b>nublado</b> , -a, cloudy.	<b>triplicar</b> , to triple.

### EJERCICIO XL (Exercise XL)

#### Trozo de «El Sombrero de Tres Picos» por Pedro A. de Alarcón<sup>1</sup>

«¡Imposible que haya<sup>2</sup> habido . . . molinero mejor peinado, mejor vestido, más regalado en la mesa, rodeado de más comodidades en su casa, que el tío Lucas! . . . Contribuía

<sup>1</sup> **Pedro Antonio de Alarcón** (born in Guadix, in the province of Granada, March 10, 1833; died in Madrid, July 18, 1891) is celebrated in the history of the modern Spanish novel chiefly as author of the work from which the above selection is taken and of another comparatively short story entitled *El Capitán Veneno*, 'Captain Poison.' Both of these works are novelettes of manners, and in this *genre* Alarcón is unsurpassed. His works of travel have also won him praise, as have some of his short stories. His longer novels: *El Escándalo*, 'The Scandal'; *La Pródiga*, 'The Prodigal'; *El Final de Norma*, 'The Finale of Norma'; and *El Niño de la Bola*, 'The Child with the Globe'; while interesting, are frequently marred by moralizings, melodramatic effects, and intemperance of language.

*El Sombrero de Tres Picos*, 'The Cocked Hat,' while inspired by an early tale, to which Alarcón acknowledges his indebtedness, is nevertheless original in treatment and thoroughly Spanish in character. The story is filled with Andalusian atmosphere and is told with perfect charm of manner. The scene is an old mill; the chief characters, *el tío Lucas* and his devoted wife, *la seña Frasquita*; the plot, an ineffectual attempt on the part of the *Corregidor*, or 'Mayor,' to win away the affection of the faithful Frasquita.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. § 392, 5.

mucho a ello que la señá<sup>1</sup> Frasquita,<sup>2</sup> la pulcra . . . , fuerte y 4  
 saludable navarra,<sup>3</sup> sabía, quería y podía . . . coser, bordar,  
 barrer, hacer dulces, lavar, planchar, . . . cantar, bailar, tocar 6  
 la guitarra y los palillos . . . y otras muchísimas cosas cuya  
 relación fuera interminable. — Y contribuía no menos al 8  
 mismo resultado el que el tío Lucas sabía, quería y podía  
 dirigir la molienda, cultivar el campo, cazar, pescar, trabajar 10  
 de carpintero, de herrero y de albañil, ayudar a su mujer en  
 todos los quehaceres de la casa, leer, escribir, contar, etc., 12  
 etc. . . . Tenía algo de ingeniero natural, y lo había demo-  
 strado construyendo una presa, un sifón y un acueducto que 14  
 triplicaron el agua del molino. Había enseñado a bailar a  
 un perro, . . . y hecho que un loro diese<sup>4</sup> la hora por medio 16  
 de gritos, según las iba marcando un reloj de sol que el  
 molinero había trazado en una pared; de cuyas resultas el 18  
 loro daba ya la hora con toda precisión, hasta en los días  
 nublados y durante la noche.» 20

### EJERCICIO ORAL XL

(Oral Exercise XL)

1. I construct; he constructs; we construct; they construct.  
 2. I argue; he argues; we argue. 3. I erect; I erected; that I may  
 erect. 4. He contributed; that he may contribute. 5. They  
 constructed an aqueduct. 6. The miller used to argue with  
 his wife. 7. How do you construct this sentence in Spanish?  
 8. Many things in the garden are rotting this year. 9. I fol-  
 lowed the river in the beautiful valley. 10. The miller's wife  
 could play the castanets. 11. The miller himself had already  
 constructed a mill-dam. 12. The parrot used to lift up its  
 head and tell the hour. 13. Arguing sometimes helps one.  
 14. Fanny can sweep, embroider, sew and play the guitar.  
 15. This contributes a good deal to the happiness (*felicidad*)  
 of the family. 16. They instituted a series of games for the  
 little children.

<sup>1</sup> *Señá* is a popular corruption of *señora*.

<sup>2</sup> *Frasquita* is one of the many diminutives of *Francisca*; it may be translated '*Fanny*.'

<sup>3</sup> *Navarra*, native of Navarre, a Navarrese.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. 392, 2.

TEMA XL  
(Composition XL)

Pedro Antonio de Alarcón has written many kinds of novels, but his best are without doubt to be found among those that are of a truly Spanish inspiration (*inspiración*). The most famous of these is *El Sombrero de Tres Picos*, a description of rural (*rural*) customs. The selection of to-day presents an excellent example of his style (*estilo*). The use of repetition in all this selection contributes greatly to the spirit and animation of the story. The many aptitudes (*aptitudes*) of the marvelous couple (*pareja*) are told in a very interesting and amusing way. Tío Lucas, who is carpenter, mason, blacksmith, or engineer, as the case requires, who constructs aqueducts, and who can teach a parrot to hold up its head and tell the hour by means of a sun dial, is no cleverer than his pretty wife, who can sew, sweep, wash, iron, sing, dance, play the guitar and do a thousand other things.

CONVERSACIÓN XL  
(Conversation XL)

1. Conjugue V. el presente de indicativo del verbo **erguir**; el pretérito; el imperfecto de subjuntivo. 2. Conjugue V. el presente de indicativo del verbo **instituir**; el pretérito de indicativo. 3. ¿Cuáles son las dos formas del infinitivo del verbo que significa 'to rot,' 'to decay'?

4. ¿Qué clase de molinero era el tío Lucas? 5. ¿Qué sabía hacer la señá Frasquita? 6. ¿Toca V. la guitarra? 7. ¿Ayudaba a su mujer el tío Lucas? 8. ¿Qué había construido para triplicar el agua del molino? 9. ¿Qué enseñó al loro? 10. ¿Es posible dar la hora durante la noche con un reloj de sol? 11. ¿Quién es el autor de *El Sombrero de Tres Picos*? 12. ¿Puede V. decirme algo de él? 13. ¿Le gusta a V. el trozo en la lección de hoy? 14. ¿Cómo se traduce la palabra **Frasquita**?

## LECCIÓN XLI

(Lesson XLI)

## PARTICIPIOS PASIVOS IRREGULARES

(Irregular Past Participles)

364. Past participles that do not end in **-ado** or **-ido** are irregular.

365. The following regular verbs and their compounds have irregular past participles:

<b>abrir</b> , to open	<b>ABIERTO</b>
<b>absorber</b> , to absorb	<b>ABSORTO</b>
<b>abrir</b> , to cover	<b>CUBIERTO</b>
<b>escribir</b> , <sup>1</sup> to write	<b>ESCRITO</b>
<b>imprimir</b> , to print	<b>IMPRESO</b>

366. There are some verbs, otherwise regular, that have two forms in the past participle, one regular and the other irregular.

<b>prender</b> , to seize, take, catch, arrest	<b>prendido</b>	<b>PRESO</b>
<b>proveer</b> , to provide	<b>proveído</b>	<b>PROVISTO</b>
<b>romper</b> , to break	<b>rompido</b>	<b>ROTO</b>
<b>freír</b> , to fry	<b>freído</b>	<b>FRITO</b>

367. In the sense of 'take,' **preso** is usually employed adjectively and **prendido** as the real past participle. In the sense of 'arrest,' **preso** may be used participially, but is falling into disuse and is commonly regarded as an adjective.

**El fuego ha prendido en la casa**  
**los dos ladrones presos**

The fire broke out in the house  
the two arrested robbers

NOTE. — The compounds of **prender**, such as **aprender**, 'to learn,' **comprender**, 'to understand,' and **emprender**, 'to undertake,' have regular past participles.

368. The regular past participle **proveído** is commonly used to form the compound tenses, although **provisto** may be so employed. The latter is used adjectively.

**Ha proveído todo lo necesario**  
**las cosas provistas**

He has provided everything necessary  
the things provided

369. **Rompido** is used when the verb is intransitive, but **roto** in all other cases.

**Ha rompido con su tío**  
**Ha roto el vaso**

He has broken with his uncle  
He has broken the glass

<sup>1</sup> **Inscribir**, 'to inscribe,' and **proscribir**, 'to proscribe,' have also the forms **inscripto** and **proscripto**.

NOTE. — Compounds of **romper** are conjugated with the regular past participle.

**corromper**, to corrupt: **corrompido**

**370.** **Freído** or **frito** may be used in compound tenses with **haber**, but as an adjective only **frito** is used.

<b>Han freído (or frito) las patatas</b>	They have fried the potatoes
<b>patatas fritas</b>	fried potatoes

**371.** There are a number of other verbs that have two past participles, but the regular form has come to be used verbally and the irregular form adjectively. The following verbs will serve as examples:

<b>bendecir</b> , to bless	<b>bendecido</b>	<b>BENDITO</b>
<b>confundir</b> , to confuse	<b>confundido</b>	<b>CONFUSO</b>
<b>corregir</b> , to correct	<b>corregido</b>	<b>CORRECTO</b>
<b>extender</b> , to extend	<b>extendido</b>	<b>EXTENSO</b>
<b>fijar</b> , to fix, notice, observe	<b>fijado</b>	<b>FIJO</b>
<b>oprimir</b> , to oppress	<b>oprimido</b>	<b>OPRESO</b>
<b>suprimir</b> , to suppress	<b>suprimido</b>	<b>SUPRESO</b>

**372.** There are also some irregular verbs with irregular past participles, several of which have already been studied, but which will be grouped here for convenience.

<b>decir</b> (§ 247), <b>DICHO</b>	<b>solver</b> (§§ 346, 374), <b>SUELTO</b>
<b>hacer</b> (§ 219), <b>HECHO</b>	<b>ver</b> (§ 296), <b>VISTO</b>
<b>morir</b> (§ 353), <b>MUERTO</b>	<b>volver</b> (§ 346), <b>VUELTO</b>
<b>poner</b> (§ 233), <b>PUESTO</b>	and their compounds

**373.** **Muerto**, meaning 'killed,' is used in an active sense instead of **matado** (*pp. of matar*) when referring to persons, but not animals. When intransitive it means 'died.'

<b>Han muerto al soldado</b>	They killed the soldier
<b>Mi amigo se ha muerto</b>	My friend has died
<b>Han matado al toro</b>	They have killed the bull

**374.** **Solver**, 'to solve,' 'loosen,' is not much used, except in compounds: **resolver**, 'to resolve'; **absolver**, 'to absolve'; etc. The past participle **suelto** is irregular, and is often used adjectively.

#### VOCABULARIO XLI (Vocabulary XLI)

<b>la acequia</b> , the canal, trench.	<b>cristalino</b> , -a, crystalline, transparent.
<b>ameno</b> , -a, pleasant, delightful.	<b>estimar</b> , to esteem, value, estimate.
<b>circundar</b> , to surround.	
<b>el cortijo</b> , the farm-house, manse.	

la felicidad, the happiness.	el objeto, the object.
grato, -a, pleasing, pleasant.	el olivar, the olive-grove.
hecho, -a ( <i>pp. of hacer</i> ), fully matured, developed, grown into.	oloroso, -a, fragrant.
la huerta, the (fruit or vegetable) garden, irrigated land.	la orilla, the shore, bank, border.
la imaginación, the imagination.	el pariente, the relation, kinsman.
el instante, the instant, moment.	el ramo, the bouquet, bunch, limb.
el labrador, the farmer, rustic.	rico, -a, rich.
lindo, -a, pretty, nice.	el seminario, the seminary, school.
la memoria, the memory.	la senda, the path.
el murmullo, the whisper, murmur, ripple.	venerable, <i>adj.</i> , venerable.
el nacimiento, the birth.	el vicario, the vicar.
	la viña, the vineyard.
	la violeta, the violet.

### EJERCICIO XLI (Exercise XLI)

#### Trozo de «Pepita Jiménez» por Juan Valera<sup>1</sup>

22 de marzo

«Querido tío y venerable maestro: Hace cuatro días que 2  
llegué con toda felicidad a este lugar de mi nacimiento, donde  
he hallado bien de salud a mi padre, al señor Vicario y a los 4  
amigos y parientes. . . . Como salí de aquí tan niño y he vuelto  
hecho un hombre, es singular la impresión que me causan 6  
todos estos objetos que guardaba en la memoria. Todo me

<sup>1</sup> Juan Valera y Alcalá Galiano (born in Cabra, near Cordova, October 18, 1824; died, April 18, 1905) was the purest stylist among the recent Spanish novelists. Whether his long diplomatic career ("He had been legation secretary in many capital cities the world over, and minister plenipotentiary at important posts, among them Lisbon [1881], Washington [1885], and Brussels [1886], and ambassador to Austria [1893]") had fostered a tendency toward careful utterance and sobriety of expression, or not, certain it is that in no other Spanish writer of the day can be found the polish of phrase that characterizes everywhere the writings of Valera, and gives to them an eighteenth century flavor, enjoyed particularly by the literary élite. He was not a prolific writer like Galdós, nor is he enjoyed by so large a public. His "elusive and mystic idealism" is not suited to the taste of the masses.

*Pepita Jiménez*, his masterpiece, is a philosophical novel, and in it the author attempts to prove that a youth should be given complete freedom in the choice of his vocation, and that a priest "is born and not made." The first half of the story is told by way of letters from a nephew, destined for the priesthood, to his uncle, an ecclesiastic who had had charge of his religious education. The above selection is a portion of one of these letters.

Two other novels of Juan Valera, *Doña Luz* and *El Comendador Mendoza*, are considered masterpieces, almost, if not quite, the equals of *Pepita Jiménez*. They are both philosophical or psychological, rather than realistic, novels.

parece mucho más chico, pero también más bonito que el re- 8  
cuerdo que tenía. La casa de mi padre, que en mi imaginación  
era inmensa, es sin duda una gran casa de un rico labrador, 10  
pero más pequeña que el Seminario. Lo que ahora com-  
prendo y estimo mejor es el campo de por aquí. Las huertas, 12  
sobre todo, son deliciosas. ¡Qué sendas tan lindas hay entre  
ellas! A un lado . . . corre el agua cristalina con grato mur- 14  
mullo. Las orillas de las acequias están cubiertas de hierbas  
olorosas y de flores de mil clases. En un instante puede uno 16  
coger un gran ramo de violetas. . . . Mi padre quiere llevarme  
a ver sus olivares, sus viñas, sus cortijos; pero nada de esto 18  
hemos visto aún. No he salido del lugar y de las amenas  
huertas que le circundan.» 20

EJERCICIO ORAL XLI  
(Oral Exercise XLI)

1. Opened; covered; given; said; written. 2. Done; printed;  
died; seen; placed. 3. He has broken the two new glasses.  
4. My father has covered his face with his hands. 5. The church  
has proscribed meat on Fridays. 6. The son has not yet seen  
his father's olive-groves. 7. We have put a bunch of violets on  
the table. 8. His father had provided many pretty paths.  
9. The vicar has died to-day. 10. The farmer has returned from  
the garden. 11. Are these the things provided? 12. Many  
rules have been suppressed. 13. These are the suppressed rules.  
14. The young man has written several letters to his uncle.  
15. The vicar had already blessed the people, and the doors of  
the church were open, when he arrived. 16. All that could be  
heard was the sound of confused voices.

TEMA XLI  
(Composition XLI)

Until *Pepita Jiménez* appeared in 1874, Juan Valera had  
written very little, but this, his first novel, is his master- 2  
piece. In it there is very little action; the interest is rather  
psychological (**psicológico**). In fact, many of Juan Valera's 4  
novels are of this class. This makes them somewhat diffi-  
cult for the general public (**vulgo**), and consequently his 6  
readers (**lectores**) are limited.

The first part of *Pepita Jiménez* is a series of letters, 8 written to his uncle by a young man who has returned to his father's home, after several years passed in the seminary. 10 The selection in to-day's lesson is a part of the first letter, in which the young man gives a description of the beautiful 12 country which surrounds his home. He praises the delightful gardens of this part of southern Spain. He describes 14 the canals, the shores of which are covered with a thousand kinds of fragrant flowers, the olive-groves, the vineyards 16 and the farmhouses of his father's estate (*hacienda*).

### CONVERSACIÓN XLI (Conversation XLI)

1. ¿Cuáles son los verbos regulares que tienen participios pasivos irregulares? 2. ¿Cuáles son algunos verbos irregulares cuyos participios pasivos son irregulares? 3. ¿Qué verbos tienen dos formas de participio pasivo? 4. ¿La forma irregular se emplea como participio o como adjetivo?

5. ¿Quién es el autor del trozo de la lección de hoy? 6. ¿A quién escribe el autor de la carta en el trozo de hoy? 7. ¿Cuándo escribió la carta? 8. ¿Cuándo llegó a la casa de su padre? 9. ¿Cuál fué la impresión que le causaban los objetos que guardaba en la memoria? 10. ¿Qué dice de las huertas? 11. ¿Puede V. darme una descripción del campo donde vive el autor de la carta? 12. ¿Qué se puede coger en las orillas de las acequias?

### LECCIÓN XLII (Lesson XLII)

#### VERBOS DEFECTIVOS O RAROS (Defective or Rare Verbs)

**375. Antojarse**, 'to long for,' 'desire earnestly,' 'choose,' 'occur' (to some one), is used only in the third person singular and plural of the various tenses.

Lo hace cuando se le antoja

He does it when he chooses

**376. Atañer**, 'to appertain,' and **aplayer**, 'to please,' are seldom found, and their use is confined to the third person singular and plural of the present and imperfect indicative.



**377. Balbucir**, 'to stammer,' and **pacer**, 'to graze,' are not used in the forms in which verbs ending in **-cir** and **-cer** preceded by a vowel take **z** before **c** (cf. § 337). The verb **balbuciar**, 'to stammer,' is more common than **balbucir**.

**378. Concernir**, 'to concern,' is used only in the third person singular and plural of the various tenses. The stem-vowel **e** changes to **ie** when accented.

**379. Placer**, 'to please,' is an impersonal verb rarely used except in exclamations.

*placer, placiendo, placido*

#### INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<i>place</i>
<i>Imperfecto</i>	<i>placía</i>
<i>Preterito</i>	<i>plugo or plació</i>
<i>Futuro</i>	<i>placerá</i>
<i>Condicional</i>	<i>placería</i>

#### SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<i>plega, plegue, or plazca</i>
<i>Imperfecto, 1ª forma:</i>	<i>pluguiera or placiera</i>
<i>Imperfecto, 2ª forma:</i>	<i>pluguiese or placiese</i>
<i>Futuro</i>	<i>pluguere or placiere</i>

NOTE. — The compounds of **placer**, **complacer**, 'to humor,' and **desplacer** (or **displacer**), 'to displease,' are conjugated like verbs in **-cer** preceded by a vowel (cf. § 337).

**380. Raer**, 'to erase,' is rarely used, its place being taken by **rayar** or **borrar**. It is conjugated like **caer** (cf. § 224), except that in the first person of the present indicative and throughout the subjunctive it has a second form.

*raer, rayendo, raído*

#### INDICATIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<i>raigo or rayo, raes, rae, etc.</i>
-----------------	---------------------------------------

#### SUBJUNTIVO

<i>Presente</i>	<i>raiga or raya, raigas or rayas, etc.</i>
-----------------	---

**381. Reponer**, when meaning 'to reply,' is scarcely used except in the preterit.

**382. Roer**, 'to gnaw,' has three forms in the first person of the present indicative and throughout the present subjunctive. Otherwise it is regular.

roer, royendo, roído

## INDICATIVO

*Presente* { roo  
roigo  
royo } roes, roe, roemos, roéis, roen

## SUBJUNTIVO

*Presente* { roa, roas, roa, roamos, roáis, roan  
roiga, roigas, roiga, roigamos, roigáis, roigan  
roya, royas, roya, royamos, royáis, royan

**383.** Corroer, 'to corrode,' is seldom used, except in the participles and in the third person.

**384.** Soler, 'to be wont,' 'be accustomed,' is rarely used, except in the present and imperfect indicative. In these tenses it is conjugated like mover (cf. § 346).

**385.** yacer,<sup>1</sup> 'to lie.'

yacer, yaciendo, yacido

## INDICATIVO

*Presente* { yazco  
yazgo  
yago } yaces, yace, yacemos, yacéis, yacen

*Imperfecto* yac-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían

*Preterito* yac-í, -iste, -ió, -imos, -isteis, -ieron

*Futuro* yacer-é, -ás, -á, -emos, -éis, -án

*Condicional* yacer-ía, -ías, -ía, -íamos, -íais, -ían

## SUBJUNTIVO

*Presente* { yazca, yazcas, yazca, yazcamos, yazcáis, yazcan  
yazga, yazgas, yazga, yazgamos, yazgáis, yazgan  
yaga, yagas, yaga, yagamos, yagáis, yagan

*Imperfecto*, 1ª forma: yac-iera, -ieras, -iera, -iéramos, -ierais, -ieran

*Imperfecto*, 2ª forma: yac-iese, -ieses, -iese, -iésemos, -ieseis, -iesen

*Futuro* yac-iere, -ieres, -iere, -iéremos, -iereis, -ieren

## IMPERATIVO

yace or yaz

yaced

## VOCABULARIO XLII

(Vocabulary XLII)

amarillento, -a, yellowish, golden.

la ansiedad, the state of anxiety, eagerness.

áspero, -a, rough, rugged.

la bajada, the descent.

el cielo, the sky, heaven.

cierto, -a, certain.

el código, the code (of laws).

concluir, to conclude, end.

el cristiano, the Christian.

la cúpula, the cupola, dome.

<sup>1</sup> Yacer has fallen into disuse, and is rarely employed, except in the third person singular and plural of the present and imperfect indicative, in poetry, and in epitaphs: *Aquí yace*, 'Here lies,' etc. It has had the same fate as *gésir* in French.

el detalle, the detail.  
 echar, to throw, cast.  
 el efecto, the effect; **en** —, in fact.  
 el horizonte, the horizon.  
 la jornada, the trip, journey.  
 meter, to put (in).  
 mirar, to look, look at.  
 la montaña, the mountain.  
 nombrar, to name, mention.  
 pelado, -a, bare, treeless, bald.  
 la población, the city, town, population.

la posada, the inn, hotel.  
 la proximidad, the proximity, nearness.  
 rayar, to border on, begin, appear.  
 recomendar, to recommend.  
 lo restante, the remainder.  
 el sembrado, the planted field.  
 la subida, the ascent.  
 la tierra, the earth, land.  
 versado, -a, versed, experienced.

### EJERCICIO XLII (Exercise XLII)

#### Trozo de «Pedro Sánchez» por José M. de Pereda<sup>1</sup>

«Y andando andando,<sup>2</sup> es decir,<sup>3</sup> rodando rodando, concluyéronse las llanuras, y comenzó la subida del áspero y largo 2  
 Guadarrama. A la bajada de él me dijo don Serafín, echándome una mano sobre el hombro derecho y señalando con la 4  
 izquierda hacia el horizonte del Sur: — ¡Allí le tiene usted! La cúpula de San Francisco el Grande, la torre de Santa Cruz. 6  
 Aquello es Madrid.

Miré con ansiedad hacia donde me señalaba el dedo de 8  
 don Serafín, y, en efecto, vi cuanto me iba nombrando, alzándose sobre un cerro amarillento y pelado. . . . 10

No se habló más que de Madrid en todo lo restante de la

<sup>1</sup> José María de Pereda (born at Polanco, near Santander, February 6, 1833; died March 1, 1906) was one of the masters of the modern Spanish novel. His life was spent, for the most part, in patriarchal simplicity among the mountains along the coast of northern Spain, and it is with rare power and comprehension that he describes in many of his works the customs of the people of the mountains and the "Bay."

In *Pedro Sánchez* Pereda has left his mountains of the north for Madrid. The above description records his own entrance into the capital, when he went there as a youth to pursue his studies in military science.

Other novels of importance from the same pen are: *Tipos y Paisajes*, 'Types and Landscapes'; *Los Hombres de Pro*, 'Respectable Folk'; *El Buey Suelto*, 'The Unyoked Ox'; *Don Gonzalo González de la Gonzalera*; *De Tal Palo, Tal Astilla*, 'A Chip of the Old Block'; *El Sabor de la Tierruca*, 'Redolent of the Soil'; *Sotileza*, 'Fine Spun'; *La Montálvez*; *La Puchera*, 'The Family Board'; *Nubes de Estío*, 'Summer Clouds'; *Al Primer Vuelo*, 'The First Flight'; and *Peñas Arriba*, 'Up the Crags.'

<sup>2</sup> *Andando andando*. This construction is occasionally seen in Spanish, and is used when it is desired to emphasize strongly the progressive character of the act.

<sup>3</sup> *Translate*, 'that is to say.'

jornada. El estudiantillo metió la cuchara en<sup>1</sup> la conversación 12 muchas veces, y aun se me antojó más versado en las cosas de Madrid que en los códigos de Justiniano. Me recomendó 14 cierta posada en la calle del Caballero de Gracia. . . . Y en éstas y otras tales, al rayar el mediodía, sin un árbol, ni un 16 sembrado, ni un detalle de los mil que anuncian en toda tierra de cristianos la proximidad a una gran población, 18 llegamos a la puerta de San Vicente, y veinte minutos después, a la calle de Alcalá.» 20

EJERCICIO ORAL XLII  
(Oral Exercise XLII)

1. It occurs to me. 2. It appertains; it concerns; it pleases. 3. I erase; that I may erase; that he may gnaw. 4. Here lies; here lie; I lie. 5. "May it please God," he replied. 6. The ascent of the rugged Guadarrama displeased me. 7. This code does not concern the Christians. 8. The city lay in a beautiful valley. 9. The student was wont to speak more of Madrid than of the codes of Justinian. 10. It was noon when we arrived at a little inn near the city. 11. This, in fact, concluded the journey. 12. Here lies the body of San Francisco. 13. He visits these laboratories when he chooses. 14. "I cannot do it," he stammered. 15. The verb **concernir** is used only in the third person of the various tenses. 16. The students were wont to reply slowly.

TEMA XLII  
(Composition XLII)

José María de Pereda was born, and passed most of his life, near Santander. In 1852, his parents sent him to Madrid, 2 in order to prepare (**preparar**) him for the army (**ejército**), which, however, he never entered.<sup>2</sup> After two years spent 4 in Madrid, he returned to Santander to devote himself to literature. 6

With one exception, *Pedro Sánchez*, all of the best works of Pereda are descriptions of the people of the mountains 8 and of the sea near which he lived. It was during his stay (**estancia**) in Madrid that Pereda obtained material which he 10 later used in *Pedro Sánchez*. The entrance into Madrid, which

<sup>1</sup> Translate, 'entered into.'

<sup>2</sup> Use, *entrar en*.

is described in to-day's lesson, is his own entrance of many 12 years before. His is the eagerness to (de) see the first signs (los señales) of Madrid, and his the surprise at finding neither 14 trees nor planted fields near the great city. Madrid lies, as he tells us, on a sandy, treeless hill, and the very gates of the 16 city are reached without a single detail to (para) announce its proximity. 18

### CONVERSACIÓN XLII (Conversation XLII)

1. ¿Cuáles son los dos verbos más comunes de los verbos defectivos? 2. ¿Cuándo se usa el verbo **placer**? 3. ¿Cuántas formas tiene el verbo **roer** en la primera persona del presente de indicativo? 4. ¿Qué significa el verbo **soler**? 5. ¿Cuándo se emplea el verbo **yacer**?

6. ¿Cuándo señaló don Serafín hacia el horizonte del Sur? 7. ¿De qué se habló en todo lo restante de la jornada? 8. ¿Quién metió la cuchara en la conversación? 9. ¿Qué había estudiado el estudiantillo? 10. ¿Dónde estaba la posada que recomendó? 11. ¿Qué clase de tierra se ve antes de llegar a la ciudad de Madrid? 12. ¿Quién es el autor de *Pedro Sánchez*? 13. Dígame V. algo de él.

### LECCIÓN XLIII (Lesson XLIII)

#### SUBJUNTIVO EN CLÁUSULAS INDEPENDIENTES (Subjunctive in Independent Clauses)

**386.** The subjunctive is used in independent clauses as follows:

1. With an imperative or optative idea, in the present tense, in the first and third persons when affirmative, and in all persons when negative. In the affirmative, the objective personal pronouns are regularly appended, but in the negative they regularly precede the verb. Such expressions may be introduced by the conjunction **que**, but are commonly used without, except in the third person.

(Que) siga V. leyendo

Dígamelo V.

No me lo digas (*not* No dímelo)

Sepamos lo pasado

Viva la República

Que venga

Continue reading

Tell it to me

Don't tell it to me

Let us know what happened

Long live the Republic

Let him come

2. After *ojalá*, 'would that,' 'God grant that,' to express a wish or desire.

¡Ojalá que venga!

Oh that he may come!

¡Ojalá que fuese verdad!

Would that it were true!

3. In certain elliptical expressions after *quién*, to express a wish or desire.

¡Quién supiera escribir!

If { I }  
one } could only write!

4. In indeterminate expressions involving indifference, many of which are correlative in idea.

que lo haga o no, whether he does it or not

(que) quieras o no quieras, whether you will or no, willy-nilly  
viniese lo que viniese, come what might

5. In modified assertions after an interrogative or a negative, the present subjunctive of *saber*, *recordar*, *ver*, etc., is used.

¿Ha venido tu padre?—No que yo  
sepa

Has your father come?—Not that I  
know of

No le he visto jamás que yo recuerde

I have never seen him so far as I re-  
member

## SUBJUNTIVO EN CLÁUSULAS DEPENDIENTES

(Subjunctive in Dependent Clauses)

### Sucesión de Tiempos

(Sequence of Tenses)

387. A present tense (including present subjunctive and imperative) or a future tense in the governing or principal clause requires the present subjunctive in the dependent clause, if the verb in the dependent clause expresses action that is simultaneous with, or subsequent to, the action of the governing verb. It requires, however, a past tense of the subjunctive, if the verb in the dependent clause expresses action that was prior to that of the governing verb.

Quiero que usted lo sepa

I wish you to know it

Mandaré que sea V. encarcelado  
(present of the passive voice)

He will order you to be imprisoned

BUT:

Es dudoso que { viniera or  
hubiera venido

It is doubtful that he would have  
come

Será fácil que él lo haya hecho }  
Será fácil que él lo hiciese }

It may be that he did it

**388.** A past tense in the governing or principal clause requires the imperfect subjunctive in the dependent clause, if the verb in the dependent clause expresses action that is simultaneous with, or subsequent to, the action of the governing verb. It requires, however, the pluperfect subjunctive, if the verb in the dependent clause expresses action that was prior to that of the governing verb.

Él quería que	{	vinieran viniesen	}	He wished them to come
BUT: Él quería que	{	hubieran hubiesen	}	venido He wished that they had come

**389.** A conditional or a perfect tense in the governing or principal clause may be followed by the present or the imperfect subjunctive (with little or no distinction in meaning), if the verb in the dependent clause expresses action that is simultaneous with, or subsequent to, the action of the governing verb. It requires, however, the pluperfect subjunctive, if the verb in the dependent clause expresses action that was prior to that of the governing verb.

Me gustaría que	{	venga viniera or viniese	}	I should like to have him come
Ha mandado que los muchachos	{	sean ( <i>present passive</i> ) fueran or fuesen ( <i>imperfect passive</i> )	}	castigados

He has ordered the boys to be punished

BUT:

Me gustaría que hubiera (or hubiese) venido	I should like to have had him come
Hemos temido (de) que se hubiera muerto	We have feared lest he had died

**390.** Exceptions may be found to the general rules for the sequence of tenses, as, for example, when the tense of the subordinate clause is independent of the tense of the principal clause, and the logic of the sentence requires a violation of the normal sequence. (The rules already stated embrace certain cases of this sort.)

Dios nos dió ojos para que veamos	God gave us eyes to see
Temo de que V. se lastimara	I fear you might hurt yourself

## VOCABULARIO XLIII

(Vocabulary XLIII)

- la **advocación**, the appellation  
(*given to church, etc., dedicated to the Virgin*).  
**apenas**, *adv.*, scarcely, hardly.  
la **astronomía**, the astronomy.  
**bastar**, to suffice, be enough.  
el **canto**, the song.  
**casar**, to marry (*trans.*); —*se*,  
to marry (*intrans.*).  
el **catecismo**, the catechism.  
el **colegio**, the college, seminary.  
el **deber**, the duty, obligation, debt.  
**digno**, —*a*, worthy.  
la **dueña**, the mistress, owner.  
**encerrar**, to lock up, shut up,  
confine.  
**enviudar**, to become a widower  
(*or widow*).  
la **física**, the physics.  
la **geografía**, the geography.
- horrible**, *adj.*, horrid, dreadful,  
horrible.  
la **monserga**, the confusion, gabble.  
la **noción**, the notion, idea.  
el **organillo**, the hand-organ, little  
organ.  
**personalmente**, *adv.*, person-  
ally, in person.  
**piadoso**, —*a*, pious.  
el **piano**, the piano.  
**presidir**, to preside.  
**profano**, —*a*, profane, secular.  
**regular**, *adj.*, fairly good, regu-  
lar.  
**residir**, to reside.  
**sagrado**, —*a*, sacred.  
el **sonsonete**, the drone, rattle.  
**único**, —*a*, sole, only.  
**volar**, to fly, soar.

## EJERCICIO XLIII

(Exercise XLIII)

Trozo de «Gloria» por Benito Pérez Galdós<sup>1</sup>

«Don Juan de Lantigua no había presidido personalmente a la educación de su única hija; . . . creía que con encerrarla 2 en un colegio bastaba. . . . Advirtamos que D. Juan enviudó

<sup>1</sup> Benito Pérez Galdós (born at Las Palmas in the Canary Islands, May 10, 1845) has been called the chief of the contemporary Spanish novelists. He is certainly the most prolific. Galdós is the author of a great series of novels, known as *Episodios Nacionales*, 'National Episodes,' which are historical novels somewhat after the type of those of Erckmann-Chatrian. Important as is this collection of novels, it is rather from the works that comprise another collection, known as *Novelas Españolas Contemporáneas*, 'Contemporary Spanish Novels,' that the fame of Galdós has spread to foreign lands. These are studies of modern Spanish life and character. Throughout his works Galdós shows himself to be a profound moralist and an enemy of ignorance and intolerance. His style, while not faultless, is virile and vivacious. As a dramatist Galdós has also won his laurels, especially in the play *Electra*.

*Gloria* treats of religious toleration. The hero is a Jew, who clings to the tradition of his race, and the heroine, a Spanish girl, who adheres no less tenaciously to her own religious principles. The education of Gloria as depicted in the above selection is typical of that of many Spanish girls.

Other novels of Galdós of particular fame are: *Doña Perfecta*; *La Familia de León Roch*, 'The Family of León Roch'; *Marianela*; *El Doctor Centeno*,



a los catorce años de casado. Su digna esposa le dejó a Gloria, 4  
de doce años, y a dos pequeñitos que volaron al cielo, desde  
Ficóbriga,<sup>1</sup> cuando apenas habían aprendido a andar por la 6  
tierra.

Gloria, después de residir algunos años en un colegio, a 8  
que daba nombre una de las advocaciones más piadosas de  
la Virgen María, volvió a su casa en completa posesión del 10  
catecismo, dueña de la historia sagrada y de parte de la  
profana, con muchas, aunque confusas nociones de geografía, 12  
astronomía y física. . . . Se sabía de memoria . . . *los deberes*  
*del hombre*, y era regular maestra en tocar el piano. . . . Lan- 14  
tigua no entendía una palabra de música. . . . En general,  
todo cuanto tocaba Gloria le parecía horrible. 16

— No sé que diera,<sup>2</sup> hija mía, — le decía — por oírte tocar  
otra cosa que ese sonsonete de organillo de las calles. No 18  
me digas que así es toda la música. . . . Basta ya de monserga,  
hijita, coge un libro y ponte a leer.» 20

#### EJERCICIO ORAL XLIII (Oral Exercise XLIII)

1. Do not write (V.) to me. 2. Let him enter. 3. Let her  
enter. 4. Show me the piano. 5. How I would like to write!  
6. God grant that he may not die! 7. Is your mistress here?  
— Not that I know of. 8. That he may play. 9. I wish you to  
learn this. 10. This young lady has studied geography, physics,  
astronomy and music. 11. Continue studying, and you will  
some day know a great deal. 12. Would that I might reside in  
the seminary! 13. Come what may, I shall not sing that song.  
14. Tell it to me. 15. All that she played seemed to him like  
the rattle of a hand-organ, and her father did not like it. 16. Let  
the organ be used for sacred music. 17. The king is dead; long  
live the king. 18. Benito Pérez Galdós was not born in Spain.

'Doctor Centeno'; *La Desheredada*, 'The Disowned'; *El Amigo Manso*,  
'The Gentle Friend'; *La de Bringas*, 'The Bringas Woman'; *Lo Prohibido*,  
'Forbidden Fruit'; *Fortunata y Jacinta*; *Miau*; *Angel Guerra*; *La Loca de la*  
*Casa*, 'The Madcap of the Family'; *Nazarín*; *Halma*; *Misericordia*, 'Pity';  
*El Abuelo*, 'The Grandfather'; and the *Torquemada* series.

<sup>1</sup> Ficóbriga, a fictitious town, the home of Don Juan de Lantigua.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. § 392, 5.

TEMA XLIII  
(Composition XLIII)

*Gloria* is a study of Spanish life and character (*carácter, m.*), written by Benito Pérez Galdós. Like *Doña Perfecta*, his masterpiece, *Gloria* treats of religious tolerance (*tolerancia*). The education of Gloria, as it is related in the selection of to-day, might be the education of many Spanish girls. While Gloria is still very young, she is sent to a seminary, where she learns a little of many things. She leaves the seminary with few definite ideas (*ideas*), knows nothing thoroughly (*a fondo*), but, like many of her Spanish sisters, can say the catechism from memory. She knows [how to] play the piano, but her knowledge is far from being perfect, and her father is not able [to] endure her musical efforts, which to him seem like the rattle of a hand-organ. "Don't tell me all music is like that," he exclaims; "do what you like, but do not play the piano [any] more."

CONVERSACIÓN XLIII  
(Conversation XLIII)

1. ¿Cuál es el uso principal del subjuntivo en cláusulas independientes?
2. ¿Qué significa *ojalá*?
3. ¿Qué tiempo del subjuntivo se emplea generalmente en una cláusula dependiente, después de un presente o futuro? ¿después de un tiempo pasado?
4. ¿Se emplea el imperativo en una negación?
5. ¿Cuántas hijas tenía don Juan de Lantigua?
6. ¿Qué creía de la educación de su hija?
7. ¿Cuándo enviudó don Juan?
8. ¿Cuándo volaron al cielo los pequeñitos?
9. ¿Cuántos años residió Gloria en el colegio?
10. ¿Qué había aprendido en el colegio?
11. ¿Sabía Gloria tocar el piano?
12. ¿Le gustó al padre todo cuanto tocaba Gloria?
13. ¿Qué nombre dió él a la música que ella tocaba?
14. ¿Quién es el autor de *Gloria*?
15. Dígame V. algo de él.

## LECCIÓN XLIV

(Lesson XLIV)

### SUBJUNTIVO EN CLÁUSULAS DEPENDIENTES

(Subjunctive in Dependent Clauses)

**391.** The subjunctive used dependently may stand in (I) noun, (II) adjective, or (III) adverbial clauses.

#### I. Subjuntivo en Cláusulas Sustantivas

(Subjunctive in Noun Clauses)

**392.** The subjunctive, usually introduced by **que**, although the conjunction may be omitted, serves as logical subject or as object of verbal expressions:

1. Of desiring (willing, wishing, preferring, avoiding, etc.).

**Deseo (que) conozcas**

I wish you to know

**Prefiero que se vaya**

I prefer that he go away

2. Of commanding (forbidding, obliging, requiring, requesting, consenting, etc.) and of necessity.

**El rey mandó que hablase**

The king ordered him to speak

**Prohibo que V. lo haga**

I forbid you to do it

**Es preciso que él me oiga**

It is necessary that he hear me

3. Of opinion involving approval or disapproval (praise, blame, etc.).

**Apruebo que lo haya hecho**

I approve of his having done so

**Desapruebo que él vaya allí**

I disapprove of his going there

**No me parece muy justo que V. se divierta así**

It doesn't seem right to me that you should amuse yourself thus

4. Of emotion (joy, sorrow, fear, anger, despair, shame, wonder, regret, etc.).

**Me alegro (de) que esté V. aquí**

I am glad you are here

**Lo siento que no le haya acompañado**

I am sorry he did not accompany him

**Temo de que no se vaya**

I fear that he will not go away

5. Of doubt (denial, probability, and possibility). This includes verbs of thinking (knowing, declaring, believing, perceiving, understanding, etc.), when uncertainty or doubt is implied by negation, interrogation, or condition; otherwise the indicative is used.

Dudo (de) que haya llegado  
 Niego que haya huido  
 Es probable que venga  
 No creo que sea verdad  
 ¡Cree V. que hayan llamado?  
 Si yo creyera que viniese, le iría a  
 esperar

I doubt that he has arrived  
 I deny that he has fled  
 It is probable that he will come  
 I don't think that it is true  
 Do you think that any one has called?  
 If I thought that he would come, I  
 should go to meet him

393. In expressions such as those enumerated above, an infinitive is generally used instead of a dependent subjunctive clause, if the subject of the dependent clause is the same as that of the principal clause. If the subject is different, however, the subjunctive is generally used, except in the case of verbs of commanding, etc., which often allow an infinitive construction.

Yo quiero hablar  
 NOT: Yo quiero que yo hable  
 Yo quiero que él hable  
 El rey mandó que se presentara  
 El rey le mandó presentarse

I wish to speak  
 I wish him to speak  
 The king ordered him to appear

#### VOCABULARIO XLIV (Vocabulary XLIV)

el acompañamiento, the accom-  
 paniment.  
 ajustar, to adjust, fit, regulate.  
 avanzar, to advance.  
 la bailadora, the dancer.  
 el brío, the strength, vigor, spirit.  
 callar, to be silent.  
 la castañuela, the castanet.  
 convencer, to convince.  
 enérgicamente, *adv.*, energeti-  
 cally.  
 el estilo, the style; por el —, of  
 the same style.  
 la exclamación, the exclamation.  
 expresivo, -a, expressive.  
 la fuerza, the force, power; a viva  
 —, by main force.  
 el gesto, the gesture.  
 grosero, -a, gross, coarse, in-  
 delicate.  
 impropio, -a, improper.

inclinarse, to bow, incline, lean,  
 bend.  
 indefinidamente, *adv.*, indefi-  
 nitely.  
 el movimiento, the movement.  
 obligado, -a, necessary, com-  
 pulsory.  
 ¡ole! *interjection*, bravo!  
 la paloma, the dove, pigeon.  
 el patrón, the landlord, host.  
 la pausa, the pause, stop.  
 preguntar, to ask.  
 prolongar, to prolong, con-  
 tinue.  
 resueltamente, *adv.*, resolutely.  
 el salero, the gracefulness.  
 la seguidilla, the seguidilla (*merry  
 Spanish tune and dance*).  
 el son, the sound.  
 el título, the title.

EJERCICIO XLIV  
(Exercise XLIV)

Trozo de «La Hermana San Sulpicio»  
por Armando Palacio Valdés<sup>1</sup>

«El malagueño<sup>2</sup> tomando la guitarra . . . dió comienzo a unas seguidillas. — ¡Cállese usted, hombre, que no puedo 2  
oír eso sin que se me alegren<sup>3</sup> los pies! — exclamó la hermana haciendo un gesto expresivo. — ¿Baila usted? — preguntó 4  
Suárez. — En otro tiempo. . . — Es necesario ver eso — dijo Suárez. — ¡A bailar,<sup>4</sup> a bailar! . . . 6

Pero nos faltaba lo más difícil: convencer a la hermana María de la Luz. . . . Fué preciso que su prima la cogiese 8  
enérgicamente por los brazos y la alzase casi a viva fuerza. . . .

El malagueño alzó un poco la voz cantando una seguidilla. 10  
De pronto los cuatro pares de palillos chasquearon con brío, las bailadoras abrieron los brazos y avanzaron una hacia otra. 12  
. . . Siguieron una serie de movimientos y pasos, ajustados todos al son de la guitarra y de las castañuelas. . . . El cuerpo 14  
de las dos primas tan pronto se erguía como se bajaba, inclinándose a un lado y a otro con movimientos contrarios de 16  
cabeza y de brazos. . . .

Yo no miraba más que a la hermana San Sulpicio. . . . 18

<sup>1</sup> Armando Palacio Valdés (born at Entralgo [province of Asturias], October 4, 1853) is probably in English-speaking countries the most widely read of the contemporary Spanish novelists. In a broad sense Valdés is a realist. He does not, however, in his greater works take pleasure in depicting the ugly side of life, and a lofty idealism tempers the realism of his method of observation and treatment.

*La Hermana San Sulpicio*, 'Sister St. Sulpice,' is a study of life in Andalusia. Gloria, or Sister St. Sulpice, the heroine of the story, is a *Sevillana*, and no more vivacious, roguish, or winning personality can be found in Spanish fiction. Her mother's design to have Gloria take the veil is frustrated by the arrival of a young man from Galicia, who is captivated straightway by the charms of a woman so different from those of his native province, and who ultimately succeeds in making her his wife. In the above selection Sister St. Sulpice and her cousin, María de la Luz, are induced by the Galician and a friend of his from Malaga, Suárez, to dance for them a seguidilla.

Among the other novels of Valdés, the following are particularly admired: *Marta y María*, 'Martha and Mary'; *José*, 'Joseph'; *Riverita*; *Maximina*; *Los Majos de Cádiz*, 'The Dandies of Cadiz'; and *La Alegría del Capitán Ribot*, 'The Joy of Captain Ribot.'

<sup>2</sup> Malagueño, native of Malaga.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. § 397, 2.

<sup>4</sup> Cf. § 147.

Hubiera deseado que el baile se prolongase indefinidamente. . . .

20

Las exclamaciones de Suárez ¡Ole, mi niña! ¡Bendito sea tu salero! ¡Alza,<sup>1</sup> palomita, alza! y otras por el estilo, que soltaba en las pausas del canto, me parecían groseras e impropias. Pero . . . vine a entender que eran el acompañamiento natural y obligado de aquel baile. Cuando éste terminó, . . . el malagueño . . . alargando la guitarra a nuestro patrón, le invitó a que tocara para echar otro baile con la hermana; mas la madre Florentina . . . se opuso resueltamente a ello.»

#### EJERCICIO ORAL XLIV (Oral Exercise XLIV)

1. He wished her to dance. 2. He wished to dance. 3. It is necessary that I convince them. 4. Would that she were silent. 5. Is it possible that you write so well? 6. I am very sorry that her cousin did not accompany the dancer. 7. I was glad that he invited the sister to dance. 8. Do you think that they will prolong the dance? 9. Did you tell him to play the castanets? 10. I hope that the exclamations are not coarse and improper. 11. I should have desired him to convince his mother. 12. The landlord ordered him to leave the inn. 13. I wish to click the castanets. 14. I wish him to click the castanets. 15. If I thought (*subj.*) that she would do it, I should ask her to dance a seguidilla. 16. Will you order the gentleman to advance?

#### TEMA XLIV (Composition XLIV)

It is doubtful if in the last twenty-five years a more pleasing and entertaining (*divertida*) novel than *La Hermana San Sulpicio*, by Palacio Valdés, has been written. It is a study of life in the south of Spain. Gloria's mother wishes her to (*that she*) take the veil (*velo*), but the arrival of a young man from Galicia changes everything. In the selection in this lesson Suárez invites *la Hermana San Sulpicio* to dance a seguidilla. When the *malagueño* begins to play the guitar, Sister St. Sulpice finds it completely impossible to remain

<sup>1</sup> *Alza*, from the verb *alzar*, here means 'go on!' 'keep it up!'

still (*quieta*). The music is so gay that she feels like dancing. She and her cousin finally begin a seguidilla, accompanied by the clicking of their castanets. All are attracted by the grace of the dancers, who bend first to one side then to the other with contrary movements of the head and arms. To the Galician (*gallego*) the exclamations, which accompany the dance, seem coarse and improper, but that is because he is not acquainted with the customs of Andalusia (*Andalucía*), and does not know that they are the necessary accompaniment of the seguidilla.

#### CONVERSACIÓN XLIV (Conversation XLIV)

1. ¿En qué clase de cláusulas dependientes estudiamos hoy el subjuntivo? 2. ¿Con qué clase de verbos se emplea el subjuntivo en las cláusulas sustantivas. 3. ¿Cuándo se emplea el indicativo después de verbos como *pensar*, *creer*, etc.? 4. Dígame V. cuándo se usa el infinitivo en vez de una cláusula dependiente con el subjuntivo.

5. ¿Qué hizo el malagueño? 6. ¿Qué exclamó la hermana al oír la guitarra? 7. ¿Baila V.? 8. ¿A quién les faltaba convencer? 9. ¿Qué hizo la prima de María de la Luz? 10. ¿Cuáles fueron las exclamaciones de Suárez? 11. ¿Qué significa *palo-mita*? 12. ¿Qué es una seguidilla? ¿Cómo se baila? 13. ¿Le parecen a V. groseras e impropias las exclamaciones que acompañan la seguidilla? 14. ¿Qué le parece a V. el trozo que hemos leído hoy? 15. Dígame V. los títulos de algunas de las obras de Palacio Valdés.

#### LECCIÓN XLV (Lesson XLV)

#### SUBJUNTIVO EN CLÁUSULAS DEPENDIENTES (Subjunctive in Dependent Clauses)

#### II. Subjuntivo en Cláusulas Adjetivas (Subjunctive in Adjective Clauses)

**394.** An adjective clause is a dependent clause introduced by a relative pronoun, and takes its verb in the subjunctive when there is implied purpose regarding the antecedent or characteri-

zation of desired qualities, rather than those actually possessed by the antecedent, or when doubt or concession is involved.

Queremos una criada que hable francés	We want a servant who speaks French
Yo buscaba algo que le distrajera	I was looking for something to distract him
si hay quien fume	if there is any one who smokes
Abre y veremos lo que haya	Open, and we shall see what there is ( <i>may be</i> )

NOTE. — When the relative clause expresses a mere fact, or qualities actually possessed by the antecedent, the indicative is used.

Busco a una persona a quien conocía en mi juventud	I am looking for a person whom I knew in my youth
Voy al lugar donde mi padre nació	I am going to the place where my father was born
Abre y veremos lo que hay	Open, and we shall see what there is ( <i>in fact</i> )

395. Special attention is called to the two following cases of the subjunctive in relative clauses. It is used:

1. When non-existence (or doubt concerning the existence) of the antecedent is implied by a general negation, an interrogation or a condition in the principal clause.

No hay razón que valga	There is no reason that is ( <i>of such a kind as to be</i> ) valid
¿Existe un hombre que sepa el porvenir?	Is there any one who knows the future?
Si hay quien pueda salvarla es V.	If there is any one who can save her it is you

2. Often when the antecedent is qualified by a superlative or a word of similar force. This use is confined almost entirely to the perfect tense of the subjunctive.

Es el mejor libro que jamás haya conocido	It is the best book that I have ever known
El único que hubiera podido decir algo era su padre	The only one who could have said anything was her father
Es la primera persona que yo he ( <i>or haya</i> ) visto aquí	He is the first person I saw here

396. In clauses introduced by *donde* or compound relatives implying doubt or having a concessive force ('whoever,' 'whatever,' 'whatsoever,' etc.) the subjunctive is used.



Iré donde V. quiera

Está prohibido a quien quiera que sea

Que hagan lo que puedan

Le ayudará en cuantas empresas  
emprenda

¡Feliz quien se las coma!

I will go wherever (*to whatever place  
that*) you wish

It is forbidden to everybody (*to  
whomsoever it may be*)

Let them do what they can

He will aid him in whatever enter-  
prises he undertakes

Happy is he who eats (of) them!

### VOCABULARIO XLV

(Vocabulary XLV)

el ala, *f.*, the wing.

el barquillero, the maker (*or* vender)  
of wafers.

el barquillo, the (thin rolled)  
wafer, wafer cone.

la caricia, the caress, petting.

colocar, to put in place, ar-  
range.

la correa, the leather strap.

corretear, to rove, ramble, gad.

la culpa, the blame, fault, offense;  
tener —, to be to blame.

la chiquilla, the small child.

la dicha, the happiness.

embelesar, to charm, fascinate.

enamorar, to excite (*or* in-  
spire) love.

ensartar, to string, thread, link.

el gentío, the crowd, multitude.

halagar, to flatter.

el hormigueo, the itching.

imitar, to imitate.

la impaciencia, the impatience.

el instinto, the instinct.

marcharse, to go away.

el miedo, the fear.

nómada, *adj.*, nomadic, wan-  
dering.

el paraíso, the paradise.

el poro, the pore.

quieto, —a, quiet, still.

rebosar, to teem, run over,  
overflow.

la sangre, the blood.

sujetar, to subject, hold down,  
keep to.

la tarea, the task.

terciar, to sling (sidewise) over  
one's shoulder.

el tubo, the tube, can, tin box.

### EJERCICIO XLV

(Exercise XLV)

#### Trozo de «La Tribuna» por Emilia Pardo Bazán<sup>1</sup>

«La chiquilla crecía, y comía y rompía zapatos, y no había  
quien la sujetase a coser ni a otro género de tareas. Mientras 2  
su padre no se marchaba, el miedo . . . la tenía quieta, ensar-

<sup>1</sup> The Countess Emilia Pardo Bazán (born at La Coruña in Galicia, Sept. 16, 1851) is perhaps the world's most distinguished contemporary authoress, as she is certainly the most brilliant Spanish writer of her sex of the nineteenth century. Favored alike by fortune and by natural gifts, she has acquired a breadth of culture that is unusual even among the most gifted men of her nation. As publicist, essayist, politician, critic, philosopher, scientist, linguist and novelist, Doña Emilia has shown rare ability. It is perhaps to be regretted that her interests have been so varied, for otherwise the

tando y colocando barquillos; pero apenas el viejo se terciaba 4  
la correa del tubo, sentía Amparo en las piernas un hormigueo,  
un bullir de la sangre, una impaciencia como si le naciesen<sup>1</sup> 6  
alas a miles en los talones. La calle era su paraíso. El  
gentío la enamoraba; los codazos y empujones la halagaban 8  
cual si fuesen<sup>1</sup> caricias. . . . Pasábase horas y horas correte-  
ando sin objeto al través de la ciudad, y volvía a casa rebo- 10  
sando dicha y salud por todos los poros de su cuerpo. . . .

De estos instintos nómadas tendría bastante culpa la vida 12  
que forzosamente hizo la chiquilla mientras su madre asistía  
a la Fábrica.<sup>2</sup> Sola en casa con su padre, apenas éste salía, 14  
ella le imitaba, por no quedarse metida entre cuatro paredes:  
¡Vaya! y que no eran tan alegres para que nadie se embe- 16  
lesase<sup>3</sup> mirándolas.»

#### EJERCICIO ORAL XLV (Oral Exercise XLV)

1. I shall stay wherever you wish. 2. There is no happiness  
that lasts. 3. Let her ramble where she wishes. 4. This is the  
most difficult task I have ever known. 5. He wishes [to] know  
if there is any one [who] (*quien*) sings. 6. I want a teacher who  
speaks Spanish. 7. I know a teacher who speaks Spanish.  
8. Let him do what he can. 9. The street used to fascinate the  
little child. 10. Many people in Spain sell wafers on the streets.  
11. The wafers are linked and placed in what is called a '*tubo*.'  
12. The vender carries the '*tubo*' by means of a leather strap.

Spanish novel might have owed to her even more than it does. However,  
as it is, her work in fiction has been a large and distinguished contribution.  
An apostle of French naturalism, she has yet held closely enough to the  
inspiration of her own land, and especially of her own native province of  
Galicia, to produce a series of works eminently original. She has done for  
Galicia what Pereda did for Santander and its surroundings.

*La Tribuna* is the story of the daughter of a wafer maker. She enters  
a cigarette factory, and there becomes interested in politics, mounts the  
rostrum, and delivers political speeches.

Other novels of Emilia Pardo Bazán worthy of mention are: *Un Viaje  
de Novios*, 'A Honeymoon'; *Pascual López*; *El Cisne de Vilamorta*, 'The  
Swan of Vilamorta'; *La Dama Joven*, 'The Young Woman'; *Los Pazos de  
Ulloa*; *La Madre Naturaleza*, 'Mother Nature'; *Insolación*, 'Sunstroke';  
*Morriña*, 'The Blues'; *Propiedad y Familia*, 'Property and Family.'

<sup>1</sup> Cf. § 397, 4.

<sup>2</sup> The cigarette factory is here meant.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. § 397, 2.

13. That was the first wafer the child had ever eaten. 14. Some people do not like wafers. 15. Does a man exist who has not known fear?

TEMA XLV  
(Composition XLV)

The countess Emilia Pardo Bazán, one of the most distinguished women of the world, has done for Galicia what 2 Pereda did for Santander. In her novels, however, she did not restrict herself to her own province (*provincia*) as much 4 as did Pereda. In many of them the scene is laid outside of Galicia. In *La Tribuna* the action takes place in Marineda, 6 a name invented (*inventado*) by the author, and which may be in almost any part of Spain. The young girl, to whom we 8 are introduced in to-day's selection, is the daughter of a wafer vender, a very well known figure (*figura*) in the streets of 10 any Spanish city. She becomes a cigarette maker, leads her fellow workers (*colaboradoras*), and delivers speeches on 12 political topics, forgetting the days when she rose early in the morning and began stringing and arranging the wafers 14 in the tin box, while her father cooked them.

CONVERSACIÓN XLV  
(Conversation XLV)

1. ¿En qué clase de cláusulas dependientes estudiamos hoy el subjuntivo? 2. ¿Qué clase de cláusulas se principian por un pronombre relativo? 3. ¿Cuántas reglas se usan para explicar el uso del subjuntivo en cláusulas adjetivas?

4. ¿Qué puede V. decirme de la educación de la chiquilla en la lección de hoy? 5. ¿Qué cosa la tenía quieta cuando su padre no se marchaba? 6. ¿Qué sentía en las piernas apenas se marchaba su padre? 7. ¿Le gustaban a ella los codazos y empujones en las calles? 8. ¿Qué hizo en las calles? 9. ¿Dónde trabajaba la madre? 10. ¿En qué clase de habitación vivía? 11. ¿Es fácil el trozo de la lección de hoy? 12. ¿Quién es el autor del trozo de la lección de hoy? 13. Dígame V. algo de ella.

## LECCIÓN XLVI

(Lesson XLVI)

## SUBJUNTIVO EN CLÁUSULAS DEPENDIENTES

(Subjunctive in Dependent Clauses)

## III. Subjuntivo en Cláusulas Adverbiales

(Subjunctive in Adverbial Clauses)

**397.** The subjunctive is used in adverbial clauses after conjunctions (**conjunciones**) expressing:

1. Time, extent, or the like, in which uncertainty or indefinite futurity is implied, such as:

**a medida que**, according as, as fast as  
**antes (de) que**, before  
**así que**, as soon as  
**como**, as, in proportion as  
**cuando**,<sup>1</sup> when  
**en cuanto**, when, as far as

**Escribirá antes de que venga**  
**Yo haré como V. quiera**  
**Le veré cuando venga**  
**Lo haré en cuanto pueda**

**después (de) que**, after  
**hasta que**, until  
**luego que**, as soon as  
**mientras que**, while  
**siempre que**, whenever

He will write before he comes  
 I will do as you wish  
 I shall see him when he comes  
 I shall do so as far as I can

2. Purpose or result, such as:

**a fin de que**, in order that  
**de manera que**, } so as, so that  
**de modo que**, }  
**de miedo que**, for fear that  
**para que**, } (in order) that  
**por que**, }

**que**, so that, in order that  
**tal que**, such that  
**tanto (-a, -os, -as) . . . que**, so  
 much (*or* many) . . . that  
**tan . . . que**, so . . . that

Negatively:

**no sea que**, lest  
**Hable V. de manera que yo le comprenda**  
**Me marché de miedo que V. viniese**  
**Le mando dinero para que V. venga**  
**Levántate que te vea**  
**No volveré a verle, no sea que me insulte**  
**Procure V. manejarle sin que se ofenda**

**sin que**, without  
 Speak so that I may understand you  
 I went away for fear that you might come  
 I am sending you money so that you may come  
 Get up so that I may see you  
 I shall not see him again, lest he insult me  
 Try to manage him without his being offended

NOTE. — In expressions of result denoting fact the indicative is used.  
**Habló de manera que yo le comprendí** (*indicative*)      He spoke so that I understood him

<sup>1</sup> Cuando takes the indicative when futurity is not implied.  
**Uno se cansa cuando estudia**      One gets tired when one studies

### 3. Condition, such as:

a condición (de) que, on condition that	sea que, if, whether
dado que, in case that, supposing that	si ( <i>never with pres. subj.</i> ), if (cf. § 398)
en caso (de) que, in case that	con tal (de) que, } provided that
excepto que, except that	siempre que, } provided that
a menos que, } unless	supóngase que
a no ser que, } unless	suponiendo que, } supposing that
que, whether	supuesto que
dado que lo sepa	in case that he knows it
a menos que me hable	unless he speaks to me
que me hable o no	whether he speaks to me or not
con tal que venga esta noche	provided he come to-night

### 4. Concession or denial, such as:

aunque, although	no obstante que, } notwithstanding
aun cuando, even though	sin embargo de que, } that
lejos de que, so far from	a pesar de que, in spite of
por . . . que, however	
No le temo, aunque sea más fuerte que yo	I do not fear him, although he be stronger than I
Aun cuando lo diga mil veces, no lo creeré	Even though he may say it a thousand times, I shall not believe it
Lejos de que sea mi amigo, es mi enemigo más declarado	So far from his being my friend, he is my most open enemy
por rico que sea	however rich he may be

**398.** When a negation is implied in a conditional clause (i.e. a condition contrary to fact), the imperfect subjunctive<sup>1</sup> is used after *si*), in other cases the present indicative is used.

Si él tiene dinero, paga	If he has money, he pays
Si él tiene dinero, pagará	If he has money, he will pay
Si él tuviera dinero, pagaría	If he had money, he would pay

NOTE. — *Si*, meaning 'if,' is never followed by the present or perfect subjunctive or by the future indicative or conditional.<sup>2</sup> If *si* has the sense of 'whether,' the conditional may be used.

No sabía si viviría o no	I didn't know whether he would live or not
--------------------------	--

**399.** The conditional, used to express a desire in a modest manner, is sometimes replaced by the first form of the imperfect subjunctive. *Quisiera*, from *querer*, is almost always so used instead of the conditional, and has become a way of politely expressing a desire.

Quisiera verlo otra vez	I should like to see it again
-------------------------	-------------------------------

<sup>1</sup> Cf. § 400.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. §§ 132, 400, 401.

**400.** The first and second forms of the imperfect subjunctive are interchangeable, except in the apodosis (result clause) of a conditional sentence, where the second form is never found. Even the first form is seldom found here, being replaced usually by the conditional. In the protasis (conditional clause) either form may stand, but the conditional may not. In choosing between the two forms, euphony is the determining factor. For example, if a preceding or following word should end in *-ra*, the form in *-se* would be preferable, in order to avoid the repetition of similar sounds in close proximity.

Si { *buscase* } su libro, lo { *encontrara*      If he looked for his book,  
       *buscara* }                    *encontraría* (*preferable*)    he would find it

**401.** The future subjunctive denotes only a condition, or a future contingency depending upon doubt or uncertainty. It may denote either present or future time. Although once frequent, the future subjunctive is now little used except in proverbs, legal phrases, etc. It is now usually replaced by the present subjunctive (or after *si*, 'if,' by the present indicative).

Le diré a V. lo que él { *decida*      I shall tell you what he may decide  
                                       *decidiere*  
 Si cree (*creyere*) V. eso, se equivoca    If you think that, you are mistaken

**402.** There still exists in Spanish a tense that has the same endings as the first form of the imperfect subjunctive, with which it is often confused. It is derived from the Latin pluperfect in *-aram*, *-eram*. It is now little used, and is usually restricted to relative clauses.

Los jinetes se dirigieron al punto    The horsemen went to the spot  
       que Íñigo señalara como el más a    which Íñigo had pointed out as  
       propósito                                the most suitable

#### VOCABULARIO XLVI (Vocabulary XLVI)

- |  |                                    |
|--|------------------------------------|
| el álamo, the poplar-tree.               | la contestación, the answer.       |
| alojar, to lodge, quarter.               | continuo, -a, continual.           |
| la bestia, the beast; <i>m.</i> , dunce, | el coro, the chorus, choir.        |
| stupid person.                           | establecer, to establish.          |
| la caña, the cane, reed.                 | la fama, the reputation.           |
| la cartilla, the primer.                 | la finura, the fineness, courtesy. |
| concerniente, <i>adj.</i> , concerning.  | el griego, the Greek language.     |
| contento, -a, content, glad,             | habitar, to inhabit, live, dwell.  |
| satisfied.                               | imperar, to command, reign.        |

el martilleo, the hammering.  
 el método, the method.  
 la miseria, the misery, poverty.  
 la misericordia, the mercy.  
 monótono, -a, monotonous.  
 oculto, -a, hidden.  
 remiso, -a, remiss, slow.  
 remolón, *adj.*, indolent, backward.

renovar, to renew.  
 la repetición, the repetition.  
 respetar, to respect.  
 el ruido, the noise.  
 sostener, to sustain, support,  
 maintain.  
 el vecino, the neighbor.

### EJERCICIO XLVI (Exercise XLVI)

#### Trozo de «La Barraca» por Vicente Blasco Ibáñez<sup>1</sup>

«El ruido lento y monótono que parecía salir de entre los árboles era el de la escuela de don Joaquín, establecida en una barraca oculta por la fila de álamos. 2

Nunca el saber se ha visto peor alojado; y eso que por lo común<sup>2</sup> no habita palacios. . . . En toda la barraca no había más que un objeto nuevo; la larga caña que el maestro tenía 6 tras la puerta, y que renovaba cada dos días. . . .

Libros apenas si se veía tres en la escuela: una misma 8 cartilla servía a todos. ¿Para qué más? Allí imperaba el método moruno: canto y repetición hasta meter las cosas 10 con un continuo martilleo en las duras cabezas. . . . De vez en cuando callábase el coro y sonaba la voz de don Joaquín . . . 12 — ¿Cuántas son las obras de misericordia? . . . — Dos por siete, ¿cuántos son? . . . Y rara vez quedaba contento de las 14 contestaciones. — Son ustedes unos bestias. Me oyen como si les hablase en griego. ¡Y pensar que les trato con toda 16

<sup>1</sup> **Vicente Blasco Ibáñez** (born in Valencia in 1867) is one of the foremost of the younger contemporary Spanish novelists. He is now a resident of Argentine Republic. He has been called the Zola of Spain, and the realistic character of his work frequently recalls the method of his French prototype. Energy and vigor characterize his style.

*La Barraca*, 'The Cabin' or 'Farmhouse,' is one of his earlier novels, and is generally considered his best. The scene is laid in the fertile district surrounding Valencia, and the theme of the story is the persecution of an honest farmer and his family by his neighbors, who harbor the tradition that the land leased by him shall never be cultivated.

Among the other novels by Blasco Ibáñez, the following are particularly well known: *Cañas y Barro*, 'Reeds and Mire'; *La Catedral*, 'The Cathedral'; *El Intruso*, 'The Intruder'; *La Bodega*, 'The Wine Cellar'; *La Horda*, 'The Rabble'; *Sangre y Arena*, 'Blood and Sand'; *Los Muertos Mandan*, 'The Dead Command.'

<sup>2</sup> *eso que por lo común*, *trans.*: 'mind you, it usually.'

finura, como en un colegio de la ciudad, para que aprendan ustedes buenas formas y sepan hablar como las personas! . . . 18 La gente de las barracas respetaba a don Joaquín, aunque en lo concerniente a sostener su miseria anduviese remisa y 20 remolona.»

EJERCICIO ORAL XLVI  
(Oral Exercise XLVI)

1. The pupils will respect the teacher when he arrives. 2. He does it without my seeing him. 3. When I have it, I shall show it to you. 4. He did it in order that you might remember the day. 5. In spite of his having come, I have not spoken to him. 6. If I had time, I should explain it to you. 7. If I have time, I shall send it to you. 8. Although he may command the children, they will not respect him. 9. Unless they establish a new method, we can only put things in their hard heads with a continual hammering. 10. As soon as the cane is broken, the teacher renews it in the neighboring field. 11. In order that the children may learn their letters (*letras*), we give them primers. 12. However indolent the boys are, they learn as much as the girls. 13. Although the girls are sometimes indolent, they learn as much as the boys. 14. When one studies, one learns a great deal.

TEMA XLVI  
(Composition XLVI)

*La Barraca*, one of the first novels of Vicente Blasco Ibáñez, assured his reputation in the literary world. Its theme 2 is the persecution (*persecución*) of a poor farmer and his family by hostile neighbors. Whenever his children return 4 from school they are attacked by the other pupils, and although they defend themselves, the youngest, Pascualet, dies 6 as [a] result of the ill treatment (*maltratamiento*) that he receives. It is the little school of to-day's selection that the 8 children attend. One can easily imagine the school, and before the class the imperious master with his cane which he 10 carefully renews from time to time. One can imagine, too, the pupils studying together and answering in chorus. The 12 teacher interrupts (*interrumpir*) them, to (*para*) tell them

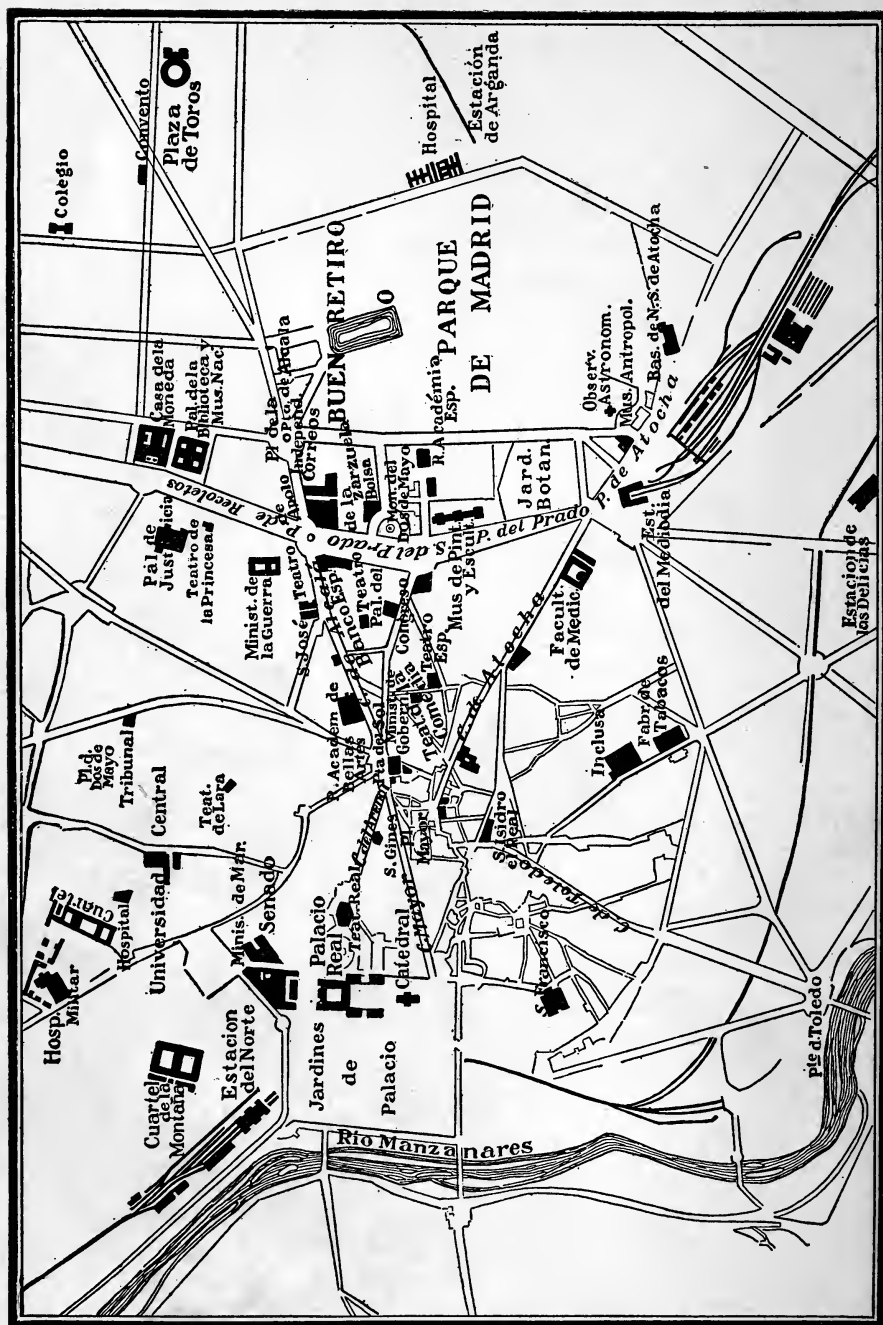


that they are all dunces, and that, in spite of his efforts to 14  
(para) teach them to (a) talk like [educated] persons, they  
learn nothing, but listen to him as though he spoke to them 16  
in Greek.

CONVERSACIÓN XLVI  
(Conversation XLVI)

1. ¿En qué clase de cláusulas dependientes estudiamos hoy el subjuntivo? 2. ¿Cómo principian las cláusulas adverbiales, por pronombres relativos o por conjunciones? 3. Dígame V. algunas de las conjunciones que toman el subjuntivo. 4. Cuando «si» significa '*whether*,' ¿en que modo se usa el verbo? 5. ¿Se emplea alguna vez la primera forma del imperfecto de subjuntivo en vez del condicional?

6. ¿Cuál era el ruido lento y monótono que parecía salir de entre los árboles? 7. ¿En qué clase de edificio estaba establecida la escuela de don Joaquín? 8. ¿Qué objeto nuevo había en la escuela? 9. ¿Dónde renovaba la caña? 10. ¿Qué clase de método imperaba allí en la escuela? 11. ¿Cuándo se callaba el coro? 12. Cuando el maestro no quedaba contento de las contestaciones ¿qué decía a la clase? 13. ¿Le respetaba al maestro la gente de las barracas? 14. ¿Dónde vive el autor de este trozo? 15. Dígame V. los títulos de algunas de sus obras.



MADRID

## APÉNDICE (Appendix)

### EJEMPLOS DE LAS TRES CONJUGACIONES REGULARES (Examples of the Three Regular Conjugations)

403. Primera (First)      404. Segunda (Second)      405. Tercera (Third)

#### Infinitivo (Infinitive)

habl-ar, *to speak, talk*      deb-er, *to owe*      viv-ir, *to live*

#### Gerundio (Present Participle)

habl-ando      deb-iendo      viv-iendo  
*speaking*      *owing*      *living*

#### Participio Pasivo (Past Participle)

habl-ado      deb-ido      viv-ido  
*spoken*      *owed*      *lived*

### MODO INDICATIVO (Indicative Mood)

#### Tiempo Presente (Present Tense)

<i>I speak, etc.</i>	<i>I owe, etc.</i>	<i>I live, etc.</i>
yo habl-o	deb-o	viv-o
tú habl-as	deb-es	viv-es
él habl-a	deb-e	viv-e
nosotros habl-amos	deb-emos	viv-imos
vosotros habl-áis	deb-éis	viv-ís
ellos habl-an	deb-en	viv-en

#### Imperfecto<sup>1</sup> (Imperfect)

<i>I spoke, was speaking, used to speak, etc.</i>	<i>I owed, was owing, used to owe, etc.</i>	<i>I lived, was living, used to live, etc.</i>
yo habl-aba	deb-ía	viv-ía
tú habl-abas	deb-ías	viv-ías
él habl-aba	deb-ía	viv-ía
nosotros habl-ábamos	deb-íamos	viv-íamos
vosotros habl-abais	deb-íais	viv-íais
ellos habl-aban	deb-ían	viv-ían

#### Pretérito<sup>2</sup> (Preterit)

<i>I spoke, etc.</i>	<i>I owed, etc.</i>	<i>I lived, etc.</i>
yo habl-é	deb-í	viv-í
tú habl-aste	deb-iste	viv-iste
él habl-ó	deb-ió	viv-ió
nosotros habl-amos	deb-imos	viv-imos
vosotros habl-asteis	deb-isteis	viv-isteis
ellos habl-aron	deb-ieron	viv-ieron

<sup>1</sup> Called **Pretérito Imperfecto** in the Grammar of the Spanish Academy.

<sup>2</sup> Called **Pretérito Perfecto** in the Grammar of the Spanish Academy.

Owing to the constant use of these terms in class, it has been deemed advisable to use the shortened forms, inasmuch as there is no danger of confusion.

**Futuro<sup>1</sup> (Future)**

<i>I shall speak, etc.</i>	<i>I shall owe, etc.</i>	<i>I shall live, etc.</i>
yo hablar-é	deber-é	vivir-é
tú hablar-ás	deber-ás	vivir-ás
él hablar-á	deber-á	vivir-á
nosotros hablar-emos	deber-emos	vivir-emos
vosotros hablar-éis	deber-éis	vivir-éis
ellos hablar-án	deber-án	vivir-án

**Condicional<sup>2</sup> (Conditional)**

<i>I should speak, etc.</i>	<i>I should owe, etc.</i>	<i>I should live, etc.</i>
yo hablar-ía	deber-ía	vivir-ía
tú hablar-ías	deber-ías	vivir-ías
él hablar-ía	deber-ía	vivir-ía
nosotros hablar-íamos	deber-íamos	vivir-íamos
vosotros hablar-íais	deber-íais	vivir-íais
ellos hablar-ían	deber-ían	vivir-ían

**MODO SUBJUNTIVO (Subjunctive Mood)****Presente (Present)**

<i>I may speak, etc.</i>	<i>I may owe, etc.</i>	<i>I may live, etc.</i>
yo habl-e	deb-a	viv-a
tú habl-es	deb-as	viv-as
él habl-e	deb-a	viv-a
nosotros habl-emos	deb-amos	viv-amos
vosotros habl-éis	deb-áis	viv-áis
ellos habl-en	deb-an	viv-an

**Imperfecto<sup>3</sup> (Primera Forma) (Imperfect [First Form])**

<i>I might (or should) speak, etc.</i>	<i>I might (or should) owe, etc.</i>	<i>I might (or should) live, etc.</i>
yo habl-ara	deb-iera	viv-iera
tú habl-aras	deb-ieras	viv-ieras
él habl-ara	deb-iera	viv-iera
nosotros habl-áramos	deb-iéramos	viv-iéramos
vosotros habl-arais	deb-ierais	viv-ierais
ellos habl-aran	deb-ieran	viv-ieran

<sup>1</sup> Called **Futuro Imperfecto** in the Grammar of the Spanish Academy (cf. p. 61, footnote 1).

<sup>2</sup> This tense in the Grammar of the Spanish Academy is grouped under the subjunctive and called **Pretérito Imperfecto**. In this book it has been grouped with the indicative tenses and called **Condicional**, by analogy with the French custom, and more in accord with Salvá, who calls it **Futuro Condicional**.

<sup>3</sup> In the Grammar of the Spanish Academy, both forms of this tense, together with the one that is here termed **Condicional**, are grouped without distinction under one head called **Pretérito Imperfecto**. The form that is given first is here termed *Primera Forma*, and the other, *Segunda Forma*, in order to distinguish them. Some grammarians, who group the conditional with these forms under the subjunctive, designate the tenses as follows: the forms ending in -ara or -iera, etc., **Préterito Imperfecto (Primera**

**Imperfecto<sup>1</sup> (*Segunda Forma*) (Imperfect [Second Form])**

<i>I might (or should) speak, etc.</i>	<i>I might (or should) owe, etc.</i>	<i>I might (or should) live, etc.</i>
yo habl-ase	deb-iese	viv-iese
tú habl-ases	deb-ieses	viv-ieses
él habl-ase	deb-iese	viv-iese
nosotros habl-ásemos	deb-iésemos	viv-iésemos
vosotros habl-aseis	deb-ieseis	viv-ieseis
ellos habl-asen	deb-iesen	viv-iesen

**Futuro<sup>2</sup> (Future)**

<i>I shall (or should) speak, etc.</i>	<i>I shall (or should) owe, etc.</i>	<i>I shall (or should) live, etc.</i>
yo habl-are	deb-iere	viv-iere
tú habl-ares	deb-ieres	viv-ieres
él habl-are	deb-iere	viv-iere
nosotros habl-áremos	deb-iéremos	viv-iéremos
vosotros habl-areis	deb-iereis	viv-iereis
ellos habl-aren	deb-ieren	viv-ieren

**MODO IMPERATIVO (Imperative Mood)**

habl-a (tú)	deb-e (tú)	viv-e (tú)
habl-ad (vosotros)	deb-ed (vosotros)	viv-id (vosotros)

**CONJUGACIONES DE LOS VERBOS *SER, ESTAR, HABER Y TENER***

(Conjugations of the Verbs *ser, estar, haber* and *tener*)

**Infinitivo (Infinitive)**

406. *ser, to be* 407. *estar, to be* 408. *haber, to have* 409. *tener, to have*

**Gerundio (Present Participle)**

siendo estando habiendo teniendo

**Participio Pasivo (Past Participle)**

sido estado habido tenido

**MODO INDICATIVO (Indicative Mood)**

**Presente (Present)**

yo soy	estoy	he	tengo
tú eres	estás	has	tienes
él es	está	ha	tiene
nosotros somos	estamos	hemos	tenemos
vosotros sois	estáis	habéis	tenéis
ellos son	están	han	tienen

*Forma*), the forms ending in *-aría, -ería, -iría, etc.*, **Pretérito Imperfecto** (*Segunda Forma*), and the forms in *-ase, -iese, etc.*, **Pretérito Imperfecto** (*Tercera Forma*).

<sup>1</sup> Cf. p. 222, footnote 3.

<sup>2</sup> Called **Futuro Imperfecto** in the Grammar of the Spanish Academy.

## Imperfecto (Imperfect)

yo era	estaba	había	tenía
tú eras	estabas	habías	tenías
él era	estaba	había	tenía
nosotros éramos	estábamos	habíamos	teníamos
vosotros erais	estabais	habíais	teníais
ellos eran	estaban	habían	tenían

## Pretérito (Preterit)

yo fui	estuve	hube	tuve
tú fuiste	estuviste	hubiste	tuviste
él fué	estuvo	hubo	tuvo
nosotros fuimos	estuvimos	hubimos	tuvimos
vosotros fuisteis	estuvisteis	hubisteis	tuvisteis
ellos fueron	estuvieron	hubieron	tuvieron

## Futuro (Future)

yo seré	estaré	habré	tendré
tú serás	estarás	habrás	tendrás
él será	estará	habrá	tendrá
nosotros seremos	estaremos	habremos	tendremos
vosotros seréis	estaréis	habréis	tendréis
ellos serán	estarán	habrán	tendrán

## Condicional (Conditional)

yo sería	estaría	habría	tendría
tú serías	estarías	habrías	tendrías
él sería	estaría	habría	tendría
nosotros seríamos	estaríamos	habríamos	tendríamos
vosotros seríais	estaríais	habríais	tendríais
ellos serían	estarían	habrían	tendrían

## MODO SUBJUNTIVO (Subjunctive Mood)

## Presente (Present)

yo sea	esté	haya	tenga
tú seas	estés	hayas	tengas
él sea	esté	haya	tenga
nosotros seamos	estemos	hayamos	tengamos
vosotros seáis	estéis	hayáis	tengáis
ellos sean	estén	hayan	tengan

Imperfecto (*Primera Forma*)  
(Imperfect [First Form])

yo fuera	estuviera	hubiera	tuviera
tú fueras	estuvieras	hubieras	tuvieras
él fuera	estuviera	hubiera	tuviera
nosotros fuéramos	estuviéramos	hubiéramos	tuviéramos
vosotros fuerais	estuvierais	hubierais	tuvierais
ellos fueran	estuvieran	hubieran	tuvieran

**Imperfecto (*Segunda Forma*)**  
(Imperfect [Second Form])

yo fuese	estuviese	hubiese	tuviese
tú fueses	estuvieses	hubieses	tuvieses
él fuese	estuviese	hubiese	tuviese
nosotros fuésemos	estuviésemos	hubiésemos	tuviésemos
vosotros fueseis	estuvieseis	hubieseis	tuvieseis
ellos fuesen	estuviesen	hubiesen	tuviesen

**Futuro (*Future*)**

yo fuere	estuviere	hubiere	tuviere
tú fueres	estuvieres	hubieres	tuvieres
él fuere	estuviere	hubiere	tuviere
nosotros fuéremos	estuviéremos	hubiéremos	tuviéremos
vosotros fuereis	estuviereis	hubiereis	tuviereis
ellos fueren	estuvieren	hubieren	tuvieren

**MODO IMPERATIVO (*Imperative Mood*)**

sé (tú)	está (tú)	hé (tú)	ten (tú)
sed (vosotros)	estad (vosotros)	habed (vosotros)	tened (vosotros)

410. The compound tenses of a verb are composed of the proper forms of the auxiliary **haber** and the past participle of the verb. Paradigms of the compound tenses of the three regular conjugations follow:

**EJEMPLOS DE LOS TIEMPOS COMPUESTOS DE LAS TRES CONJUGACIONES REGULARES**

(Examples of the Compound Tenses of the Three Regular Conjugations)

**Infinitivo (*Infinitive*)**

411. haber hablado <i>to have spoken</i>	412. haber debido <i>to have owed</i>	413. haber vivido <i>to have lived</i>
---	--	---

**Gerundio (*Participle*)**

habiendo hablado <i>having spoken</i>	habiendo debido <i>having owed</i>	habiendo vivido <i>having lived</i>
--	---------------------------------------	--

**MODO INDICATIVO (*Indicative Mood*)**

**Perfecto<sup>1</sup> (*Perfect*)**

<i>I have spoken, etc.</i>	<i>I have owed, etc.</i>	<i>I have lived, etc.</i>
he hablado	he debido	he vivido
has hablado, etc.	has debido, etc.	has vivido, etc.

<sup>1</sup> The preterit and the past anterior, together with this tense, are grouped without distinction under one head, **Pretérito Perfecto**, in the Grammar of the Spanish Academy. The preterit is here called **Pretérito**, the perfect, **Perfecto**, and the past anterior, **Pretérito Perfecto**, in order to distinguish them.

**Pluscuamperfecto<sup>1</sup> (Pluperfect)**

*I had spoken, etc.*  
había hablado, etc.

*I had owed, etc.*  
había debido, etc.

*I had lived, etc.*  
había vivido, etc.

**Pretérito Perfecto<sup>2</sup> (Past Anterior)**

*I had spoken, etc.*  
hube hablado, etc.

*I had owed, etc.*  
hube debido, etc.

*I had lived, etc.*  
hube vivido, etc.

**Futuro Perfecto (Future Perfect)**

*I shall have spoken, etc.*  
habré hablado, etc.

*I shall have owed, etc.*  
habré debido, etc.

*I shall have lived, etc.*  
habré vivido, etc.

**Condicional Perfecto<sup>3</sup> (Conditional Perfect)**

*I might (or should) have  
spoken, etc.*  
habría hablado, etc.

*I might (or should)  
have owed, etc.*  
habría debido, etc.

*I might (or should)  
have lived, etc.*  
habría vivido, etc.

**MODO SUBJUNTIVO (Subjunctive Mood)  
Perfecto (Perfect)**

*I may have spoken, etc.*  
haya hablado, etc.

*I may have owed, etc.*  
haya debido, etc.

*I may have lived, etc.*  
haya vivido, etc.

**Pluscuamperfecto<sup>1</sup> (Primera Forma) (Pluperfect [First Form])**

*I might (or should) have  
spoken, etc.*  
hubiera hablado, etc.

*I might (or should)  
have owed, etc.*  
hubiera debido, etc.

*I might (or should) have  
lived, etc.*  
hubiera vivido, etc.

**Pluscuamperfecto<sup>1</sup> (Segunda Forma) (Pluperfect [Second Form])**

*I might (or should) have  
spoken, etc.*  
hubiese hablado, etc.

*I might (or should)  
have owed, etc.*  
hubiese debido, etc.

*I might (or should) have  
lived, etc.*  
hubiese vivido, etc.

**Futuro Perfecto (Future Perfect)**

*I shall (or should) have  
spoken, etc.*  
hubiere hablado, etc.

*I shall (or should)  
have owed, etc.*  
hubiere debido, etc.

*I shall (or should) have  
lived, etc.*  
hubiere vivido, etc.

**414.** The passive voice of a verb is composed by the use of the proper form of the auxiliary *ser* and the past participle of the verb.

<sup>1</sup> Called **Pretérito Pluscuamperfecto** in the Grammar of the Spanish Academy.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. p. 225, footnote 1.

<sup>3</sup> This tense is usually grouped under the subjunctive in Spanish grammars and called **Pretérito Pluscuamperfecto**, without further distinction.



The formation of the tenses of the passive of a regular verb of the first conjugation is indicated below:

**VOZ PASIVA DE UN VERBO DE LA PRIMERA CONJUGACIÓN**  
(Passive Voice of a Verb of the First Conjugation)

**Infinitivo (Infinitive)**

**ser llamado, -a, -os, -as, *to be called***

**Gerundio (Present Participle)**

**siendo llamado, -a, -os, -as, *being called***

**Participio Pasivo (Past Participle)**

**llamado, -a, -os, -as, *called***

**MODO INDICATIVO (Indicative Mood)**

**Presente (Present)**

*I am called, etc.*

**soy llamado, -a**

**somos llamados, -as**

**eres llamado, -a**

**sois llamados, -as**

**es llamado, -a**

**son llamados, -as**

**Imperfecto (Imperfect)**

*I was called, was being called, used to be called, etc.*

**era llamado, -a**

**eras llamado, -a, etc.**

**Pretérito (Preterit)**

*I was called, etc.*

**fuí llamado, -a**

**fuiste llamado, -a, etc.**

**Futuro (Future)**

*I shall be called, etc.*

**seré llamado, -a**

**serás llamado, -a, etc.**

**Condicional (Conditional)**

*I should be called, etc.*

**sería llamado, -a**

**serías llamado, -a, etc.**

**MODO SUBJUNTIVO (Subjunctive Mood)**

**Presente (Present)**

*I may be called, etc.*

**sea llamado, -a**

**seas llamado, -a, etc.**

**Imperfecto (Primera Forma) (Imperfect [First Form])**

*I might (or should) be called, etc.*

**fuera llamado, -a**

**fueras llamado, -a, etc.**

**Imperfecto** (*Segunda Forma*) (Imperfect [Second Form])*I might (or should) be called, etc.***fuese llamado, -a****fueses llamado, -a, etc.****Futuro** (Future)*I shall (or should) be called, etc.***fuere llamado, -a****fueres llamado, -a, etc.****MODO IMPERATIVO** (Imperative Mood)**Presente** (Present)*be (thou) called***sé llamado, -a***be (ye) called***sed llamados, -as****TIEMPOS COMPUESTOS** (Compound Tenses)**Infinitivo** (Infinitive)**haber sido llamado, -a, -os, -as, to have been called****Gerundio** (Participle)**habiendo sido llamado, -a, -os, -as, having been called****MODO INDICATIVO** (Indicative Mood)**Perfecto**<sup>1</sup> (Perfect)*I have been called, etc.***he sido llamado, -a****has sido llamado, -a, etc.****Pluscuamperfecto**<sup>2</sup> (Pluperfect)*I had been called, etc.***había sido llamado, -a****habías sido llamado, -a, etc.****Pretérito Perfecto**<sup>1</sup> (Past Anterior)*I had been called, etc.***hube sido llamado, -a****hubiste sido llamado, -a, etc.****Futuro Perfecto** (Future Perfect)*I shall have been called, etc.***habré sido llamado, -a****habrás sido llamado, -a, etc.****Condicional Perfecto**<sup>3</sup> (Conditional Perfect)*I should have been called, etc.***habría sido llamado, -a****habrías sido llamado, -a, etc.**<sup>1</sup> Cf. p. 225, footnote 1.<sup>2</sup> Cf. p. 226, footnote 1.<sup>3</sup> Cf. p. 226, footnote 3.

## MODO SUBJUNTIVO (Subjunctive Mood)

**Perfecto (Perfect)***I may have been called, etc.***haya sido llamado, -a****hayas sido llamado, -a, etc.****Pluscuamperfecto (Primera Forma)<sup>1</sup>**

(Pluperfect [First Form])

*I might (or should) have been called, etc.***hubiera sido llamado, -a****hubieras sido llamado, -a, etc.****Pluscuamperfecto (Segunda Forma)<sup>1</sup>**

(Pluperfect [Second Form])

*I might (or should) have been called, etc.***hubiese sido llamado, -a****hubieses sido llamado, -a, etc.****Futuro Perfecto (Future Perfect)***I shall (or should) have been called, etc.***hubiere sido llamado, -a****hubieres sido llamado, -a, etc.****LISTA DE VERBOS IRREGULARES**

(List of Irregular Verbs)

**415.** The following list comprises most of the irregular verbs, including radical-changing verbs, except the verbs that undergo orthographic changes and the verbs ending in **-cer** or **-cir** preceded by a vowel. These follow the rules set forth in §§ 334-340. The numbers refer to the sections where the verb itself or a paradigm is to be found. Compound verbs as well as simple verbs are given.

**A****abnegar**, 'to renounce,' cf. § 343.**abolir**, 'to abolish,' cf. § 430.**abrir**, 'to open,' cf. § 365.**absolver**, 'to absolve,' cf. §§ 346, 374.**abstenerse**, 'to abstain,' cf. § 409.**abstraer**, 'to abstract,' cf. § 307.**abuñolar**, 'to turn eggs in frying,' cf. § 345.**acentuar**, 'to accent,' cf. § 341, 2.**acertar**, 'to hit the mark,' 'succeed,' cf. § 343.**aclocar**, 'to brood,' cf. § 345.**acordar**, 'to remember,' cf. § 345.**acornar**, 'to butt,' cf. § 345.**acostar**, 'to lay down,' cf. § 345.**acrecentar**, 'to increase,' cf. § 343.**actuar**, 'to act,' cf. § 341, 2.**acuantiar**, 'to determine a quantity,' cf. § 341, 1.**adecentar**, 'to render decent,' cf. § 343.**adestrar**, 'to train,' cf. § 343.**adherir**, 'to adhere,' cf. § 354.**adormir**, 'to fall asleep,' cf. § 352.**adquirir**, 'to acquire,' cf. § 355.**aducir**, 'to adduce,' cf. § 248.**advertir**, 'to advise,' 'warn,' cf. § 354.**afollar**, 'to blow with bellows,' cf. § 345.<sup>1</sup> Cf. p. 226, footnote 1.

aforar, 'to gage,' cf. § 345.  
 agorar, 'to divine,' cf. § 345.  
 aguerrir, 'to accustom to war,' cf. § 430.  
 alebrarse, 'to squat,' cf. § 343.  
 alentar, 'to breathe,' 'animate,' cf. § 343.  
 aliarse, 'to be allied,' cf. § 341, 1.  
 aliquebrar, 'to break the wings,' cf. § 343.  
 almorzar, 'to breakfast,' cf. § 345.  
 alongar, 'to prolong,' cf. § 345.  
 amoblar, 'to furnish,' cf. § 345.  
 amolar, 'to whet,' 'grind,' cf. § 345.  
 amover, 'to remove,' cf. § 346.  
 ampliar, 'to amplify,' cf. § 341, 1.  
 andar, 'to go,' cf. § 207.  
 antedecir, 'to predict,' cf. §§ 247, 428.  
 anteponer, 'to prefer,' cf. § 233.  
 antever, 'to foresee,' cf. § 296.  
 apacentar, 'to graze,' cf. § 343.  
 apercollar, 'to seize by the collar,' cf. § 345.  
 apernar, 'to seize by the legs,' cf. § 343.  
 apacer, 'to appease,' cf. § 376.  
 apostar, 'to bet,' cf. § 345.  
 apretar, 'to compress,' cf. § 343.  
 aprobar, 'to approve,' cf. § 345.  
 argüir, 'to argue,' cf. § 362.  
 arrecirse, 'to grow numb,' cf. § 430.  
 arrendar, 'to rent,' 'bridle,' cf. § 343.  
 arrepentirse, 'to repent,' cf. § 354.  
 arriar (*naut.*), 'to lower,' 'strike,' cf. § 341, 1.  
 arruar, 'to grunt,' cf. § 341, 2.  
 ascender, 'to ascend,' cf. § 344.  
 asentar, 'to seat,' cf. § 343.  
 asentir, 'to coincide,' cf. § 354.  
 aserrar, 'to saw,' cf. § 343.  
 asir, 'to seize,' cf. § 225.  
 asolar, 'to level,' 'destroy,' cf. § 345.  
 asoldar, 'to hire,' cf. § 345.  
 asonar, 'to be assonant,' cf. § 345.  
 asosegar, 'to calm,' cf. § 343.  
 atañer, 'to appertain,' cf. § 376.  
 ataviar, 'to adorn,' cf. § 341, 1.  
 atender, 'to attend,' cf. § 344.  
 atenerse, 'to abide by,' cf. § 409.  
 atentar, 'to attempt a crime,' cf. § 343.

atenuar, 'to attenuate,' cf. § 341, 2.  
 aterirse, 'to grow numb,' cf. § 430.  
 aterrar, 'to terrify,' cf. § 343.  
 atestar, 'to cram,' cf. § 343.  
 atraer, 'to attract,' cf. § 307.  
 atravesar, 'to traverse,' cf. § 343.  
 atribuir, 'to attribute,' cf. § 361.  
 atronar, 'to thunder,' cf. § 345.  
 avenir, 'to reconcile,' cf. § 256.  
 aventar, 'to fan,' cf. § 343.  
 avergonzar, 'to shame,' cf. § 345.  
 averiarse, 'to sustain damage,' cf. § 341, 1.  
 aviar, 'to get ready,' cf. § 341, 1.  
 azolar, 'to dress timber,' cf. § 345.

## B

bendecir, 'to bless,' cf. §§ 247, 428, 429.  
 bienquerer, 'to esteem,' cf. § 212.

## C

caber, 'to fit,' cf. § 333.  
 caer, 'to fall,' cf. § 224.  
 calentar, 'to warm,' cf. § 343.  
 calofriarse, 'to shiver,' cf. § 341, 1.  
 cariarse (*med.*), 'to grow carious,' cf. § 341, 1.  
 cegar, 'to blind,' cf. § 343.  
 ceñir, 'to gird,' cf. § 357.  
 cerner, 'to sift,' cf. § 344.  
 cerrar, 'to close,' cf. § 343.  
 ciar, 'to back up,' cf. § 341, 1.  
 cimentar, 'to found,' cf. § 343.  
 circuir, 'to encircle,' cf. § 361.  
 clocar, 'to cluck,' cf. § 345.  
 cocer, 'to boil,' 'bake,' cf. § 349.  
 coextenderse, 'to co-extend,' cf. § 344.  
 colar, 'to strain,' 'filter,' cf. § 345.  
 colegir, 'to collect,' cf. § 357.  
 colgar, 'to hang up,' cf. § 345.  
 comedirse, 'to behave,' cf. § 357.  
 comenzar, 'to commence,' cf. § 343.  
 competir, 'to compete,' cf. § 357.  
 complacer, 'to please,' cf. § 379, note.  
 componer, 'to compose,' cf. § 233.  
 comprobar, 'to verify,' cf. § 345.

**concebir**, 'to conceive,' cf. § 357.  
**conceptuar**, 'to judge,' cf. § 341, 2.  
**concernir**, 'to concern,' cf. § 378.  
**concertar**, 'to concert,' cf. § 343.  
**concluir**, 'to conclude,' cf. § 361.  
**concordar**, 'to accord,' 'agree,' cf. § 345.  
**condescender**, 'to condescend,' cf. § 344.  
**condolerse**, 'to condole,' cf. § 346.  
**conducir**, 'to conduct,' cf. § 248.  
**conferir**, 'to confer,' cf. § 354.  
**confesar**, 'to confess,' cf. § 343.  
**confiar**, 'to confide,' cf. § 341, 1.  
**confluir**, 'to join,' cf. § 361.  
**conmover**, 'to move,' 'affect,' cf. § 346.  
**conseguir**, 'to obtain,' cf. § 357.  
**consentir**, 'to consent,' cf. § 354.  
**consolar**, 'to console,' cf. § 345.  
**consonar**, 'to rhyme,' cf. § 345.  
**constituir**, 'to constitute,' cf. § 361.  
**constreñir**, 'to constrain,' cf. § 357.  
**construir**, 'to construct,' cf. § 361.  
**contar**, 'to count,' cf. § 345.  
**contender**, 'to contend,' cf. § 344.  
**contener**, 'to contain,' cf. § 409.  
**continuar**, 'to continue,' cf. § 341, 2.  
**contorcerse**, 'to be distorted,' cf. § 346.  
**contradecir**, 'to contradict,' cf. §§ 247, 428.  
**contraer**, 'to contract,' cf. § 307.  
**contrahacer**, 'to counterfeit,' cf. § 219.  
**contraponer**, 'to oppose,' cf. § 233.  
**contrariar**, 'to oppose,' cf. § 341, 1.  
**contravenir**, 'to contravene,' cf. § 256.  
**contribuir**, 'to contribute,' cf. § 361.  
**controvertir**, 'to controvert,' cf. § 354.  
**convenir**, 'to agree,' cf. § 256.  
**convertir**, 'to convert,' cf. § 354.  
**corregir**, 'to correct,' cf. § 357.  
**correntiar**, 'to irrigate,' cf. § 341, 1.  
**corroer**, 'to corrode,' cf. §§ 382, 383.  
**costar**, 'to cost,' cf. § 345.  
**creer**, 'to believe,' cf. § 122.  
**criar**, 'to rear,' cf. § 341, 1.  
**cuantiar**, 'to appraise,' cf. § 341, 1.  
**cubrir**, 'to cover,' cf. § 365.

## Ch

**chirriar**, 'to squeak,' cf. § 341, 1.

## D

**dar**, 'to give,' cf. § 206.  
**decaer**, 'to decay,' cf. § 224.  
**decentar**, 'to begin to lose' (*as of health*), cf. § 343.  
**decir**, 'to say,' cf. § 247.  
**deducir**, 'to deduce,' cf. § 248.  
**defender**, 'to defend,' cf. § 344.  
**deferir**, 'to defer,' cf. § 354.  
**degollar**, 'to behead,' cf. § 345.  
**demoler**, 'to demolish,' cf. § 346.  
**demonstrar**, 'to demonstrate,' cf. § 345.  
**denegar**, 'to deny,' cf. § 343.  
**denostar**, 'to insult,' cf. § 345.  
**dentar**, 'to indent,' cf. § 343.  
**deponer**, 'to depose,' cf. § 233.  
**derrenegar**, 'to abhor,' cf. § 343.  
**derrengar**, 'to cripple,' cf. § 343.  
**derretir**, 'to melt,' cf. § 357.  
**derrocar**, 'to pull down,' cf. § 345.  
**derruir**, 'to demolish,' cf. § 361.  
**desacertar**, 'to blunder,' cf. § 343.  
**desacollar**, 'to dig up ground' (*about vines*), cf. § 345.  
**desacordar**, 'to make discordant,' cf. § 345.  
**desadvertir**, 'to give no heed,' cf. § 354.  
**desaferrar**, 'to loosen,' cf. § 343.  
**desafiar**, 'to challenge,' cf. § 341, 1.  
**desaforar**, 'to infringe,' cf. § 345.  
**desalentar**, 'to discourage,' cf. § 343.  
**desamoblar**, 'to remove furniture,' cf. § 345.  
**desandar**, 'to retrace steps,' cf. § 207.  
**desapretar**, 'to slacken,' cf. § 343.  
**desaprobar**, 'to disapprove,' cf. § 345.  
**desarrendar**, 'to unbridle,' cf. § 343.  
**desasentar**, 'to disagree,' cf. § 343.  
**desasir**, 'to let go,' cf. § 225.  
**desasosegar**, 'to disturb,' cf. § 343.  
**desatender**, 'to disregard,' cf. § 344.  
**desatentar**, 'to perturb,' cf. § 343.  
**desatraer**, 'to separate,' cf. § 307.  
**desavenir**, 'to discompose,' cf. § 256.  
**descarriar**, 'to mislead,' cf. § 341, 1.

- descender**, 'to descend,' cf. § 344.  
**desceñir**, 'to ungird,' cf. § 357.  
**descolgar**, 'to unhang,' cf. § 345.  
**descollar**, 'to stand forth,' 'excel,' cf. § 345.  
**descomedirse**, 'to be disrespectful,' cf. § 357.  
**descomponer**, 'to discompose,' cf. § 233.  
**desconcertar**, 'to disconcert,' cf. § 343.  
**desconfiar**, 'to distrust,' cf. § 341, 1.  
**desconsentir**, 'to dissent,' cf. § 354.  
**desconsolar**, 'to make disconsolate,' cf. § 345.  
**descontar**, 'to discount,' cf. § 345.  
**desconvenir**, 'to disagree,' cf. § 256.  
**descordar**, 'to remove cords,' cf. § 345.  
**descornar**, 'to remove horns,' cf. § 345.  
**descriarse**, 'to weaken,' cf. § 341, 1.  
**descubrir**, 'to uncover,' cf. § 365.  
**desdar**, 'to take back,' cf. § 206.  
**desdecir**, 'to gainsay,' cf. §§ 247, 428.  
**desdentar**, 'to remove teeth,' cf. § 343.  
**desempedrar**, 'to unpave,' cf. § 343.  
**desencerrar**, 'to release from confinement,' cf. § 343.  
**desencordar**, 'to unstring,' cf. § 345.  
**desengrosar**, 'to make lean,' cf. § 345.  
**desentenderse**, 'to disregard,' cf. § 344.  
**desenterrar**, 'to disinter,' cf. § 343.  
**desenvolver**, 'to unfold,' cf. § 346.  
**deservir**, 'to neglect duty,' cf. § 357.  
**desfloar**, 'to remove flocks' (*of wool*), cf. § 345.  
**desgobernar**, 'to misgovern,' cf. § 343.  
**deshacer**, 'to undo,' cf. § 219.  
**deshelar**, 'to thaw,' cf. §§ 343, 416.  
**desherber**, 'to pluck out herbs,' cf. § 343.  
**desherrar**, 'to unchain,' 'remove horseshoes,' cf. § 343.  
**desinvernar**, 'to leave winter quarters,' cf. § 343.  
**desleir**, 'to dilute,' cf. § 358.  
**deslendar**, 'to remove nits,' cf. § 343.  
**desmajolar**, 'to uproot vines,' 'loosen shoe-strings,' cf. § 345.  
**desmarrirse**, 'to become sad,' cf. § 430.  
**desmedirse**, 'to go beyond bounds,' cf. § 357.  
**desmelar**, 'to take honey from a hive,' cf. § 343.  
**desmembrar**, 'to dismember,' cf. § 343.  
**desmentir**, 'to belie,' cf. § 354.  
**desnegar**, 'to retract,' cf. § 343.  
**desnevar**, 'to thaw' (*of snow*), cf. § 343.  
**desobstruir**, 'to remove obstruction,' cf. § 361.  
**desoír**, 'to feign not to hear,' cf. § 304.  
**desolar**, 'to make desolate,' cf. § 345.  
**desoldar**, 'to unsolder,' cf. § 345.  
**desollar**, 'to flay,' cf. § 345.  
**desosar**, 'to remove bones,' cf. §§ 345, 348, note.  
**desovar**, 'to spawn,' cf. §§ 345, 348, note.  
**despavorir**, 'to be terrified,' cf. § 430.  
**despedir**, 'to dismiss,' cf. § 357.  
**despedrar**, 'to clear of stones,' cf. § 343.  
**despernar**, 'to remove legs,' cf. § 343.  
**despertar**, 'to awaken,' cf. § 343.  
**despezar**, 'to diminish,' (*arch.*) 'bond stones,' cf. § 343.  
**desplacer**, 'to displease,' cf. § 379, note.  
**desplegar**, 'to unfold,' cf. § 343.  
**despoblar**, 'to depopulate,' cf. § 345.  
**desproveer**, 'to leave unprovided,' cf. § 296, footnote to *ver*, p. 238.  
**destentar**, 'to lead out of temptation,' cf. § 343.  
**desteñir**, 'to discolor,' 'fade,' cf. § 357.  
**desterrar**, 'to exile,' cf. § 343.  
**destituir**, 'to deprive,' cf. § 361.  
**destorcer**, 'to untwist,' cf. § 346.  
**destrocar**, 'to return a thing bartered,' cf. § 345.  
**destruir**, 'to destroy,' cf. § 361.  
**desvariar**, 'to rave,' cf. § 341, 1.

desventar, 'to vent,' cf. § 343.  
 desvergonzarse, 'to be shameless (or impudent),' cf. § 345.  
 desviar, 'to divert,' cf. § 341, 1.  
 desvirtuar, 'to pall,' cf. § 341, 2.  
 desvolver, 'to alter the shape of a thing,' 'plow,' cf. § 346.  
 detener, 'to detain,' cf. § 409.  
 detraer, 'to detract,' cf. § 307.  
 devolver, 'to give back,' cf. § 346.  
 diferir, 'to defer,' 'delay,' cf. § 354.  
 difluir, 'to be diffused,' cf. § 361.  
 digerir, 'to digest,' cf. § 354.  
 diluir, 'to dilute,' cf. § 361.  
 discernir, 'to discern,' cf. § 344, footnote 1.  
 disconvenir, 'to disagree,' cf. § 256.  
 discordar, 'to disagree,' cf. § 345.  
 disentir, 'to dissent,' cf. § 354.  
 disminuir, 'to diminish,' cf. § 361.  
 disolver, 'to dissolve,' cf. § 346.  
 disonar, 'to be in dissonance,' cf. § 345.  
 despertar, 'to awaken,' cf. § 343.  
 displacer, 'to displease,' cf. § 379, note.  
 disponer, 'to dispose,' cf. § 233.  
 distender, 'to distend,' cf. § 344.  
 distraer, 'to distract,' cf. § 307.  
 distribuir, 'to distribute,' cf. § 361.  
 divertir, 'to divert,' cf. § 354.  
 dolar, 'to hew' (*of wood or stone*), cf. § 345.  
 doler, 'to pain,' cf. § 346.  
 dormir, 'to sleep,' cf. § 352.  
 ducir,<sup>1</sup> 'to guide,' 'teach,' cf. § 248.

## E

educir, 'to bring out,' cf. § 248.  
 efectuar, 'to effect,' cf. § 341, 2.  
 elegir, 'to elect,' cf. § 357.  
 embaír, 'to impose,' 'deceive,' cf. § 430.  
 embestir, 'to assail,' cf. § 357.  
 emparentar, 'to become related by marriage,' cf. § 343.  
 empedernir, 'to harden,' cf. § 430.  
 empedrar, 'to pave,' cf. § 343.  
 empellar, 'to urge,' cf. § 343.  
 empezar, 'to begin,' cf. § 343.

emporcar, 'to soil,' 'befoul,' cf. § 345.  
 encender, 'to light,' cf. § 344.  
 encentar, 'to begin the use of a thing,' cf. § 343.  
 encerrar, 'to shut up,' cf. § 343.  
 enclocar, 'to cluck,' cf. § 345.  
 encomendar, 'to commend,' cf. § 343.  
 encontrar, 'to meet,' cf. § 345.  
 encorar, 'to cover with leather,' cf. § 345.  
 encordar, 'to string' (*of musical instruments*), cf. § 345.  
 encornar, 'to horn,' 'gore,' cf. § 345.  
 encovar, 'to put into a cellar,' 'conceal,' cf. § 345.  
 encubertar, 'to caparison,' cf. § 343.  
 endentar, 'to gear,' cf. § 343.  
 enfriar, 'to cool,' cf. § 341, 1.  
 engorar, 'to addle,' cf. § 345.  
 engreír, 'to elate,' cf. § 358.  
 engrosar, 'to fatten,' 'strengthen,' cf. § 345.  
 enhestar, 'to erect,' cf. § 343.  
 enmelar, 'to honey,' cf. § 343.  
 enmendar, 'to amend,' cf. § 343.  
 enrodar, 'to break on the wheel,' cf. § 345.  
 ensangrentar, 'to cover with blood,' cf. § 343.  
 entender, 'to hear,' 'understand,' cf. § 344.  
 enterrar, 'to inter,' cf. § 343.  
 entortar, 'to make crooked,' cf. § 345.  
 entredecir, 'to interdict,' cf. § 247.  
 entremorir, 'to pine away,' 'flicker,' cf. § 353.  
 entreoír, 'to hear indistinctly,' cf. § 304.  
 entrepernar, 'to put the legs in between (something else),' cf. § 343.  
 entreponer, 'to interpose,' cf. § 233.  
 entretener, 'to delay,' 'entertain,' cf. § 409.  
 entrever, 'to see imperfectly,' cf. § 296.  
 investir, 'to invest,' cf. § 357.  
 enviar, 'to send,' cf. § 341, 1.  
 envolver, 'to involve,' 'wrap up,' cf. § 346.  
 equivaler, 'to equal,' cf. § 324.

<sup>1</sup> The verb *ducir*, 'to lead,' occurs seldom save in compounds.

erguir, 'to erect,' cf. § 359.  
 errar, 'to err,' cf. § 347.  
 escarmentar, 'to take warning by example,' 'correct severely,' cf. § 343.  
 escocer, 'to smart,' cf. § 349.  
 escolar, 'to strain,' cf. § 345.  
 escribir, 'to write,' cf. § 365.  
 esforzar, 'to strengthen,' cf. § 345.  
 espiar, 'to spy,' cf. § 341, 1.  
 estar, 'to be,' cf. § 407.  
 estatuir, 'to establish,' cf. § 361.  
 estregar, 'to rub,' cf. § 343.  
 estreñir, 'to bind,' cf. § 357.  
 estriar (*arch.*), 'to flute,' cf. § 341, 1.  
 evaluar, 'to value,' cf. § 341, 2.  
 exceptuar, 'to except,' cf. § 341, 2.  
 excluir, 'to exclude,' cf. § 361.  
 expedir, 'to expedite,' cf. § 357.  
 expiar, 'to expiate,' cf. § 341, 1.  
 exponer, 'to expose,' cf. § 233.  
 extender, 'to extend,' cf. § 344.  
 extenuar, 'to attenuate,' cf. § 341, 2.  
 extraer, 'to extract,' cf. § 307.

## F

ferrar, 'to garnish with iron,' cf. § 343.  
 fiar, 'to trust,' cf. § 341, 1.  
 fluctuar, 'to fluctuate,' cf. § 341, 2.  
 fluir, 'to flow,' cf. § 361.  
 follar, 'to blow with bellows,' cf. § 345.  
 forzar, 'to force,' cf. § 345.  
 fregar, 'to rub,' cf. § 343.  
 freír, 'to fry,' cf. §§ 358, 366, 370.

## G

ganzuar, 'to pick locks,' cf. § 341, 2.  
 garantir, 'to guarantee,' cf. § 430.  
 gemir, 'to groan,' cf. § 357.  
 gloriarse, 'to glory,' cf. § 341, 1.  
 gobernar, 'to govern,' cf. § 343.  
 graduar, 'to graduate,' cf. § 341, 2.  
 gruir, 'to cry like cranes,' cf. § 361.  
 guiar, 'to guide,' cf. § 341, 1.

## H

haber, 'to have,' cf. § 408.  
 habitar, 'to accustom,' cf. § 341, 2.  
 hacendar, 'to transfer property,' cf. § 343.

hacer, 'to do,' 'make,' cf. § 219.  
 hastiar, 'to loathe,' cf. § 341, 1.  
 heder, 'to have a stench,' cf. § 344.  
 helar, 'to freeze,' cf. §§ 343, 416.  
 henchir, 'to stuff,' 'cram,' cf. § 357.  
 hender, 'to cleave,' cf. § 344.  
 heñir, 'to knead dough,' cf. § 357.  
 herbar, 'to dress skins (with herbs),' cf. § 343.  
 herir, 'to wound,' cf. § 354.  
 herrar, 'to shoe (a horse),' cf. § 343.  
 hervir, 'to boil,' cf. § 354.  
 holgar, 'to be idle,' cf. § 345.  
 hollar, 'to trample on,' cf. § 345.  
 huir, 'to flee,' cf. § 361.

## I

imbuir, 'to imbue,' cf. § 361.  
 impedir, 'to impede,' cf. § 357.  
 imponer, 'to impose,' cf. § 233.  
 imprimir, 'to print,' cf. § 365.  
 improbar, 'to disapprove,' cf. § 345.  
 incensar, 'to incense,' cf. § 343.  
 incluir, 'to include,' cf. § 361.  
 indisponer, 'to indispose,' cf. § 233.  
 individuar, 'to distinguish,' cf. § 341, 2.  
 inducir, 'to induce,' cf. § 248.  
 infatuar, 'to infatuate,' cf. § 341, 2.  
 inferir, 'to infer,' cf. § 354.  
 infernar, 'to damn,' cf. § 343.  
 influir, 'to influence,' cf. § 361.  
 ingerir, 'to insert,' 'graft,' cf. § 354.  
 inhestar, 'to erect,' cf. § 343.  
 inquirir, 'to inquire,' cf. § 355.  
 inscribir, 'to inscribe,' cf. § 365, footnote 1.  
 insinuar, 'to insinuate,' cf. § 341, 2.  
 instituir, 'to institute,' cf. § 361.  
 instruir, 'to instruct,' cf. § 361.  
 interdecir, 'to interdict,' cf. § 247.  
 interponer, 'to interpose,' cf. § 233.  
 intervenir, 'to intervene,' cf. § 256.  
 introducir, 'to introduce,' cf. § 248.  
 invernar, 'to winter,' cf. § 343.  
 invertir, 'to invert,' cf. § 354.  
 investir, 'to invest,' cf. § 357.  
 ir, 'to go,' cf. § 255.

## J

jugar, 'to play,' cf. § 350.



## L

**leer**, 'to read,' cf. § 122.  
**liar**, 'to bind,' cf. § 341, 1.  
**licuefacer**, 'to liquefy,' cf. § 219,  
 note.  
**luir**, 'to gall,' 'wear away,' cf. § 361.

## LI

**llover**, 'to rain,' cf. §§ 346, 416.

## M

**maldecir**, 'to curse,' cf. §§ 247, 428,  
 429.  
**malherir**, 'to wound badly,' cf. § 354.  
**malquerer**, 'to dislike,' cf. § 212.  
**malsonar**, 'to make offensive noise,'  
 cf. § 345.  
**maltraer**, 'to maltreat,' cf. § 307.  
**mancornar**, 'to join (*or* tie) together,'  
 cf. § 345.  
**manifestar**, 'to manifest,' cf. § 343.  
**manir**, 'to mellow,' 'mature meat,'  
 cf. § 430.  
**mantener**, 'to maintain,' cf. § 409.  
**medir**, 'to measure,' cf. § 357.  
**melar**, 'to boil clear,'—'deposit  
 honey,' cf. § 343.  
**mentar**, 'to mention,' cf. § 343.  
**mentir**, 'to lie,' cf. § 354.  
**merendar**, 'to lunch,' cf. § 343.  
**moblar**, 'to furnish,' cf. § 345.  
**moler**, 'to grind,' cf. § 346.  
**morder**, 'to bite,' cf. § 346.  
**morir**, 'to die,' cf. §§ 353, 373.  
**mostrar**, 'to show,' cf. § 345.  
**mover**, 'to move,' cf. § 346.

## N

**negar**, 'to deny,' cf. § 343.  
**nevar**, 'to snow,' cf. §§ 343, 416.

## O

**obstruir**, 'to obstruct,' cf. § 361.  
**obtener**, 'to obtain,' cf. § 409.  
**oír**, 'to hear,' cf. § 304.  
**oler**, 'to smell,' cf. § 348.  
**oponer**, 'to oppose,' cf. § 233.

## P

**pedir**, 'to ask,' cf. § 357.  
**pensar**, 'to think,' cf. § 343.  
**perder**, 'to lose,' cf. § 344.  
**perniquebrar**, 'to break the legs,' cf.  
 § 343.  
**perpetuar**, 'to perpetuate,' cf.  
 § 341, 2.  
**perseguir**, 'to pursue,' cf. § 357.  
**pervertir**, 'to pervert,' cf. § 354.  
**piar**, 'to peep,' cf. § 341, 1.  
**placer**, 'to please,' cf. § 379.  
**plegar**, 'to fold,' cf. § 343.  
**poblar**, 'to found,' 'people,' cf. § 345.  
**poder**, 'to be able,' cf. § 232.  
**podrir**, 'to rot,' cf. § 363.  
**poner**, 'to put,' cf. § 233.  
**porfiar**, 'to contend,' cf. § 341, 1.  
**poseer**, 'to possess,' cf. § 122.  
**posponer**, 'to postpone,' cf. § 233.  
**predecir**, 'to predict,' cf. §§ 247, 428.  
**predisponer**, 'to predispose,' cf.  
 § 233.  
**preferir**, 'to prefer,' cf. § 354.  
**premorir**, 'to die first,' cf. § 353.  
**prender**, 'to arrest,' cf. §§ 366, 367.  
**preponer**, 'to put before,' cf. § 233.  
**presentir**, 'to forebode,' cf. § 354.  
**presuponer**, 'to presuppose,' cf.  
 § 233.  
**prevaler**, 'to prevail,' cf. § 324.  
**prevenir**, 'to forestall,' cf. § 256.  
**prever**, 'to foresee,' cf. § 296, foot-  
 note to **ver**, p. 238.  
**probar**, 'to prove,' cf. § 345.  
**producir**, 'to produce,' cf. § 248.  
**proferir**, 'to utter,' cf. § 354.  
**promover**, 'to promote,' cf. § 346.  
**proponer**, 'to propose,' cf. § 233.  
**proscribir**, 'to proscribe,' cf. § 365,  
 footnote 1.  
**proseguir**, 'to pursue,' cf. § 357.  
**prostituir**, 'to prostitute,' cf. § 361.  
**proveer**, 'to provide,' cf. § 296,  
 footnote to **ver**, p. 238.  
**provenir**, 'to proceed,' cf. § 256.  
**puद्रir**, 'to rot,' cf. § 363.  
**puntuar**, 'to punctuate,' cf. § 341, 2.

## Q

**quebrar**, 'to break,' cf. § 343.  
**querer**, 'to wish,' 'like,' cf. § 212.

## R

**raer**, 'to scrape,' cf. § 380.  
**rarefacer**, 'to rarefy,' cf. § 219, note.  
**reapretar**, 'to squeeze again,' cf. § 343.  
**reaventar**, 'to winnow again,' cf. § 343.  
**rebendecir**, 'to bless again,' cf. §§ 247, 428, 429.  
**recaer**, 'to fall back,' cf. § 224.  
**recalentar**, 'to heat again,' cf. § 343.  
**recentar**, 'to leaven,' cf. § 343.  
**receñir**, 'to regird,' cf. § 357.  
**recluir**, 'to seclude,' cf. § 361.  
**recocer**, 'to boil again,' cf. § 349.  
**recolar**, 'to strain again,' cf. § 345.  
**recomendar**, 'to recommend,' cf. § 343.  
**recomponer**, 'to recompose,' cf. § 233.  
**reconducir**, 'to renew a lease,' cf. § 248.  
**reconstruir**, 'to reconstruct,' cf. § 361.  
**recontar**, 'to recount,' cf. § 345.  
**reconvenir**, 'to accuse,' cf. § 256.  
**recordar**, 'to remind,' 'remember,' cf. § 345.  
**recostar**, 'to lean against,' cf. § 345.  
**redargüir**, 'to reargue,' cf. § 362.  
**redituar**, 'to yield,' cf. § 341, 2.  
**redoler**, 'to pain continually,' cf. § 346.  
**reducir**, 'to reduce,' cf. § 248.  
**reelegir**, 'to reelect,' cf. § 357.  
**reencomendar**, 'to commend again,' cf. § 343.  
**referir**, 'to relate,' cf. § 354.  
**refluir**, 'to flow back,' cf. § 361.  
**reforzar**, 'to strengthen,' cf. § 345.  
**refregar**, 'to rub,' 'fray,' cf. § 343.  
**refreír**, 'to fry well,' cf. §§ 358, 370.  
**regar**, 'to water,' cf. § 343.  
**regimentar**, 'to organize a regiment,' cf. § 343.  
**regir**, 'to rule,' cf. § 357.  
**regoldar**, 'to belch,' cf. § 345.  
**rehacer**, 'to make over,' cf. § 219.  
**rehenchir**, 'to refill,' cf. § 357.  
**reherir**, 'to repel,' 'repulse,' cf. § 354.

**reherrar**, 'to reshoe (a horse),' cf. § 343.  
**rehervir**, 'to boil again,' cf. § 354.  
**rehollar**, 'to trample under foot,' cf. § 345.  
**rehuir**, 'to withdraw,' cf. § 361.  
**reír**, 'to laugh,' cf. § 358.  
**remendar**, 'to repair,' cf. § 343.  
**rementir**, 'to lie greatly,' cf. § 354.  
**remoler**, 'to regrind,' cf. § 346.  
**remorder**, 'to bite repeatedly,' cf. § 346.  
**remover**, 'to remove,' cf. § 346.  
**rendir**, 'to subdue,' cf. § 357.  
**renegar**, 'to deny,' cf. § 343.  
**renovar**, 'to renovate,' cf. § 345.  
**reñir**, 'to quarrel,' cf. § 357.  
**repedir**, 'to request again (or repeatedly),' cf. § 357.  
**repensar**, 'to reconsider,' cf. § 343.  
**repetir**, 'to repeat,' cf. § 357.  
**replegar**, 'to refold,' cf. § 343.  
**repoblar**, 'to repeople,' cf. § 345.  
**repodrir**, 'to rot greatly,' cf. § 363.  
**reponer**, 'to put back,' 'reply,' cf. §§ 233, 381.  
**reprobar**, 'to reprove,' cf. § 345.  
**reproducir**, 'to reproduce,' cf. § 248.  
**repudrir**, 'to rot greatly,' cf. § 363.  
**requerbrar**, 'to court,' cf. § 343.  
**requerer**, 'to wish much,' cf. § 212.  
**requerir**, 'to investigate,' cf. § 354.  
**resaber**, 'to know well,' cf. § 242.  
**resalir**, 'to project,' cf. § 305.  
**resegar**, 'to mow again,' cf. § 343.  
**resembrar**, 'to sow again,' cf. § 343.  
**resentirse**, 'to be impaired,' 'resent,' cf. § 354.  
**resfriar**, 'to cool,' cf. § 341, 1.  
**resolver**, 'to resolve,' cf. § 346.  
**resollar**, 'to respire,' cf. § 345.  
**resonar**, 'to resound,' cf. § 345.  
**resquebrar**, 'to crack,' cf. § 343.  
**restituir**, 'to restore,' cf. § 361.  
**restregar**, 'to scrub,' cf. § 343.  
**retemblar**, 'to shake,' cf. § 343.  
**retener**, 'to retain,' cf. § 409.  
**retentar**, 'to threaten with a relapse,' cf. § 343.  
**reteñir**, 'to dye over again,' cf. § 357.  
**retorcer**, 'to twist,' cf. § 346.  
**retostar**, 'to toast again,' cf. § 345.

**retraer**, 'to dissuade,' 'retire,' cf. § 307.

**retribuir**, 'to recompense,' cf. § 361.

**retronar**, 'to peal' (*as of thunder*), cf. § 345.

**retrotraer**, 'to antedate,' cf. § 307.

**revenirse**, 'to waste away,' cf. § 256.

**reventar**, 'to burst,' cf. § 343.

**rever**, 'to review,' cf. § 296, footnote to **ver**, p. 238.

**reverter**, 'to overflow,' cf. § 344.

**revestir**, 'to clothe,' cf. § 357.

**revolar**, 'to fly again,' cf. § 345.

**revolcar**, 'to trample upon,' cf. § 345.

**revolver**, 'to stir,' cf. § 346.

**rociar**, 'to sprinkle,' cf. § 341, 1.

**rodar**, 'to roll,' cf. § 345.

**roer**, 'to gnaw,' cf. § 382.

**rogar**, 'to entreat,' cf. § 345.

**romper**, 'to break,' cf. §§ 366, 369.

**ruar**, 'to strut,' cf. § 341, 2.

## S

**saber**, 'to know,' cf. § 242.

**salir**, 'to go out,' cf. § 305.

**salpimentar**, 'to season with pepper and salt,' cf. § 343.

**sarmentar**, 'to gather prunings of vines,' cf. § 343.

**satisfacer**, 'to satisfy,' cf. § 219, note.

**segar**, 'to mow,' cf. § 343.

**seguir**, 'to follow,' cf. § 357.

**sembrar**, 'to sow,' cf. § 343.

**sementar**, 'to sow,' cf. § 343.

**sentar**, 'to seat,' cf. § 343.

**sentir**, 'to feel,' cf. § 354.

**ser**, 'to be,' cf. § 406.

**serrar**, 'to saw,' cf. § 343.

**servir**, 'to serve,' cf. § 357.

**situar**, 'to station,' cf. § 341, 2.

**sobrentender**, 'to understand' (*as a matter of course*), cf. § 344.

**sobreponer**, 'to put over,' cf. § 233.

**sobresalir**, 'to exceed,' 'overtop,' cf. § 305.

**sobresembrar**, 'to sow over again,' cf. § 343.

**sobresolar**, 'to pave again,' cf. § 345.

**sobrevenir**, 'to happen,' cf. § 256.

**sobreventar** (*naut.*), 'to get the weather-gage,' cf. § 343.

**sobreverterse**, 'to overflow,' cf. § 344.

**sobrevestir**, 'to put on an outer coat,' cf. § 357.

**sofreír**, 'to fry slightly,' cf. §§ 358, 370.

**solar**, 'to floor,' cf. § 345.

**soldar**, 'to solder,' cf. § 345.

**soler**, 'to be accustomed,' cf. §§ 346, 384.

**soltar**, 'to untie,' cf. § 345.

**solver**, 'to loosen,' cf. §§ 346, 374.

**sollar**, 'to blow' (*as with bellows*), cf. § 345.

**sonar**, 'to sound,' cf. § 345.

**sonreír**, 'to smile,' cf. § 358.

**sonrodarse**, 'to stick in the mud' (*of wheels*), cf. § 345.

**soñar**, 'to dream,' cf. § 345.

**sorregar**, 'to water in another course,' cf. § 343.

**sosegar**, 'to appease,' cf. § 343.

**sostener**, 'to sustain,' cf. § 409.

**soterrar**, 'to put underground,' cf. § 343.

**subarrendar**, 'to sublet,' cf. § 343.

**subentender**, 'to understand' (*what is tacitly meant*), cf. § 344.

**subseguir**, 'to be next in sequence,' cf. § 357.

**subtender**, 'to subtend,' cf. § 344.

**subvenir**, 'to aid,' cf. § 256.

**subvertir**, 'to subvert,' cf. § 354.

**sugerir**, 'to suggest,' cf. § 354.

**superponer**, 'to put over,' cf. § 233.

**supervenir**, 'to supervene,' cf. § 256.

**suponer**, 'to suppose,' cf. § 233.

**sustituir**, 'to substitute,' cf. § 361.

**sustraer**, 'to subtract,' cf. § 307.

## T

**telegrafiar**, 'to telegraph,' cf. § 341, 1.

**temblar**, 'to tremble,' cf. § 343.

**tender**, 'to stretch,' cf. § 344.

**tener**, 'to have,' cf. § 409.

**tentar**, 'to feel,' cf. § 343.

**teñir**, 'to dye,' cf. § 357.

**torcer**, 'to twist,' cf. § 346.

**tostar**, 'to toast,' cf. § 345.

traducir, 'to translate,' cf. § 248.  
 traer, 'to bring,' cf. § 307.  
 transcender *or* } 'to transcend,' cf.  
 trascender } § 344.  
 transferir *or* } 'to transfer,' cf. § 354.  
 trasferir }  
 transfregar *or* } 'to rub,' cf. § 343.  
 trasfregar }  
 transponer *or* } 'to transpose,' cf.  
 trasponer } § 233.  
 trascolar, 'to percolate,' cf. § 345.  
 trascordarse, 'to forget,' cf. § 345.  
 trasegar, 'to upset,' cf. § 343.  
 trasoír, 'to misunderstand,' cf. § 304.  
 trasoñar, 'to fancy' (*as in a dream*),  
 cf. § 345.  
 trastocar, 'to change about,' cf.  
 § 345.  
 trasverter, 'to overflow,' cf. § 344.  
 trasvolar, 'to fly across,' cf. § 345.  
 travesar, 'to cross,' cf. § 343.  
 triar, 'to choose,' cf. § 341, 1.  
 trocar, 'to exchange,' cf. § 345.  
 tronar, 'to thunder,' cf. §§ 345, 416.  
 tropezar, 'to stumble,' cf. § 343.  
 tumefacer, 'to cause a swelling,' cf.  
 § 219, note.  
 tumultuar, 'to raise a tumult,' cf.  
 341, 2.

## U

usufructuar, 'to be fruitful,' cf.  
 § 341, 2.

## V

vaciar, 'to empty,' cf. § 341, 1.  
 valer, 'to be worth,' cf. § 324.  
 valuar, 'to value,' cf. § 341, 2.  
 vanagloriarse, 'to be boastful,' cf.  
 § 341, 1.  
 variar, 'to change,' cf. § 341, 1.  
 venir, 'to come,' cf. § 256.  
 ventar, 'to blow,' cf. § 343.  
 ver,<sup>1</sup> 'to see,' cf. § 296.  
 verter, 'to pour,' cf. § 344.  
 vestir, 'to dress,' cf. § 357.  
 vigiar, 'to watch,' cf. § 341, 1.  
 volar, 'to fly,' cf. § 345.  
 volcar, 'to overturn,' cf. § 345.  
 volver, 'to return,' cf. §§ 348, 372.

## Y

yacer, 'to lie,' cf. § 385.  
 yuxtaponer, 'to put in juxtaposition,'  
 cf. § 233.

## Z

zahirir, 'to reproach,' cf. § 354.  
 zurriar, 'to buzz,' cf. § 341, 1.

## VERBOS IMPERSONALES

(Impersonal Verbs)

416. Impersonal verbs are verbs which are used only in the infinitive, participles and the third person singular of the various tenses. They properly have no subject expressed. The verbs most commonly so used are those that refer to the phenomena of nature:

alborear, to dawn  
 amanecer, to dawn  
 anochecer, to grow dark  
 deshelar, to thaw  
 diluviar, to rain hard, pour

escampar, to clear up, stop raining  
 escarchar, to freeze, frost  
 granizar, to hail  
 helar, to freeze  
 llover, to rain

<sup>1</sup> The old form of the verb was *ve-er* (from popular Latin *vedere*). Remains of the old form are still found in the first person of the present indicative and throughout the present subjunctive and imperfect indicative. Compounds of *ver*, such as *entrever*, 'to have a glimpse of,' *prever*, 'to foresee,' *rever*, 'to see again,' etc., are conjugated like *ver*. *Proveer*, 'to provide,' however, has preserved the old infinitive form and is conjugated like a regular verb, except that when unaccented *i* occurs between two vowels it changes to *y* (cf. § 9).

lloviznar, }  
 molliznar, } to drizzle  
 molliznear, }  
 nevar, to snow

relampaguear, to lighten  
 tronar, to thunder  
 ventear, to blow  
 ventiscar, to snow and blow, etc.

For **haber** and **hacer** used impersonally, cf. §§ 176-178.

NOTE. — **Helar**, **deshelar**, **nevar**, **llover** and **tronar** change the final **e** or **o** of the stem to **ie** and **ue** respectively when the accent falls on the syllable in which they occur (cf. §§ 343, 345, 346).

**hiela**, it is freezing

**llueve**, it is raining

**417.** These verbs are sometimes used personally with a subject and sometimes even with an object.

**Amaneció el día**

The day dawned

**Tronaban los cañones**

The cannons thundered

**Llovían piedras sobre él**

They were raining stones upon him

**418.** **Amanecer** and **anochecer** are sometimes used in their complete conjugation, with the meaning 'to arrive (*or* be present) at dawn' or 'at nightfall.'

**Amanecí en Madrid y anocheceré en Sevilla**

I was in Madrid at dawn and shall be in Seville at nightfall

**419.** Besides these verbs referring to the phenomena of nature there are a number of other verbs which are often used impersonally:

acaecer, }  
 acontecer, } to happen —  
 bastar, to suffice  
 constar, to be clear, evident

convenir, to suit, be fitting, agree  
 importar, to matter, be important  
 parecer, to seem, appear  
 suceder, to happen, etc.

**Sucede siempre así**

It always happens thus

**No importa**

It doesn't matter

**Por lo que veo consta que no ha llegado**

It is evident by what I see that he has not arrived

NOTE. — For other impersonal uses, cf. §§ 217-218.

**420.** **Ser** and **estar**, followed by nouns or adjectives, are frequently used impersonally.

**Es verdad**

It is true

**Es evidente**

It is evident

**Era demasiado tarde**

It was too late

**Está muy nublado**

It is very cloudy

**Estaba muy oscuro**

It was very dark

NOTE. — **Ser** followed by **de** and an active infinitive is sometimes used impersonally, and the active infinitive has the force of a passive.

**Es de creer**

It is to be believed

**Es de querer**

It is to be desired

**421.** The infinitives and participles of impersonal verbs, and of verbs used impersonally, impart an impersonal force to the verbs upon which they depend.

<b>Va a nevar</b>	It is going to snow
<b>Principió a amenecer</b>	It began to dawn
<b>Quiere llover</b>	It wants to rain
<b>Sigue tronando</b>	It keeps on thundering
<b>No va a convenir</b>	It isn't going to suit
<b>Faltó de bastar</b>	It failed to suffice

### LISTA DE REFERENCIA

(Reference List)

#### 422. Verbs like *pensar*. Cf. § 343.

The following verbs and their compounds are the most common verbs that are conjugated like *pensar*:

<b>acertar</b> , to conjecture aright	<b>helar</b> , to freeze
<b>acrecentar</b> , to increase	<b>manifestar</b> , to manifest, show
<b>adestrar</b> , to train, break (horses)	<b>merendar</b> , to lunch
<b>alentar</b> , to breathe, encourage	<b>negar</b> , to deny
<b>apretar</b> , to squeeze	<b>nevar</b> , to snow
<b>atravesar</b> , to cross	<b>plegar</b> , to fold
<b>calentar</b> , to warm	<b>quebrar</b> , to break
<b>cerrar</b> , to close, shut	<b>recomendar</b> , to recommend
<b>comenzar</b> , to commence	<b>regar</b> , to water
<b>concertar</b> , to agree, harmonize	<b>remendar</b> , to repair, patch
<b>confesar</b> , to confess	<b>reventar</b> , to burst
<b>despertar</b> , to awaken	<b>segar</b> , to reap, mow
<b>desterrar</b> , to exile	<b>sembrar</b> , to sow
<b>empezar</b> , to begin	<b>sentar</b> , to seat, fit, become, suit
<b>encomendar</b> , to commend	<b>serrar</b> , to saw
<b>enmendar</b> , to correct, repair	<b>sosegar</b> , to appease, calm
<b>enterrar</b> , to bury	<b>temblar</b> , to tremble
<b>fregar</b> , to rub, scour	<b>tentar</b> , to touch, try ( <i>contentar, de-</i>
<b>gobernar</b> , to govern	<i>tentar and intentar are regular)</i>

#### 423. Verbs like *perder*. Cf. § 344.

The following verbs and their compounds are the most common verbs that are conjugated like *perder*:

<b>ascender</b> , to ascend, mount	<b>encender</b> , to kindle, light
<b>atender</b> , to mind, heed	<b>entender</b> , to hear, understand
<b>cerner</b> , to sift	<b>extender</b> , to extend, stretch forth
<b>defender</b> , to defend, protect	<b>tender</b> , to stretch out, extend
<b>descender</b> , to descend	<b>verter</b> , to spill, shed

#### 424. Verbs like *contar*. Cf. § 345.

The following verbs and their compounds are the most common verbs that are conjugated like *contar*:

<b>acordarse</b> , to remember	<b>almorzar</b> , to breakfast
<b>acostarse</b> , to lie down, go to bed	<b>apostar</b> , to wager, bet

**avergonzar**, to shame  
**colar**, to strain, filter  
**colgar**, to hang, hang up  
**concordar**, to accord, agree  
**consolar**, to console, comfort  
**costar**, to cost  
**encontrar**, to find, meet  
**forzar**, to force, constrain  
**holgar**, to rest  
**mostrar**, to show  
**probar**, to prove, try

**recordar**, to remind, remember  
**rodar**, to roll  
**rogar**, to ask  
**soltar**, to untie, loosen, utter  
**sonar**, to sound  
**soñar**, to dream  
**trocar**, to exchange, barter  
**tronar**, to thunder  
**volar**, to fly  
**volcar**, to upset, capsize

#### 425. Verbs like **mover**. Cf. § 346.

The following verbs and their compounds are the most common verbs that are conjugated like **mover**:

**absolver**, to absolve  
**disolver**, to dissolve, separate  
**doler**, to ache, feel pain  
**llover**, to rain  
**moler**, to grind

**morder**, to bite  
**resolver**, to resolve, determine  
**solver**, to solve, loosen  
**torcer**, to twist  
**volver**, to turn, return

#### 426. Verbs like **sentir**. Cf. § 354.

The following verbs and their compounds are the most common verbs that are conjugated like **sentir**:

**advertir**, to warn, notify  
**arrepentirse**, to repent  
**convertir**, to convert  
**deferir**, to defer, pay deference to  
 another's opinion  
**diferir**, to defer, delay  
**digerir**, to digest  
**divertir**, to divert, amuse  
**herir**, to wound  
**hervir**, to boil  
**inferir**, to infer, deduce  
**invertir**, to invert

**mentir**, to lie, tell a falsehood  
**pervertir**, to pervert  
**preferir**, to prefer  
**proferir**, to proffer, pronounce,  
 utter  
**referir**, to report, relate, tell  
**requerir**, to require, notify, inves-  
 tigate  
**sugerir**, to suggest  
**transferir**, to transfer, move, trans-  
 port

#### 427. Verbs like **pedir**. Cf. § 357.

The following verbs and their compounds are the most common verbs that are conjugated like **pedir**:

**ceñir**, to gird, bind, surround  
**colegir**, to infer  
**corregir**, to correct  
**derretir**, to melt, dissolve  
**elegir**, to elect, select, choose  
**embestir**, to assail, attack  
**gemitir**, to groan  
**henchir**, to fill, puff up  
**medir**, to measure

**regir**, to rule  
**rendir**, to render, subdue, vanquish  
**reñir**, to scold, reproach  
**repetir**, to repeat  
**seguir**, to follow, continue  
**servir**, to serve  
**teñir**, to dye  
**vestir**, to dress, clothe

428. Derivatives of **decir** are conjugated like **decir**, except that they have **-dice** instead of **-di** in the second person singular of the imperative. Cf. § 247.

<b>contradecir</b> , to contradict	<i>Imperative Sing.</i> <b>contradice</b>
<b>desdecir</b> , to gainsay	“ “ <b>desdice</b>
<b>predecir</b> , to predict	“ “ <b>predice</b>
<b>bendecir</b> , to bless	“ “ <b>bendice</b>
<b>maldecir</b> , to curse	“ “ <b>maldice</b>

429. **Bendecir** and **maldecir** are also regular in the future and conditional, **bendeciré**, etc., **maldeciré**, etc., **bendeciría**, etc., **maldeciría**, etc. Moreover, they have regular past participles, **bendecido**, **maldecido**; the forms **bendicho** and **maldicho** are now obsolete; and the forms **bendito** and **maldito** are used only as adjectives.

430. There are ten verbs of the third conjugation which are commonly used only in the forms where the stem is followed by **i**. These are:

<b>abolir</b> , to abolish	<b>despavorir</b> , to become frightened
<b>agüerrir</b> , to accustom to war	<b>embair</b> , to impose upon
<b>arrecirse</b> , to become numb	<b>empedernir</b> , to harden
<b>aterirse</b> , to become numb	<b>garantir</b> , to guarantee
<b>desmarrirse</b> , to grow sad ( <i>or</i> weak)	<b>manir</b> , to grow tender ( <i>of meats</i> )

These verbs usually lack the present indicative singular and third person plural, all the forms of the present subjunctive, and the singular of the imperative. All other forms are regular.

#### 431. EXPRESIONES ÚTILES PARA LA CLASE (Useful Class-room Expressions)

1. <b>Pasar lista</b>	To call the roll
2. <b>Servidor(a)</b>	Present ( <i>in answer to roll call</i> ).
3. <b>Señor</b>	Sir, Mr.
4. <b>Señora</b>	Madam, Mrs.
5. <b>Señorita</b>	Miss
6. <b>Buenos días</b>	Good morning
7. <b>Buenas tardes</b>	Good afternoon
8. <b>Adiós</b>	Good-by
9. <b>Hasta la vista</b>	Good-by, au revoir
10. <b>Hasta mañana</b>	Until to-morrow
11. <b>Hasta luego</b>	So long
12. <b>Que V. (usted) lo pase bien</b>	Good-by, Good luck to you
13. <b>¿Qué lección tenemos para hoy?</b>	What lesson do we have for to-day?
14. <b>Tenemos la lección doce (etc.)</b>	We have the twelfth lesson
15. <b>¿En qué página principiamos?</b>	On what page do we begin?
16. <b>Principiamos en la página 75</b>	We begin on page 75
17. <b>Escriba V.</b>	Write
18. <b>Lea V.</b>	Read
19. <b>Traduzca V.</b>	Translate
20. <b>Conjugue V.</b>	Conjugate
21. <b>Hágame el favor de abrir (cerrar) sus libros</b>	Please open (shut) your books



- |  |  |
|--|--|
| 22. Hágame el favor de principiar la lectura         | Please begin the reading                       |
| 23. Hágame el favor de escribir en la pizarra        | Please write on the blackboard                 |
| 24. Hágame el favor de contestarme en español        | Please answer me in Spanish                    |
| 25. ¿Cómo se escribe la palabra <i>jota</i> ?        | How do you spell the word <i>jota</i> ?        |
| 26. La palabra <i>jota</i> se escribe <i>j-o-t-a</i> | The word <i>jota</i> is spelled <i>j-o-t-a</i> |
| 27. ¿Cómo se dice?                                   | How do you say?                                |
| 28. Pronuncie V. con cuidado                         | Pronounce carefully                            |
| 29. V. pronuncia bien el español                     | You pronounce Spanish well                     |
| 30. Hágame el favor de leer en voz alta              | Please read aloud                              |
| 31. Tenemos para hoy la lección de gramática         | We have the grammar lesson for to-day          |
| 32. ¿Me entiende V.?                                 | Do you understand me?                          |
| 33. No, señor, no le entiendo                        | No, sir, I do not understand you               |
| 34. No sé  | I do not know                                  |
| 35. ¿Me hace el favor de explicar?                   | Will you please explain?                       |
| 36. Hagan VV. (ustedes) atención                     | Pay attention ( <i>all</i> )                   |
| 37. Gracias  | Thanks, I thank you                            |
| 38. No hay de qué                                    | You are welcome, don't mention it              |
| 39. ¿Sabe V. la lección?                             | Do you know the lesson?                        |
| 40. Quisiera que estudiase más la lección            | I should like you to study the lesson more     |
| 41. V. debe tener más cuidado                        | You must be more careful                       |
| 42. Hábleme V. en español                            | Speak Spanish to me                            |
| 43. ¿Qué fecha tenemos?                              | What is the date?                              |
| 44. ¿Qué hora es?                                    | What time is it?                               |
| 45. Con permiso de V.                                | By your leave                                  |
| 46. Dispénsame V.                                    | Pardon me                                      |
| 47. No tengo lápiz                                   | I have no pencil                               |
| 48. He perdido el lugar                              | I have lost the place                          |
| 49. Hable V. más alto                                | Speak louder                                   |
| 50. V. no hace nada                                  | You are doing nothing                          |
| 51. Siéntese V. allí                                 | Sit down there                                 |
| 52. ¿Dónde está —?                                   | Where is —?                                    |
| 53. ¿Qué le parece a V.?                             | What do you think of it?                       |
| 54. ¿Lo cree V.?                                     | Do you think so?                               |
| 55. Vamos a ver                                      | Let us see                                     |
| 56. Para la próxima vez                              | For the next time                              |
| 57. Es el mejor modo                                 | It is the best way                             |
| 58. ¿No es verdad?                                   | Is it not so?                                  |

## POESÍAS PARA APRENDER DE MEMORIA

(Poems to be Learned by Heart)

¿Qué es poesía? dices mientras clavas

En mi pupila tu pupila azul;

2

¿Qué es poesía? ¿Y tú me lo preguntas?

Poesía . . . eres tú.

4

GUSTAVO ADOLFO BÉCQUER (1837-1870): — *Rimas*.

Por una mirada, un mundo;  
 Por una sonrisa, un cielo; 2  
 Por un beso . . . ¡yo no sé  
 Qué te diera por un beso! — BÉCQUER: — *Id.* 4

Los suspiros son aire, y van al aire.  
 Las lágrimas son agua, y van al mar. 2  
 Dime, mujer: cuando el amor se olvida,  
 ¿Sabes tú a dónde va? — BÉCQUER: — *Id.* 4

Hojas del árbol caídas  
 Juguetes del viento son: 2  
 ¡Las ilusiones perdidas  
 ¡Ay! son hojas desprendidas 4  
 Del árbol del corazón!

JOSÉ DE ESPRÓNCEA (1809-1842): —  
*El Estudiante de Salamanca* (Extract).

¡Que descansada vida  
 La del que huye el mundanal rüido, 2  
 Y sigue la escondida  
 Senda, por donde han ido 4  
 Los pocos sabios que en el mundo han sido!  
 FRAY LUIS (PONCE) DE LEÓN (1527-1591): —  
*Oda* (Extract).

¿Qué es la vida? — Un frenesí.  
 ¿Qué es la vida? — Una ilusión, 2  
 Una sombra, una ficción,  
 Y el mayor bien es pequeño; 4  
 Que toda la vida es sueño,  
 Y los sueños sueño son. 6  
 PEDRO CALDERÓN DE LA BARCA (1600-1681): —  
*La Vida es Sueño* (Extract).

Cuentan de un sabio, que un día  
 Tan pobre y mísero estaba, 2  
 Que sólo se sustentaba  
 De unas yerbas que cogía. 4  
 ¿Habrá otro (entre sí decía)  
 Más pobre y triste que yo? 6  
 Y cuando el rostro volvió,  
 Halló la respuesta, viendo 8  
 Que iba otro sabio cogiendo  
 Las hojas que él arrojó. — 10  
 CALDERÓN: — *Id.* (Extract).

Sé cortés sobremanera,  
 Sé liberal y esparcido; 2  
 Que el sombrero y el dinero  
 Son los que hacen los amigos. 4  
 CALDERÓN: — *El Alcalde de Zalamea* (Extract).

## MADRIGAL

Ojos claros, serenos,  
 Si de un dulce mirar sois alabados, 2  
 ¿Por qué, si me miráis, miráis airados?  
 Si cuanto más piadosos, 4  
 Más bellos parecéis a aquel que os mira,  
 ¿Por qué a mí solo me miráis con ira? 6  
 Ojos claros, serenos,  
 Ya que así me miráis, ¡miradme al menos! 8  
 GUTIERRE DE CETINA (1520?-1560?).

Nada te turbe;  
 Nada te espante; 2  
 Todo se pasa;  
 Dios no se muda, 4  
 La paciencia todo lo alcanza.  
 Quien a Dios tiene, 6  
 — Nada le falta.  
 Solo Dios basta. 8  
 SANTA TERESA DE JESÚS (1515-1582): —  
*Letrilla que llevaba por registro en su breviario.*

## UN SONETO

Un soneto me manda hacer Violante,  
 Que en mi vida me he visto en tal aprieto, 2  
 Catorce versos dicen que es soneto,  
 Burla burlando van los tres delante. 4  
 Yo pensé que no hallara consonante,  
 Y estoy a la mitad de otro cuarteto, 6  
 Mas si me veo en el primer terceto  
 No hay cosa en los cuartetos que me espante. 8  
 Por el primer terceto voy entrando,  
 Y aun parece que entré con pie derecho, 10  
 Pues fin con este verso le voy dando.  
 Ya estoy en el segundo, y aun sospecho, 12  
 Que estoy los trece versos acabando:  
 Contad si son catorce, y está hecho. 14  
 LOPE FÉLIX DE VEGA CARPIO (1562-1635).

## DOLORAS

Ni amor canto, ni hermosura, Porque ésta es un vano aliño, Y además	2
Aquél una sombra oscura. — ¿No es más que sombra el cariño? — <i>Nada más.</i>	4 6
Esas flores con que ufana Tu frente se diviniza, Ya verás	8
Cual son ceniza mañana. — ¿Nada más son que ceniza? — <i>Nada más.</i>	10 12
Y en tu contento no escaso; ¿Qué dirás que es un contento, Qué dirás?	14
— ¿Nada más que viento acaso? — ¡Nada más, niña, que viento, <i>Nada más!</i>	16 18
En la edad de las pasiones, A vueltas de mil enojos, Hallarás	20
Aire, sombras e ilusiones: ¡Nada más, luz de mis ojos, <i>Nada más!</i>	22 24

RAMÓN DE CAMPOAMOR (1819-1901): —

*Vanidad de la Hermosura.*

Volverán las oscuras golondrinas En tu balcón sus nidos a colgar, Y, otra vez, con el ala a sus cristales Jugando llamarán.	2 4
Pero aquéllas que el vuelo refrenaban Tu hermosura y mi dicha a contemplar, Aquéllas que aprendieron nuestros nombres . . . Ésas . . . ¡no volverán!	6 8
Volverán las tupidas madre selvas De tu jardín las tapias a escalar, Y otra vez a la tarde, aun más hermosas, Sus flores se abrirán;	10 12
Pero aquéllas, cuajadas de rocío, Cuyas gotas mirábamos temblar Y caer, como lágrimas del día . . . Ésas . . . ¡no volverán!	14 16
Volverán del amor en tus oídos Las palabras ardientes a sonar;	18

Tu corazón de su profundo sueño	
Tal vez despertará;	20
Pero mudo y absorto y de rodillas,	
Como se adora a Dios ante su altar,	22
Como yo te he querido . . . desengáñate,	
¡Así no te querrán! — BÉCQUER: — <i>Rimas</i> .	

## FÁBULA

## LOS DOS CONEJOS

Por entre unas matas	
Seguido de perros,	2
(No diré corría)	
Volaba un conejo.	4

De su madriguera	
Salió un compañero,	6
Y le dijo: — Tente	
Amigo, ¿qué es esto?	8

— ¿Qué ha de ser? responde;	
Sin aliento llego . . .	10
Dos pícaros galgos	
Me vienen siguiendo.	12

— Sí (replica el otro),	
Por allí los veo,	14
Pero no son galgos.	
— Pues, ¿qué son? — Podencos.	16

— ¿Qué? ¿Podencos dices?	
Sí, como mi abuelo.	18
Galgos, y muy galgos:	
Bien visto los tengo.	20

— Son podencos: vaya,	
Que no entiendes de eso.	22
— Son galgos, te digo.	
— Digo que podencos.	24

En esta disputa	
Llegando los perros,	26
Pillan descuidados	
A mis dos conejos.	28

Los que por cuestiones  
De poco momento 30  
Dejan lo que importa,  
Llévense este ejemplo. 32  
TOMÁS DE IRIARTE (1750-1791).

## PARA LECTURA A PRIMERA VISTA (Sight Reading)

### LAS GAFAS

Como se acercaba el día de San Isidro, multitud de gente rústica  
había acudido a Madrid desde las pequeñas poblaciones y aldeas 2  
de ambas Castillas, y aun de provincias lejanas.

Llenos de curiosidad circulaban los forasteros por calles y 4  
plazas e invadían las tiendas y los almacenes para enterarse de  
todo, contemplarlo y admirarlo. 6

Uno de estos rústicos entró por acaso en la tienda de un óptico  
en el punto de hallarse allí una señora anciana que quería comprar 8  
unas gafas. Tenía muchas docenas extendidas sobre el mostrador;  
se las iba poniendo sucesivamente, miraba luego en un peri- 10  
ódico, y decía:

— Con éstas no leo. 12

Siete u ocho veces repitió la operación, hasta que al cabo, des-  
pués de ponerse otras gafas, miró en el periódico, y dijo muy con- 14  
tenta:

— Con éstas leo perfectamente. 16

Luego las pagó y se las llevó.

Al ver el rústico lo que había hecho la señora, quiso imitarla, 18  
y empezó a ponerse gafas y a mirar en el mismo periódico; pero  
siempre decía: 20

— Con éstas no leo.

Así se pasó más de media hora; el rústico ensayó tres o cuatro 22  
docenas de gafas, y como no lograba leer con ninguna, las des-  
echaba todas, repitiendo siempre: 24

— No leo con éstas.

El tendero entonces le dijo: 26

— ¿Pero usted sabe leer?

— Pues si yo supiera leer, ¿para qué había de mercar las gafas? 28

JUAN VALERA (1824-1905).

### A QUIÉN DEBE DARSE CRÉDITO

Llamaron a la puerta. El mismo tío Pedro salió a abrir y se  
encontró cara a cara con su compadre Vicentico. 2

— Buenos días, compadre. ¿Qué buen viento le trae a usted  
por aquí? ¿Qué se le ofrece a usted? 4

— Pues nada . . . confío en su amistad de usted . . . y espero . . .

— Desembuche usted, compadre. 6

— La verdad, yo he podado los olivos, tengo en mi olivar lo menos cinco cargas de leña que quiero traerme a casa y vengo a que me empreste usted su burro. 8

— ¡Cuánto lo siento, compadre! Parece que el demonio lo hace. ¡Qué maldita casualidad! Esta mañana se fué mi chico a Córdoba, caballero en el burro. Hasta dentro de seis o siete días no volverá. Si no fuera por esto podría usted contar con el burro como si fuese suyo propio. Pero, qué diablos, el burro estará ya lo menos a cuatro leguas de aquí. 10 12 14

El pícaro del burro, que estaba en la caballeriza, se puso entonces a rebuznar con grandes bríos. 16

El que le pedía prestado dijo con enojo: 18

— No creía yo, tío Pedro, que usted fuese tan cicatero que para no hacerme este pequeño servicio, se valiese de un engaño. El burro está en casa. 20

— Oiga usted, replicó el tío Pedro. Quien aquí debe enojarse soy yo. 22

— ¿Y por qué el enojo? 24

— Porque usted me quita el crédito y se lo da al burro.

JUAN VALERA.

### MARI BELCHA

Cuando te quedas sola a la puerta del negro caserío con tu hermanillo en brazos, ¿en qué piensas, Mari Belcha, al mirar los montes lejanos y el cielo pálido? 2

Te llaman Mari Belcha,<sup>1</sup> María la Negra, porque naciste el día de los Reyes, no por otra cosa; te llaman Mari Belcha, y eres blanca como los corderillos cuando salen del lavadero, y rubia como las mieses doradas del estío . . . 4 6

Cuando voy por delante de tu casa en mi caballo, te escondes al verme, te ocultas de mí . . . ¡Ah! Pero yo también te miro ocultándome entre los árboles; ¿y sabes por qué? . . . Si te lo dijera, te reirías . . . Yo, el medicuzarra, que podría ser tu abuelo; sí, es verdad. Si te lo dijera, te reirías. 8 10 12

¡Me pareces tan hermosa! Dicen que tu cara está morena por el sol, . . . pero en cambio tus ojos tienen la serenidad de las auroras tranquilas del otoño y tus labios el color de las amapolas de los amarillos triguales. 14 16

Luego eres buena y cariñosa. Hace unos días, el martes que hubo feria, ¿te acuerdas? tus padres habían bajado al pueblo y tú pasabas por la heredad con tu hermanillo en brazos. 18

El chico tenía mal humor, tú querías distraerle y le enseñabas las vacas, la Gorriya<sup>2</sup> y la Beltza<sup>1</sup> que pastaban la hierba, reso-

<sup>1</sup> From the Basque *belz*, meaning 'black.'

<sup>2</sup> From the Basque *gorri*, meaning 'red.'

plando con alegría, corriendo pesadamente de un lado a otro, 22  
mientras azotaban las piernas con sus largas colas . . . pero luego  
se acordó de que tenía mal humor, y empezó a llorar. 24

Y yo también empecé a llorar no sé por qué. Verdad es que  
los viejos tenemos dentro del pecho corazón de niño. 26

Y para acallar a tu hermano recurriste al perrillo alborotador;  
a las gallinas que picoteaban en el suelo . . . a los estúpidos cerdos 28  
que corrían de un lado a otro.

Cuando el niño callaba, te quedabas pensativa. Tus ojos mira- 30  
ban los montes azulados de la lejanía, pero sin verlos; miraban las  
nubes blancas que cruzaban el cielo pálido, las hojas secas que 32  
cubrían el monte, las ramas descarnadas de los árboles, y sin em-  
bargo, no veían nada. 34

Veían algo; pero era en el interior del alma, en esas regiones  
misteriosas, donde brotan los amores y los sueños. . . . 36

Hoy, al pasar te he visto aun más preocupada.

Sentada sobre un tronco de árbol, en actitud de abandono, mas- 38  
cabas nerviosa una hoja de menta.

Dime, Mari Belcha, ¿en qué piensas al mirar los montes lejanos 40  
y el cielo pálido?

PÍO BAROJA (1872—).



# VOCABULARIO ESPAÑOL-INGLÉS

(Spanish-English Vocabulary)

## A

**a**, *prep.*, to, at, in, into, on, from, of.

**abajo**, *adv.*, below, down-stairs, down.

**abandonar**, to abandon, leave (behind).

**abandono**, *m.*, abandon, abandonment.

**abanico**, *m.*, fan.

**abierto**, -a (*adj. pp. of abrir*), open, opened.

**abigarrado**, -a (*adj. pp. of abigarrar*), motley.

**abogado**, *m.*, lawyer.

**abolir**, to abolish.

**abrazar**, to embrace.

**abrazo**, *m.*, embrace.

**abreviatura**, *f.*, abbreviation.

**abril**, *m.*, April.

**abrir**, to open.

**abrumar**, to overwhelm, weigh down.

**absoluto**, -a, absolute; **en** —, *adv.*, absolutely, supreme.

**absolver**, to absolve.

**absorber**, to absorb.

**absorto**, -a (*adj. pp. of absorber*), absorbed, spellbound.

**abstenerse** (de), to abstain (from).

**abuela**, *f.*, grandmother.

**abuelo**, *m.*, grandfather; **como mi** — (or **abuela**), like fun, your grandmother (*a familiar sarcastic expression, indicating doubt or denial of some statement*).

**abundante**, *adj.*, abundant.

**¡abur!** *int. (coll.)*, farewell! good-bye!

**aburrirse**, to grow tired, be bored.

**acá**, *adv.*, here.

**acabar**, to end, finish; — **de** . . . , to have just . . .

**académico**, -a, academic.

**acaecer**, to happen.

**acallar**, to quiet, assuage.

**acampar**, to camp.

**acariciar**, to caress, cherish.

**acaso**, *adv.*, by chance, perchance, perhaps.

**acceso**, *m.*, access.

**acción**, *f.*, action, deed.

**aceite**, *m.*, oil, olive-oil.

**aceituna**, *f.*, olive, fruit of the olive-tree.

**acento**, *m.*, accent.

**acentuar**, to accent.

**acepillar**, to brush.

**aceptación**, *f.*, acceptance.

**aceptar**, to accept.

**acequia**, *f.*, canal, trench.

**acera**, *f.*, sidewalk.

**acerca de**, *prep.*, about, regarding.

**acercar**, to approach, put close to; —**se** (de or a), to approach, draw near.

**acero**, *m.*, steel.

**acertado**, -a, well-established.

**acertar**, to conjecture right, happen, succeed.

**acometer**, to undertake, attack.

**acomodar**, to accommodate; —**se**, to conform.

**acompañamiento**, *m.*, accompaniment.

**acompañar**, to accompany.

**acontecer**, to happen.

**acordarse** (de), to remember.

**acortar**, to shorten, cut off.

**acostar**, to put to bed; —**se**, to lie down, go to bed.

**acostumbrar**, to accustom.

**actitud**, *f.*, attitude.

**acto**, *m.*, act, ceremony; **en este** —, at this moment.  
**actor**, *m.*, actor.  
**actual**, *adj.*, present, actual; *subst.*, *m.*, present (or current) month.  
**actualidad**, *f.*, present (time or state of things).  
**acudir**, to come, come together, gather, run up to, hasten (to help).  
**acueducto**, *m.*, aqueduct.  
**acusación**, *f.*, accusation, charge.  
**acusar**, to accuse.  
**acusativo**, *m.*, accusative, direct object.  
**adelantar**, to advance, be fast (*of timepieces*).  
**adelante**, *adv.*, forward, on; ¡—! *int.*, go on! onward! forward!;  
**de allí en —**, *adv.*, thenceforth.  
**ademán**, *m.*, bearing, demeanor, attitude, manner.  
**además**, *adv.*, moreover, besides; —**de**, *prep.*, besides, in addition to.  
**adentro**, *adv.*, inside, within.  
**adestrar**, to train, break (*korses*).  
**¡adiós!** *int.*, good-by!  
**adivino**, *m.*, fortune-teller.  
**adjetivo**, —**a**, adjective, adjectival; *subst.*, *m.*, adjective.  
**administrador**, *m.*, manager.  
**admirable**, *adj.*, admirable.  
**admirar**, to admire, marvel, wonder.  
**admitir**, to admit, permit, accept.  
**adobe**, *m.*, adobe, sun-dried brick.  
**Adolfo**, *m.*, Adolphus.  
**adonde**, *adv.*, whither.  
**adoración**, *f.*, adoration.  
**adorar**, to adore, worship.  
**adornar**, to adorn, decorate.  
**adquirir**, to acquire.  
**aduana**, *f.*, customs, custom-house.  
**aducir**, to adduce.  
**adverbial**, *adj.*, adverbial.  
**adverbio**, *m.*, adverb.  
**adversario**, *m.*, adversary.  
**advertir**, to warn, notify, notice, observe.  
**advocación**, *f.*, appellation (*given*

*to church, etc.*, dedicated to the Virgin).  
**afán**, *m.*, anxiety, trouble, difficulty.  
**afectar**, to affect.  
**afetísimo**, —**a**, most affectionate.  
**afecto**, —**a**, affectionate.  
**afectuoso**, —**a**, affectionate.  
**afeitar(se)**, to shave.  
**afición**, *f.*, affection, fondness.  
**aficionado**, *m.*, amateur, admirer.  
**afilado**, —**a** (*adj. pp. of afilar*), sharp, sharpened.  
**afinador**, *m.*, piano tuner.  
**afirmar**, to affirm.  
**aflojarse**, to become loosened.  
**afrenta**, *f.*, affront, insult, indignity.  
**afuera**, *adv.*, out of the house, outside, without; **por —**, *adv.*, without, on the outside; —**s**, *f. pl.*, suburbs.  
**agarrar**, to grasp, seize.  
**agitar**, to agitate, palpitate, move.  
**agonía**, *f.*, agony, death struggle.  
**agonizar**, to agonize.  
**agostar**, to parch.  
**agosto**, *m.*, August.  
**agradable**, *adj.*, agreeable, pleasant, pleasing.  
**agradecer**, to thank, be grateful for.  
**agradecimiento**, *m.*, thanks, gratitude.  
**agravar**, to aggravate.  
**agua**, *f.*, water.  
**aguardar**, to await.  
**agudeza**, *f.*, wit, witticism.  
**agudo**, —**a**, sharp-pointed, sharp.  
**aguerir**, to accustom to war.  
**aguileño**, —**a**, aquiline.  
**aguja**, *f.*, needle.  
**¡agur!** *int. (coll.)*, farewell! good-by!  
**¡ah!** *int.*, ah!  
**ahí**, *adv.*, there.  
**ahogar**, to smother, choke, suffocate, drown.  
**ahora**, *adv.*, now; — **que**, *conj.*, now that.  
**ahorcar**, to hang (*on the gallows*).  
**airado**, —**a** (*adj. pp. of airar*), angered, angry, wrathful.

**aire, m.,** air; **castillos en el —,** air-castles.

**airoso, -a,** airy, graceful.

**ajedrez, m.,** chess, game of chess.

**ajeno, -a,** another's, of another, other people's, of others, others', foreign, strange, contrary.

**ajo, m.,** garlic.

**ajustar,** to adjust, fit, regulate; —**se,** to settle matters.

**ala, f.,** wing.

**alabar,** to praise.

**álamo, m.,** poplar-tree.

**alargar,** to lengthen, extend.

**alarido, m.,** shout, outcry, wail.

**Albaicín, (El), m.,** The Albaicín (*a quarter in Granada, inhabited by gipsies*).

**albañil, m.,** mason, bricklayer.

**Alboraya, Alboraya** (*a town of some 4000 inhabitants, in the province of Valencia, eastern Spain*).

**alborear,** to dawn.

**alborotador, -a, adj.,** frolicsome, playful, noisy.

**alborotar,** to disturb.

**alborozo, m.,** excitement, gaiety.

**Alcalá, la Calle de, Alcalá Street** (*one of the principal streets of Madrid*).

**Alcalá de Henares, Alcalá of Henares** (*a city of some 12,000 inhabitants, situated in the province of Madrid, Spain. Formerly the seat of a famous university, founded in 1513 by the Cardinal Francisco Jiménez de Cisneros and in 1836 transferred to Madrid*).

**alcalde, m.,** mayor.

**alcanzar,** to reach, attain, overtake.

**alcoba, f.,** bedroom.

**aldabonazo, m.,** knock.

**aldea, f.,** village.

**aldeano, m.,** villager.

**alegar,** to allege, cite.

**alegrar,** to enliven; —**se,** to be pleased, be glad, rejoice.

**alegre, adj.,** gay, cheerful, animated.

**alegría, f.,** joy, merriment.

**alejarse,** to withdraw, go away.

**alentar,** to breathe, encourage.

**alerta, adv.; estar —,** to be alert, vigilant.

**alerto, -a,** alert.

**aleteo, m.,** flapping of wings.

**alfabeto, m.,** alphabet.

**alfombra, f.,** carpet.

**Alfonso, m.,** Alphonso.

**algo, pron.,** something, anything; **adv.,** somewhat, rather.

**alguacil, m.,** alguazil, mounted police officer.

**alguien, pron.,** some one, somebody, any one, anybody.

**algún (see alguno).**

**alguno, -a, adj. and pron.** some, any; — **que otro,** some or other, an occasional.

**alhaja, f.,** jewel, gem.

**Alhambra, (La), f.,** The Alhambra.

**Alicante, Alicante** (*the capital of the province of Alicante in south-eastern Spain*).

**alienado, m.,** insane (person).

**aliento, m.,** breath.

**alimento, m.,** food.

**aliño, m.,** adornment, ornament.

**alivio, m.,** relief.

**alma, f.,** soul, heart.

**almacén, m.,** shop, store.

**almendra, f.,** almond.

**almorzar,** to breakfast.

**almuerzo, m.,** breakfast, lunch.

**alojamiento, m.,** lodging.

**alojar,** to lodge, quarter.

**alpargata, f.,** sandal (*with soles of hemp and tops of canvas*).

**alquilar,** to rent, hire.

**alquiler, m.,** rent.

**alrededor, adv.,** around; **a su —,** around him (her, etc.).

**alrededores, m., pl.,** environs.

**altanería, f.,** haughtiness.

**altar, m.,** altar.

**alterado, -a (adj. pp. of alterar),** changed, moved.

**alternativamente, adv.,** alternately.

**altivo, -a,** haughty, proud, lofty.

**alto, -a,** high, lofty, long; **lo —,** above, height, top; — **relieve,**

- high relief; *adv.*, aloud, loudly;  
¡—! *int.*, halt!  
altura, *f.*, height.  
alucinación, *f.*, hallucination.  
alumbrar, to light, illuminate.  
alumno, *m.*, student, pupil.  
alusión, *f.*, allusion.  
¡alza! *int.* (*expressing encouragement*), go on! keep it up! lively!  
alzar, to raise; —*se*, to rise, raise one's self.  
allá, *adv.*, there.  
allí, *adv.*, there, yonder; *de — en adelante*, *adv.*, thenceforth; *por —*, *adv.*, over yonder, yonder.  
amabilidad, *f.*, kindness.  
amable, *adj.*, kind.  
Amadís de Gaula, Amadis of Gaul (*the oldest of the heroes of chivalry, and the name of the first romance of chivalry in the Spanish peninsula*).  
amanecer, *m.*, daybreak, dawn; —, to dawn, be (*or arrive*) at dawn.  
amapola, *f.*, poppy.  
amar, to love.  
amargo, —*a*, bitter.  
amargura, *f.*, bitterness.  
amarillento, —*a*, yellowish, golden.  
amarillo, —*a*, yellow.  
a más no poder, to the utmost.  
ambición, *f.*, ambition.  
ambicionar, to covet, pursue with ambition, desire.  
ambos, —*as*, *adj. and pron.*, both.  
amedrentar, to intimidate, discourage.  
¡Amén! *int.*, Amen!  
amenazador, —*a*, threatening.  
amenazar, to threaten.  
ameno, —*a*, pleasant, delightful.  
América, *f.*, America.  
americana, *f.*, sack-coat.  
americano, —*a*, American.  
amiga, *f.*, friend.  
amigo, *m.*, friend; — *bromista*, mischievous fellow.  
amistad, *f.*, friendship.  
amo, *m.*, master.  
amor, *m.*, love; — *propio*, self-love, conceit.  
amoroso, —*a*, loving.  
amortiguado, —*a* (*adj. pp. of amortiguar*), dull, dulled.  
amparar, to protect, shelter.  
amparo, *m.*, protection, shelter.  
ancho, —*a*, broad, wide.  
anciano, —*a*, old, ancient.  
¡anda! *int.* (*expressing encouragement*), go on! keep it up! lively! of course! come! please! (*expressing incredulity*) pshaw!  
Andalucía, *f.*, Andalusia.  
andaluza, *f.*, Andalusian woman.  
andante, *adj.* (*with caballero*), errant.  
andantesco, —*a* (*see caballería*).  
andar, to go, go through, travel, walk; — *escaso* (—*a*), to be sparing; *vamos andando*, let us walk along.  
andén, *m.*, platform.  
andrajo, *m.*, rag.  
anémico, —*a*, anemic.  
angosto, —*a*, narrow.  
angustia, *f.*, anguish, distress.  
angustioso, —*a*, distressing, full of anguish.  
anhelante, *adv.*, breathless.  
anhelo, *m.*, desire, eagerness.  
anillo, *m.*, ring.  
animación, *f.*, animation.  
animado, —*a*, animated.  
animal, *m.*, animal.  
animar, to enliven, animate, encourage.  
anoche, *adv.*, last night.  
anohecer, to grow dark, be (*or arrive*) at night; *subst.*, *m.*, nightfall; *al —*, at nightfall.  
ansia, *f.*, anxiety, eagerness.  
ansiedad, *f.*, anxiety, eagerness.  
ansioso, —*a*, anxious.  
antaño, *adv.*, long ago; *de —*, (*of yore*, (*in*) former times.  
ante, *prep.*, before, in the presence of, above.  
anteanoche, *adv.*, night before last.  
anteayer, *adv.*, day before yesterday.  
antecedentes, *m. pl.*, previous conduct.  
anterior, anterior, former, before.

**antes**, *adv.*, first, before; — **de**, *prep.*, before; — **(de) que**, *conj.*, before; — **de ayer**, *adv.*, day before yesterday.

**antiguamente**, *adv.*, formerly.

**antigüedad**, *f.*, antiquity.

**antiguo**, *-a*, ancient, former, old.

**antojarse**, to long for, desire earnestly, choose, occur (*to some one*).

**Antonia**, *f.*, Antonia.

**Antonio**, *m.*, Anthony.

**anunciar**, to announce.

**añadir**, to add.

**añejo**, *-a*, old.

**año**, *m.*, year; — **bisiesto**, leap-year; — **común**, common year; — **escolar**, school year; **Año Nuevo**, New Year.

**apacible**, *adj.*, placid, quiet, pleasant.

**apagar**, to extinguish, drown.

**aparecer(se)**, to appear.

**aparejo**, *m.*, harness.

**aparentar**, to feign.

**aparente**, *adj.*, apparent, evident.

**apariencia**, *f.*, appearance.

**apartar**, to separate.

**aparse**, to dismount.

**apellido**, *m.*, family name.

**apenas**, *adv.*, scarcely, no sooner, as soon as; — . . . **cuando**, *conj.*, scarcely . . . when.

**aperador**, *m.*, farmer.

**apertura**, *f.*, opening.

**apestar**, to smell.

**apetito**, *m.*, appetite.

**aplacer**, to please.

**aplausos**, *m.*, applause.

**apócope**, *f.*, apocopation.

**apoderarse (de)**, to take possession (of).

**apogeo**, *m.*, apogee, highest degree of greatness.

**apostar**, to wager, bet.

**apostólico**, *-a*, apostolic.

**apoyar**, to support, lean, put.

**apoyo**, *m.*, support; **punto de** —, place of support.

**apreciable**, *adj.*, esteemed, valuable.

**apreciar**, to appreciate.

**aprecio**, *m.*, regard, esteem.

**aprehensor**, *m.*, captor.

**aprender**, to learn.

**apresuradamente**, *adv.*, hurriedly.

**apresurar**, to hasten, quicken, hurry.

**apretar**, to squeeze, clasp, lay hold, drive.

**apriesa**, *adv.*, quickly, in haste.

**aprieto**, *m.*, difficulty, strait(s).

**aprisa**, *adv.*, quickly, in haste.

**aprobación**, *f.*, approbation, approval.

**aprovechar**, to profit (*by a thing*), make the best of, benefit.

**aptitud**, *f.*, aptitude, skill, ability.

**apuntar**, to aim.

**apuro**, *m.*, need, want, emergency.

**aquel**, **aquella**, *adj.*, that.

**aquél**, **aquella**, **aquello**, *pron.*, that. **aquí**, *adv.*, here; **hé** —, here is, this is.

**árbol**, *m.*, tree.

**arcano**, *m.*, arcanum, secret.

**arco**, *m.*, circle, arch, bow.

**arder**, to burn, blaze.

**ardiente**, *adj.*, ardent, burning.

**arena**, *f.*, sand.

**arenoso**, *-a*, sandy.

**Argel**, Algiers.

**argüir**, to argue.

**árido**, *-a*, arid, dry.

**arma**, *f.*, arm, weapon; **vela de** —s, vigil (at arms).

**armada**, *f.*, armada, fleet.

**Armando**, *m.*, Armand.

**armar**, to arm; — **caballero**, to dub knight.

**armario**, *m.*, wardrobe, clothespress.

**armero**, *m.*, armorer, gun-maker.

**armonioso**, *-a*, harmonious.

**arnés**, *m.*, harness.

**aroma**, *m.*, fragrance, aroma.

**arraigado**, *-a*, deep-rooted.

**arrancar**, to snatch, draw, tear out, pull off; — **a correr**, to start to run.

**arrastrar**, to drag.

**¡arre!** *int.* (*to animate*), get up!

**arrear**, to start up, drive.

**arrebol**, *m.*, reddish hue (*or tint*).

- arrebujar**, to wrap, muffle.  
**arrecirse**, to become numb.  
**arremeter**, to assail, attack.  
**arreos**, *m. pl.*, trappings.  
**arrepentirse**, to repent.  
**arriba**, *adv.*, above, up, up-stairs;  
     ¡—! *int.*, up! get up!  
**arrmarse (a)**, to lean (against).  
**arrogante**, *adj.*, spirited, confident.  
**arrojar**, to throw (away), put out,  
     cast (out), expel.  
**arroyo**, *m.*, stream, brook, gutter.  
**arroyuelo**, *m.*, creek.  
**arroz**, *m.*, rice.  
**arrugar**, to wrinkle.  
**arte**, *m.*, art.  
**artículo**, *m.*, article.  
**artillería**, *f.*, artillery; **tercero de**  
     —, third regiment of artillery.  
**artillero**, *m.*, artilleryman, gunner.  
**arzobispo**, *m.*, archbishop.  
**asar**, to roast; **poco asado**, —*a*,  
     rare, not well done.  
**ascender**, to ascend, mount.  
**ascensión**, *f.*, ascension.  
**asegurar**, to assure.  
**asentar**, to seat, plant, place.  
**aseo**, *m.*, cleanliness, neatness,  
     toilet.  
**asesinar**, to assassinate.  
**asesino**, *m.*, assassin, murderer;  
     ¡al —! *int.*, murder!  
**asfixiar**, to smother, suffocate.  
**así**, *adv.*, thus, so; — **que**, *conj.*,  
     as soon as; — . . . **como**, *conj.*,  
     both . . . and; — **como** . . . —  
     (**también**), *conj.*, just as . . .  
     so (too).  
**asiento**, *m.*, seat, place.  
**asir**, to seize, grasp.  
**asistir**, to assist; — **a**, to be present  
     at, attend.  
**asno**, *m.*, ass, donkey.  
**asomarse**, to appear, peep, pre-  
     sent (or show) one's self.  
**asombrado**, —*a* (*adj. pp. of asom-*  
     *brar*), astounded, astonished.  
**asombro**, *m.*, amazement, aston-  
     ishment, fear.  
**asombroso**, —*a*, astonishing, sur-  
     prising.  
**aspa**, *f.*, wing (of a wind-mill).  
**aspecto**, *m.*, aspect, sight, view.  
**áspero**, —*a*, rough, rugged.  
**Astorga**, Astorga (*a city of some*  
     *6000 inhabitants, situated in the*  
     *province of León, Spain*).  
**astronomía**, *f.*, astronomy.  
**asunción**, *f.*, assumption.  
**asunto**, *m.*, subject, topic.  
**atacar**, to attack.  
**atañer**, to appertain.  
**ataque**, *m.*, attack; — **de nervios**,  
     nervous attack.  
**atar**, to tie.  
**atención**, *f.*, attention.  
**atender**, to mind, heed, attend  
     (to).  
**atentado**, *m.*, offense.  
**atentamente**, *adv.*, attentively.  
**atento**, —*a*, attentive, kind.  
**aterirse**, to become numb.  
**aterrar**, to terrify, frighten.  
**atlético**, —*a*, athletic.  
**atmósfera**, *f.*, atmosphere.  
**atónito**, —*a*, amazed.  
**atractivo**, —*a*, attractive.  
**atraer**, to attract, invite.  
**atrás**, *adv.*, backwards, behind;  
     **hacia** —, *adv.*, backwards.  
**atrasar**, to delay, be slow (*of*  
     *timepieces*).  
**atravesar**, to cross, pierce.  
**atreverse**, to venture, dare.  
**atrevido**, —*a*, bold, daring.  
**atribular**, to vex, afflict.  
**aturdir**, to stun, beguile.  
**aula**, *f.*, class-room, hall.  
**augmentativo**, *m.*, augmentative.  
**aun (aún)**, *adv.*, yet, as yet, still,  
     even, nevertheless; — **cuando**,  
     *conj.*, even though; **ni** —, *adv.*,  
     not even.  
**aunque**, *conj.*, although, though.  
**Aurelio**, *m.*, Aurelius.  
**aurora**, *f.*, dawn.  
**ausencia**, *f.*, absence.  
**austeridad**, *f.*, austerity, trial,  
     ascetic practice.  
**automóvil**, *m.*, automobile.  
**autopsia**, *f.*, autopsy.  
**autor**, *m.*, author, writer.  
**autoridad**, *f.*, authority, authori-  
     ties.

**auxiliar**, *adj.*, auxiliary.  
**auxilio**, *m.*, aid; **en su** —, to help her (him, etc.).  
**avanzar**, to advance.  
**avenida**, *f.*, avenue.  
**aventajado**, —a (*adj. pp. of aventajar*), proficient.  
**aventajar**, to surpass, outdo.  
**aventura**, *f.*, adventure.  
**avergonzar**, to shame, abash.  
**averiguación**, *f.*, inquiry, investigation.  
**averiguar**, to verify, find out, ascertain.  
**avisar**, to inform, give notice.  
**¡ay!** *int.*, alas! oh!  
**ayer**, *adv.*, yesterday; **antes de** —, *adv.*, day before yesterday.  
**ayuda**, *f.*, aid.  
**ayudar**, to aid, help.  
**ayuno**, *m.*, fasting.  
**Ayuntamiento**, *m.*, municipal government (or building).  
**azotar**, to lash, whip, strike.  
**azote**, *m.*, lashing, lash.  
**Azpeitia**, *f.*, Azpeitia (a town of some 6000 inhabitants, situated in the province of Guipuzcoa, northern Spain).  
**azúcar**, *m.*, sugar.  
**azul**, *adj.*, blue.  
**azulado**, —a (*adj. pp. of azular*), azure, bluish.

## B

**¡bah!** *int.*, pshaw!  
**bahía**, *f.*, bay.  
**bailadora**, *f.*, dancer.  
**bailar**, to dance.  
**baile**, *m.*, dance, ball.  
**bajada**, *f.*, descent.  
**bajar**, to go down, descend, lower.  
**bajo**, —a, low; **piso** —, ground floor; **planta baja**, ground floor; *adv.*, low, softly; *prep.*, under, below.  
**balbucear**, to stammer.  
**balbucir**, to stammer.  
**balcón**, *m.*, balcony.  
**banco**, *m.*, bench, seat, bank.  
**banda**, *f.*, band, flock.

**banderillero**, *m.*, banderillero (he who sticks **banderillas**, or small decorated darts, into the top of the bull's shoulders).  
**banderola**, *f.*, bannerol, streamer.  
**bandido**, *m.*, bandit.  
**bando**, *m.*, edict, proclamation.  
**bandolero**, *m.*, brigand, bandit.  
**baño**, *m.*, bath.  
**barba**, *f.*, chin, beard.  
**barbaridad**, *f.*, foolish act.  
**barbero**, *m.*, barber.  
**Barcelona**, Barcelona (a city of some 500,000 inhabitants, situated in the northeastern part of Spain on the Mediterranean, capital of the old principality of Catalonia).  
**barco**, *m.*, boat.  
**barquillo**, *m.*, thin rolled wafer, wafer cone.  
**barraca**, *f.*, cabin, hut.  
**barranco**, *m.*, ravine, gorge.  
**barrer**, to sweep.  
**barrio**, *m.*, ward, quarter; —s **bajos**, slums.  
**base**, *f.*, base.  
**bastante**, *adj.*, enough, sufficient; *adv.*, enough, sufficiently, rather, quite.  
**bastar**, to suffice, be enough.  
**bastón**, *m.*, stick, cane.  
**batalla**, *f.*, battle.  
**batista**, *f.*, batiste, fine cambric.  
**Batiste**, *m.*, Baptist.  
**baúl**, *m.*, trunk.  
**beato**, —a, devout.  
**beber**, to drink.  
**bedel**, *m.*, beadle (an officer in universities, whose business it is to see that order is observed in the halls).  
**Beltza**, (la), 'Blackie' (name of a cow).  
**belleza**, *f.*, beauty.  
**Bellido Dolfos**, *m.*, see **Dolfos**.  
**bello**, —a, beautiful.  
**bendecir**, to bless.  
**bendición**, *f.*, benediction, blessing.  
**bendito**, —a (*adj. pp. of bendecir*), blessed.

**beneficio**, *m.*, benefit, favor; **en** —, for the benefit.

**Benito**, *m.*, Benedict.

**Bernhardt**, Sara, Sarah Bernhardt (*a celebrated French actress*).

**besar**, to kiss.

**beso**, *m.*, kiss.

**bestia**, *f.*, beast, animal, dunce.

**biblioteca**, *f.*, library.

**bien**, *adv.*, well, else; **más** —, *adv.*, rather; — **que**, *conj.*, although; **no** — . . . **cuando**, *conj.*, scarcely . . . when; *subst.*, *m.*, blessing, property.

**bienestar**, *m.*, well-being, comfort.

**bienhechor**, *m.*, benefactor.

**biftec**, *m.*, beefsteak.

**Bilbao**, Bilbao (*a city of about 94,000 inhabitants, capital of the province of Vizcaya, northern Spain*).

**billete**, *m.*, bank note, ticket; — **de primera**, etc., first-class ticket, etc.; — **de ida y vuelta**, round-trip ticket; — **de andén**, platform ticket.

**billón**, *m.*, billion.

**birrete**, *m.*, cap.

**bisiesto**, —**a**, bissextile; **año** —, leap-year.

**Bivar**, Bivar (*the castle near Burgos where the Cid was born*).

**blanco**, —**a**, white.

**blandir**, to brandish.

**blando**, —**a**, soft, mild, gentle.

**blasonado**, —**a**, (*adj. pp. of blasonar*), emblazoned.

**blusa**, *f.*, blouse.

**boca**, *f.*, mouth.

**bochorno**, *m.*, oppressive heat, sultriness.

**bodega**, *f.*, wine-cellar.

**boina**, *f.*, cap.

**bolsillo**, *m.*, pocket; **reloj de** —, watch.

**bondad**, *f.*, kindness, goodness; **tener la** — **de**, to be so kind as.

**bondadoso**, —**a**, kind.

**bonito**, —**a**, pretty.

**bordar**, to embroider.

**borde**, *m.*, edge.

**borla**, *f.*, tassel.

**borracho**, —**a**, intoxicated.

**borrar**, to erase.

**Borrás**, Enrique, Henry Borrás (*a celebrated contemporary Spanish actor*).

**borrico**, *m.*, ass, little mule.

**bosque**, *m.*, wood, grove, forest.

**botella**, *f.*, bottle.

**Brasil**, *m.*, Brazil.

¡**bravo**, —**a**! *int.*, fine! excellent! bravo!

**brazo**, *m.*, arm; **en** —**s**, in (one's) arms.

**breñal**, *m.*, thicket of brambles.

**breve**, *adj.*, brief, short; **en** —, *adv.*, shortly, in a little while.

**breviario**, *m.*, breviary.

**Briareo**, Briareus (*in Greek mythology, a monster with a hundred arms*).

**bribón**, *m.*, rascal.

**brillante**, *adj.*, brilliant, bright, shining.

**brillar**, to shine.

**brincar**, to jump, bound.

**brindar**, to offer, pledge.

**brío**, *m.*, spirit, vim, strength, vigor, force.

**brioso**, —**a**, spirited, lively.

**brisa**, *f.*, breeze.

**bromista**; **amigo** —, mischievous fellow, joker.

**bronce**, *m.*, bronze.

**brotar**, to germinate, bud, spring (or gush) forth, well up.

**bruja**, *f.*, witch.

**brunir**, to polish.

**bruscamente**, *adv.*, abruptly, roughly.

**brutal**, *adj.*, brutal.

**buen** (*see bueno*); **a** — **seguro**, *adv.*, certainly, indubitably.

**Buen Retiro**, Buen Retiro, *lit.*, 'pleasant retreat' (*a park in Madrid*).

**buenaventura**, *f.*, fortune.

**bueno**, —**a**, good, well; ¡—! *int.*, all right!; **Noche Buena**, *f.*, Christmas Eve; ¡**buenas noches**! good evening! good night!; ¡**buenas tardes**! good afternoon!; ¡**bue-**



**nos días!** good morning! good day!  
**bullicio**, *m.*, bustle, noise, confusion.  
**bullicioso**, *-a*, noisy, lively.  
**bullir**, to boil.  
**buque**, *m.*, boat, skiff, ship.  
**Burgos**, Burgos (*a city of some 31,500 inhabitants, capital of the province of Burgos, Spain*).  
**burla**, *f.*, jest, mockery; — **burlando**, *adv.*, in an easy way, without effort.  
**burlarse (de)**, to make fun (of), laugh (at).  
**burro**, *m.*, donkey, ass; — **mohino**, mule.  
**busca**, *f.*, search.  
**buscar**, to seek, get, look for, go for.  
**butaca**, *f.*, armchair.

## C

**¡ca!** *int.* (*expressing indignation*), why no! of course not!  
**caballerete**, *m.*, spruce young gentleman, dandy.  
**caballería**, *f.*, chivalry, horse, riding beast; — **andantesca**, knight-errantry.  
**caballeriza**, *f.*, stable.  
**caballero**, *m.*, gentleman, knight, man, sir; **armar** —, to dub knight; — **en**, mounted on.  
**Caballero de Gracia**, Caballero de Gracia (*a cross street in Madrid*).  
**caballo**, *m.*, horse.  
**cabellera**, *f.*, hair, head of hair.  
**cabello**, *m.*, hair, hair of the head (*used also in the plural*).  
**caber**, to fit, be contained; **no cabe duda**, there can be no doubt.  
**cabeza**, *f.*, head; **dolor de** —, headache.  
**cabo**, *m.*, end, corporal; **al** —, *adv.*, finally, at last; **al fin y al** —, *adv.*, at last.  
**cada**, *adj.*, each, every; — **cual**, *pron.*, each one, every one; — **uno (-a)**, *pron.*, each one, every one.

**cadáver**, *m.*, corpse, body.  
**cadena**, *f.*, chain, series, succession.  
**cadera**, *f.*, hip.  
**caer**, to fall; — **en mal caso**, to fall into disrepute.  
**café**, *m.*, café, coffee.  
**caído**, *-a* (*adj. pp. of caer*), fallen, drooping, hanging, dangling.  
**Cairo**, *m.*, Cairo.  
**caja**, *f.*, box, case (*of watch or clock*); — **de música**, music-box.  
**cal**, *f.*, lime.  
**cálculo**, *m.*, calculation, computation; **hacer** —s, to reckon.  
**Calderón de la Barca**, Calderón de la Barca ([1600-1681] *a celebrated Spanish dramatist and poet*).  
**caldo**, *m.*, broth, clear soup, bouillon.  
**calentar**, to warm.  
**calentura(s)**, *f.*, fever.  
**calidad**, *f.*, quality, rank.  
**caliente**, *adj.*, warm, hot.  
**calificar**, to modify, qualify.  
**calma**, *f.*, calm, calmness.  
**calmar**, to calm.  
**calor**, *m.*, heat, warmth; **hacer** —, to be hot or warm (*of weather*); **tener** —, to be warm (*of beings*).  
**calorífero**, *m.*, heater, foot-warmer.  
**caluroso**, *-a*, warm, hot.  
**calzado**, *m.*, shoes, foot-gear.  
**¡calla!** or **¡calle!** *int.*, be silent! shut up! nonsense!  
**callar**, to become quiet, become silent.  
**calle**, *f.*, street, way; — **de Alcalá**, Alcalá Street (*one of the principal streets of Madrid*); — **Mayor**, Main Street (*one of the principal streets of Madrid*).  
**callejuela**, *f.*, alley, lane, small street.  
**cama**, *f.*, bed.  
**camarada**, *m.*, comrade, chum.  
**camarero**, *m.*, chamberlain, page, valet.  
**cambalache**, *m.*, bartering, dealing in second-hand goods.

**cambiar**, to change; — **en**, to change to.

**cambio**, *m.*, change; **en** —, *adv.*, on the other hand.

**caminante**, *m.*, traveler, wayfarer.

**caminar**, to walk, advance, go along.

**caminero**, —*a*, pertaining to the road; **peón** —, road mender.

**camino**, *m.*, road, way; — **de**, *prep.*, in the direction of; **media hora de** —, half an hour's journey.

**camisa**, *f.*, shirt.

**camisería**, *f.*, haberdashery.

**campamento**, *m.*, camp.

**campana**, *f.*, bell.

**campaña**, *f.*, campaign; **criado de** —, army servant.

**campeador**, *m.*, warrior (*a surname applied particularly to the Cid. See Cid*).

**campo**, *m.*, country, field.

**Canadá**, *m.*, Canada.

**canalla**, *f.*, mob, rabble; *m.*, scoundrel.

**¡canastos!** *int.*, good heavens! goodness! the deuce! by Jove! etc.

**canción**, *f.*, song, ballad.

**canonizar**, to canonize.

**Canábrico**, (**El**), *m.*, The Cantabrian Sea (*that part of the Atlantic Ocean that washes the north coast of Spain*).

**cantar**, to sing, sing of.

**cántaro**, *m.*, pitcher, jug.

**cantaruelo**, *m.* (*dim. of cántaro*).

**cante**; **dar el** —, to inform against.

**canto**, *m.*, song, singing.

**cantor**, *m.*, singer.

**caña**, *f.*, reed, cane.

**cañon**, *m.*, cannon, barrel (of a gun).

**capa**, *f.*, cape.

**capellán**, *m.*, chaplain, priest.

**capilla**, *f.*, chapel.

**capital**, *f.*, capital, chief city.

**capitán**, *m.*, captain; — **general**, captain general (*officer in command of a district of Spain*).

**capitanía**, *f.*, captaincy; — **gen-**

**eral**, captaincy general, headquarters of captain-general.

**cara**, *f.*, face, head of a coin.

**carabina**, *f.*, carbine, gun.

**¡caracoles!** *int.*, good heavens! goodness! the deuce! by Jove! etc.

**carácter**, *m.*, character.

**¡carái!** *int.*, good heavens! goodness! the deuce! by Jove! etc.

**¡caramba!** *int.*, gee! good heavens! goodness! the deuce! by Jove! etc.

**caravana**, *f.*, caravan, company (or group) of travelers.

**carcajada**, *f.*, burst of laughter, laughter; **soltar la** —, to burst out laughing.

**cárcel**, *f.*, prison, jail.

**cardenal**, *m.*, cardinal.

**cardinal**, *adj.*, cardinal.

**carecer**, to lack.

**carga**, *f.*, load.

**cargado**, —*a* (*adj. pp. of cargar*), loaded, full; — **de espaldas**, round-shouldered.

**cargo**, *m.*, burden; **hacerse** —, to take possession of, realize, consider.

**caricia**, *f.*, caress, petting.

**caridad**, *f.*, charity.

**cariño**, *m.*, affection, love.

**cariñoso**, —*a*, affectionate, kind.

**caritativo**, —*a*, charitable, kind.

**Carlos**, *m.*, Charles.

**Carlos I**, Charles I (*the same as the emperor Carlos V*).

**Carlos V**, Charles V ([1500–1558]. *Emperor of the Holy Roman Empire. He became king of Spain as Charles I in 1516, was elected Emperor in 1519, and was crowned at Aix-la-Chapelle in 1520. He abdicated in 1556, and subsequently lived in the monastery of Yuste in Spain*).

**Carmen**, *f.*, Carmen.

**carmesí**, *adj.*, crimson.

**Carnaval**, *m.*, Carnival.

**carne**, *f.* (*used also in the plural*), meat, flesh; **metida en** —*s*, plump.

**carpintero**, *m.*, carpenter.

**carrera**, *f.*, course, career, running, race.

**carretera**, *f.*, highway, road.

**carruaje**, *m.*, carriage.

**carta**, *f.*, letter, card.

**cartilla**, *f.*, primer.

**casa**, *f.*, house, home; — **de huéspedes**, boarding-house; — **de socorro**, emergency hospital; — **solar**, manor, manor-house; **pagar la** —, to pay the rent; **en** — **de**, in care of; **a** —, *adv.*, home.

**casado**, —**a** (*adj. pp. of casar*), married.

**casar(se) (con)**, to marry.

**caserío**, *m.*, village, collection of houses, small farmhouse, hut.

**caseta**, *f.*, hut, cabin.

**casi**, *adv.*, almost, nearly.

**casino**, *m.*, casino, club, club-house.

**Casino**, Casino (*a very fashionable club at San Sebastián*).

**caso**, *m.*, case; **caer en mal** —, to fall into disrepute; **hacer** —, to pay attention; **en** — **de que**, *conj.*, in case that.

**¡cáspita!** *int.*, good heavens! goodness! the deuce! by Jove! etc.

**castañuelas**, *f. pl.*, castanets.

**Castelar, Emilio**, Emilio Castelar ([1832–1899]. *A Spanish orator and writer. He was one of the presidents of the short-lived Spanish Republic*).

**Castellana, (La)**, *f.*, The Castellana (*name of a street in Madrid*).

**castellano**, —**a**, Castilian, Spanish.

**Castilla**, *f.*, Castile (*a former kingdom of Spain in the northern and central part of the peninsula*).

**castillo**, *m.*, castle; —**s en el aire**, air-castles.

**Castro, Guillén de**, Guillén de Castro. (*Born at Valencia, 1569. Died at Madrid, 1631. A Spanish dramatist. He wrote "Las Mocedades del Cid."*)

**casualidad**, *f.*, chance, accident.

**casualmente**, *adv.*, casually, by chance.

**casucha**, *f.*, miserable hut, cottage.

**Catalina**, *f.*, Catherine.

**Cataluña**, *f.*, Catalonia.

**catecismo**, *m.*, catechism.

**catedral**, *f.*, cathedral.

**catedrático**, *m.*, university (or college) professor.

**católico**, —**a**, Catholic.

**catorce**, *adj.*, fourteen, fourteenth.

**causa**, *f.*, cause; **a** — **de**, *prep.*, on account of.

**causar**, to cause, produce.

**cautiverio**, *m.*, captivity.

**cautivo**, *m.*, captive.

**cavilar**, to think, ponder.

**cazar**, to hunt.

**cazuela**, *f.*, earthen dish, crock.

**Cecilia**, *f.*, Cicily, Cecilia.

**cédula**, *f.*, slip (of paper).

**cegar**, to blind.

**celebrar**, to celebrate, praise, be glad; —**se**, to be celebrated, take place, be held.

**célebre**, *adj.*, famous, celebrated.

**Celestina**, Celestina (*a Spanish prose drama in twenty-one acts, or parts*).

**celo**, *m.*, zeal; *pl.*, jealousy; **tener** —**s**, to be jealous.

**cementerio**, *m.*, cemetery.

**cena**, *f.*, supper.

**cenar**, to sup, dine.

**ceniciento**, —**a**, ash-colored.

**ceniza**, *f.*, ash, ashes; **Miércoles de Ceniza**, Ash Wednesday.

**censurable**, *adj.*, censurable.

**centena**, *f.*, hundred, group of a hundred.

**centenar**, *m.*, hundred, group of a hundred.

**centésimo**, —**a**, hundredth.

**céntimo**, *m.*, centime.

**centinela**, *m. or f.*, sentinel.

**céntrico**, —**a**, central.

**centro**, *m.*, center.

**céntuplo**, —**a**, a hundredfold.

**ceñir**, to gird, bind, surround, keep close.

**ceño**, *m.*, frown, severity.

**cepillar**, to brush.

- cepillo**, *m.*, brush, eraser; — **de encerado**, eraser.  
**cerca**, *adv.*, near; **de** —, *adv.*, closely, intimately; — (**de or a**), *prep.*, near, close to, about.  
**cercano**, —*a*, neighboring, near-by.  
**cerdo**, *m.*, pig.  
**cerebral**; **conmoción** —, concussion of the brain.  
**ceremonia**, *f.*, ceremony.  
**cerilla**, *f.*, match, wax taper.  
**cerner**, to sift.  
**cero**, *m.*, zero, cipher (*an arithmetical symbol*).  
**cerrar**, to close, shut.  
**cerro**, *m.*, hill.  
**cerrojo**, *m.*, bolt.  
**certeza**, *f.*, certainty, certitude.  
**certificar**, to certify, register.  
**Cervantes Saavedra, Miguel de**, Miguel de Cervantes Saavedra. (*Born at Alcalá de Henares, 1547. Died at Madrid, April 23, 1616. A celebrated poet and novelist, author of "Don Quijote."*)  
**cerveza**, *f.*, beer.  
**cerviz**, *f.*, cervix, nape of the neck.  
**cesante** (*see dejar*).  
**cesar**, to cease, stop.  
**César**, *m.*, Cæsar.  
**cese**, *m.*, dismissal.  
**cesta**, *f.*, basket, racket (*fastened to the hand for playing pelota*).  
**cicatero**, —*a*, niggardly, stingy.  
**Cid**, (**El**), The Cid (*Ruy or Rodrigo Díaz de Bivar, called also "El Campeador," the most celebrated Spanish hero, born at the Castle of Bivar, near Burgos, Spain, about 1040, died at Valencia, Spain, July, 1099*).  
**ciego**, —*a*, blind.  
**cielo**, *m.*, sky, heaven; ¡ —*s!* *int.*, heavens!  
**cien** (*see ciento*).  
**ciencia**, *f.*, science.  
**ciento**, *adj.*, one hundred, hundredth.  
**cierto**, —*a*, certain, true; **por** —, *adv.*, certainly.  
**cigarrera**, *f.*, cigarette (*or cigar*) maker.  
**cigarrillo**, *m.*, cigarette.  
**cigarro** (**puro**), *m.*, cigar.  
**cima**, *f.*, top; **leer por** —, to glance over; **por** — **de**, *prep.*, above, over.  
**cinco**, *adj.*, five, fifth.  
**cincuenta**, *adj.*, fifty, fiftieth.  
**cíngara**, *f.*, gipsy (woman).  
**cíngaro**, *m.*, gipsy.  
**cinta**, *f.*, ribbon.  
**circulación**, *f.*, circulation.  
**circular**, to circle, travel round.  
**círculo**, *m.*, circle, group, club.  
**circundar**, to surround.  
**circunstancia**, *f.*, circumstance, condition.  
**cita**, *f.*, appointment.  
**ciudad**, *f.*, city.  
**clamar**, to call, cry out.  
**clamor**, *m.*, clamor, outcry, shriek.  
**claramente**, *adv.*, clearly.  
**claridad**, *f.*, light.  
**clarificar**, to clarify, purify, refine.  
**clarín**, *m.*, bugle, clarion.  
**claro**, —*a*, clear, limpid, bright; *adv.*, clearly, of course.  
**clase**, *f.*, class, class-room.  
**clásico**, —*a*, classic, regular.  
**claustro**, *m.*, cloister.  
**cláusula**, *f.*, clause.  
**clavar**, to nail, fix.  
**cobrar**, to get, receive (money).  
**cobre**, *m.*, copper.  
**cocer**, to cook; **bien cocido**, —*a*, well done.  
**cocido**, *m.*, boiled dish.  
**cocina**, *f.*, kitchen, cooking.  
**coche**, *m.*, coach, carriage, car.  
**cochero**, *m.*, driver, coachman, cabman.  
**codicioso**, —*a*, (**de**), greedy (for), covetous (of).  
**código**, *m.*, code (of laws).  
**codo**, *m.*, elbow.  
**coger**, to catch, hold, seize, take, gather.  
**cogidos de la mano**, holding hands.  
**cojo**, —*a*, lame.  
**cola**, *f.*, tail.  
**colaboración**, *f.*, collaboration.  
**colaborador**, *m.*, fellow worker.  
**colar**, to strain, filter.

colectivo, -a, collective.  
 colegio, *m.*, school, college, seminary.  
 colegir, to infer.  
 cólera, *f.*, anger.  
 colgar, to hang, hang up.  
 colmillo, *m.*, fang.  
 colmo, *m.*, height, summit, limit.  
 colocar, to put in place, arrange.  
 Colón, *m.*, Columbus.  
 color, *m.*, color.  
 columna, *f.*, column, post.  
 comandante, *m.*, commander, major.  
 combatiente, *m.*, combatant.  
 combatir, to fight, war, combat, resist, oppose.  
 combinación, *f.*, combination.  
 comedia, *f.*, comedy, play.  
 comedor, *m.*, dining-room.  
 comenzar, to commence, begin.  
 comer, to eat, dine.  
 comida, *f.*, meal, dinner.  
 comienzo, *m.*, beginning, start.  
 comisión, *f.*, commission, errand.  
 como, *conj.*, as, like, in proportion as, as it were; *así . . . —, conj.*, both . . . and; *así — . . . así (también), conj.*, just as . . . so (too); — *que, conj.*, as if; — *quiera que, conj.*, however.  
 ¿cómo? *adv.*, how? (*used to inquire regarding way, means, or manner*).  
 comodidad, *f.*, comfort, ease, convenience.  
 cómodo, -a, comfortable, convenient.  
 compadre, *m.*, friend (*used as a casual term of address*).  
 compañero, *m.*, companion, comrade.  
 compañía, *f.*, company; *Compañía de Jesús*, Company of Jesus, or Jesuit order.  
 comparar, to compare.  
 comparativo, *m.*, comparative.  
 compartimiento, *m.*, compartment.  
 compartir, to share.  
 compás, *m.*, measure, time (*of music*); a — a, *prep.*, in time to, in measure with.

compasión, *f.*, compassion, pity.  
 complacer, to humor.  
 complemento, -a, objective; *subst.*, *m.*, object.  
 completo, -a, complete, entire; por —, completely.  
 complicidad, *f.*, complicity.  
 componer, to compose.  
 comportamiento, *m.*, behavior.  
 composición, *f.*, composition.  
 compostura, *f.*, composure.  
 compra, *f.*, purchase.  
 comprar, to buy.  
 comprender, to understand, comprehend.  
 compuesto, -a (*adj. pp. of componer*), composed, compound.  
 común, *adj.*, common; año —, common year.  
 comunicación, *f.*, communication.  
 comunicar, to communicate, express.  
 comunicativo, -a, communicative.  
 con, *prep.*, with; — *motivo que, conj.*, so that; — *que, conj.*, so, so then, therefore.  
 concebir, to conceive.  
 concepción, *f.*, conception; *Inmaculada Concepción*, Immaculate Conception.  
 concerniente, *adj.*, concerning.  
 concernir, to concern.  
 concertar, to agree, harmonize.  
 concluir, to conclude, finish, end.  
 concordancia, *f.*, agreement.  
 concordar, to agree.  
 concurrido, -a (*adj. pp. of concurrir*), frequented.  
 Concha, Concha (*the name of the bay at San Sebastián. Its beach is excellently adapted for bathing*).  
 conde, *m.*, count.  
 condenar, to condemn.  
 condesa, *f.*, countess.  
 condición, *f.*, condition; a — *que, conj.*, on condition that.  
 condicional, *adj.*, conditional.  
 condiscípulo, *m.*, fellow student.  
 conducente, *adj.*, conducive, tending.  
 conducir, to conduct, lead.  
 conducta, *f.*, conduct, behavior.

- conejo**, *m.*, rabbit.  
**conferencia**, *f.*, lecture.  
**confesar**, to confess.  
**confiar**, to hope, trust in.  
**confirmar**, to confirm.  
**confitura**, *f.*, preserves.  
**conforme**, *adv.*, in the same way as, in proportion.  
**confortador**, *adj.*, comforting.  
**confundir**, to confuse.  
**confuso**, -a (*adj. pp. of confundir*), confused.  
**conjugación**, *f.*, conjugation.  
**conjugar**, to conjugate.  
**conjunción**, *f.*, conjunction.  
**conjunto**, *m.*, whole, ensemble, aggregate.  
**conmemoración**, *f.*, commemoration.  
**conmemorar**, to commemorate.  
**conmigo**, *pers. pron.*, with me.  
**conmoción**; — **cerebral**, concussion of the brain.  
**conocer**, to know, be acquainted with.  
**conocimiento**, *m.*, knowledge, acquaintance, consciousness.  
**consecuencia**, *f.*, consequence.  
**conseguir**, to accomplish, get, bring about, attain, obtain, succeed.  
**conservación**, *f.*, (self) preservation.  
**conservador**, *adj.*, conservative.  
**conservar**, to preserve, keep.  
**consideración**, *f.*, consideration.  
**considerar**, to consider, think of.  
**consigo**, *pers. pron.*, with one's self, himself, herself, itself, themselves, yourself or yourselves.  
**consiguiente**, *adj.*, consequent; **por** —, *adv.*, consequently.  
**consistir (en)**, to consist (of or in).  
**Consolación**, *f.*, Consolation.  
**consolar**, to console, comfort.  
**consonante**, *m.*, rhyme, rhyme-word; *f.*, consonant.  
**constar (de)**, to consist (of), be composed (of), be clear (or evident).  
**consternación**, *f.*, consternation.  
**constituir**, to constitute, compose.  
**construcción**, *f.*, construction, (*gram.*) position.  
**construir**, to build, construct.  
**contar**, to count, relate, tell, expect.  
**contemplar**, to contemplate, view, behold, look at.  
**contener**, to contain, restrain.  
**contento**, *m.*, satisfaction, happiness, contentment; *adj.*, content, glad, satisfied.  
**contestación**, *f.*, reply, answer.  
**contestar**, to answer, reply.  
**contigo**, *pers. pron.*, with thee.  
**contiguo**, -a, adjacent.  
**continental**, *adj.*, continental.  
**continuación**, *f.*, continuation.  
**continuar**, to continue, go on.  
**continuo**, -a, continual, continuous, constant.  
**contra**, *prep.*, against.  
**contracción**, *f.*, contraction.  
**contradecir**, to contradict.  
**contradictorio**, -a, contradictory.  
**contraer**, to contract.  
**contrapeso**, *m.*, counterweight.  
**contrario**, -a, contrary, opposite; **al** —, *adv.*, on the other hand, on the contrary.  
**contraste**, *m.*, contrast.  
**contribuir**, to contribute.  
**convaleciente**, *adj.*, convalescent.  
**convencer**, to convince.  
**convenir**, to suit, be fitting, agree.  
**convento**, *m.*, monastery, convent.  
**conversación**, *f.*, conversation.  
**convertir**, to convert.  
**convulsivo**, -a, convulsive.  
**convulso**, -a, convulsed.  
**cooperar**, to cooperate.  
**copa**, *f.*, mug, glass; **sombrero de** —, silk hat.  
**copiar**, to copy.  
**copiosamente**, *adv.*, copiously, abundantly.  
**copla**, *f.*, couplet.  
**corazón**, *m.*, heart; **de** —, from (my) heart.  
**corbata**, *f.*, cravat, necktie, tie.  
**¡córcholis!** *int.*, good heavens! goodness! the deuce! by Jove! etc.

**corderillo**, *m.*, lamb.

**cordialmente**, *adv.*, cordially.

**Córdoba**, *f.*, Cordova (*a city of about 65,000 inhabitants, capital of the province of Cordova, southern Spain*).

**Corneille**, **Pierre**, Pierre Corneille. (*Corneille was born at Rouen in 1606, and died at Paris in 1684. He was a celebrated French dramatist. His tragedy "Le Cid" was produced in 1636.*)

**coro**, *m.*, chorus, choir.

**corona**, *f.*, wreath, crown.

**corpiño**, *m.*, bodice.

**corpulento**, *-a*, corpulent.

**Corpus Christi**, *m.*, Corpus Christi.

**córrea**, *f.*, leather strap.

**corrección**, *f.*, correction, correctness.

**correcto**, *-a*, correct, right.

**corregir**, to correct.

**correo**, *m.*, mail.

**correr**, to run, flow; — **mundo**, to travel.

**correspondiente**, *adj.*, suitable, proper.

**corretear**, to rove, ramble, gad.

**corrida**, *f.*, bull-fight; — **de toros**, bull-fight.

**corrido** (*adj. pp. of correr*), run, abashed, ashamed; **de** —, *adv.*, rapidly, one after another.

**corriente**, *adj.*, current, common, fluent; **de los** —s, of this month.

**corroer**, to corrode.

**corromper**, to corrupt.

**cortante**, *adj.*, cutting, sharp.

**cortar**, to cut, intersect.

**corte**, *f.*, court, capital.

**cortés**, *adj.*, courteous, polite.

**cortesía**, *f.*, courtesy; **de** —, *adv.*, out of courtesy.

**cortésmente**, *adv.*, courteously, politely.

**corteza**, *f.*, bark, outward appearance.

**cortijo**, *m.*, farmhouse, manse.

**cortina**, *f.*, curtain.

**corto**, *-a*, short.

**cosa**, *f.*, thing.

**cosecha**, *f.*, harvest, reaping.

**coser**, to sew.

**costa**, *f.*, cost, expense.

**Costa Rica**, *f.*, Costa Rica.

**costar**, to cost.

**costumbre**, *f.*, custom.

**crecer**, to increase, grow.

**crédito**, *m.*, credit, belief, credence; **dar** —, to believe.

**crédulo**, *-a*, credulous.

**creer**, to believe, think; **ya lo creo**, you bet, yes indeed.

**criada**, *f.*, maid, servant.

**criado**, *m.*, servant; — **de campaña**, army servant.

**criatura**, *f.*, creature, child.

**crimen**, *m.*, crime.

**criminal**, *m.*, criminal.

**cristal**, *m.*, crystal, glass, window-pane.

**cristalino**, *-a*, crystalline, transparent.

**cristiano**, *-a*, Christian.

**Cristina**, *f.*, Christine.

**Cristóbal**, *m.*, Christopher.

**criterio**, *m.*, criterion, judgment.

**crónica**, *f.*, chronicle.

**Crónica del Cid**, Chronicle of the Cid. (*The date of this composition is unknown. It was printed in 1512.*)

**cronómetro**, *m.*, timepiece.

**cruel**, *adj.*, cruel.

**cruz**, *f.*, cross, tail (of a coin); **en** —, like a cross, in the form of a cross.

**cruzar**, to traverse, cross, pass by, fly over; — **se con**, to cross, meet.

**cuadragésimo**, *-a*, fortieth.

**cuadrilla**, *f.*, procession (*of bull-fighters*).

**cuadringentésimo**, *-a*, four hundredth.

**cuadro**, *m.*, picture.

**cuadruplicado**, *-a* (*adj. pp. of cuadruplicar*), quadruple, fourfold.

**cuádruplo**, *-a*, quadruple, fourfold.

**cuajar**, to ornament richly, load, cover.

**cual**, *rel. pron. and adj.*, which, who, whom; **el** (**la**, **lo**, **los**, **las**) —(es), *rel. pron.*, which, who,

- whom; *cada* —, *pron.*, each one, every one; *adv.*, like.
- ¿*cuál*? *inter. pron. and adj.*, which (one)? what (one)?
- cualidad*, *f.*, quality.
- cualquiera*, *cualesquiera*, *adj. and pron.*, any (whatever), any (you please).
- cuando*, *conj.*, when, whenever; *aun* —, *conj.*, even though; *de* — *en* —, *adv.*, from time to time; *de vez en* —, *adv.*, from time to time; *no bien* . . . —, *conj.*, scarcely . . . when.
- ¿*cuándo*? *adv.*, when?
- cuanto*, —*a*, as much; *pl.*, as many; *rel. pron.*, all that, as much as, as many as; *todo* —, all that; *unos* (—*as*) —*s* (—*as*), *adj. and pron.*, a few, some; — *más*, *adv.*, (all) the more; — *más que*, *conj.*, the more since; *en* —, *conj.*, when, as far as.
- ¿*cuánto*, —*a*? *inter. pron. and adj.*, how much?; *pl.*, how many?
- cuarenta*, *adj.*, forty, fortieth.
- cuarentena*, *f.*, forty, group of forty, twoscore.
- Cuaresma*, *f.*, Lent.
- cuarta*, *f.*, about eight inches (one fourth of the Spanish *vara* or yard); *media* —, about four inches.
- cuartel*, *m.*, barracks.
- cuarteto*, *m.*, quatrain, quartet.
- cuarto*, —*a*, fourth; *subst. m.*, quarter, room, penny (an old Spanish copper coin, now rare, worth three céntimos. The term is still used for 'pennies').
- cuatro*, *adj.*, four, fourth.
- Cuba*, *f.*, Cuba.
- cubierto*, —*a* (*adj. pp. of cubrir*), covered.
- cubrir*, to cover.
- cuchara*, *f.*, spoon.
- cuchichear*, to whisper.
- cuchillo*, *m.*, knife.
- cuello*, *m.*, collar, neck.
- cuenta*, *f.*, bill, account; *dar* — *de sí*, to write; *darse* — *de*, to realize.
- cuento*, *m.*, story, tale.
- cuerda*, *f.*, cord, string, rope; *dar* —, to wind up.
- cuerpo*, *m.*, body, corps; — *de Telégrafos*, Telegraph Bureau.
- cuesta*, *f.*, hill.
- cuestión*, *f.*, question.
- cueva*, *f.*, cave.
- cuidado*, *m.*, care, attention; ¡—! *int.*, be careful! look out!
- cuidadoso*, —*a*, careful.
- cuidar* (*de*), to take care (of), look after, mind.
- culpa*, *f.*, blame, fault, offense; *tener* —, to be to blame.
- cultivar*, to cultivate.
- cultura*, *f.*, culture, cultivation.
- cumpleaños*, *m.*, birthday.
- cumplido*, —*a* (*adj. pp. of cumplir*), complete, plentiful.
- cumplimiento*, *m.*, attention, politeness, fulfillment.
- cumplir*, to fulfil, complete, serve one's time.
- cuñada*, *f.*, sister-in-law.
- cúpula*, *f.*, cupola, dome.
- cura*, *m.*, priest.
- curar* (*se*), to care.
- curiosidad*, *f.*, curiosity.
- curioso*, —*a*, curious.
- curso*, *m.*, course; — *escolar*, course of studies.
- curtir*, to tan, harden.
- curva*, *f.*, curve, bend.
- cutis*, *m.*, skin.
- cuyo*, —*a*, *rel. adj.*, whose, of which.
- ¿*cúyo*, —*a*? *inter. adj.*, whose?

## Ch

- chalán*, *m.*, jockey, horse dealer.
- chaleco*, *m.*, vest, waistcoat.
- chaqueta*, *f.*, coat.
- charlar*, to chat, converse.
- chasquear*, to click, clack, snap, crack.
- chico*, —*a*, little, small; *subst. m. or f.*, little boy (or girl).
- chimenea*, *f.*, chimney, chimney-place, fireplace.
- China*, *f.*, China.



**chiquillo**, *m.*, little boy, little fellow.

**¡cho!** *int.*, whoa! stand still!

**chocolate**, *m.*, chocolate.

**choza**, *f.*, hut, hovel.

**chulo**, *chulo* (*a bull-fighter's assistant*).

**chupar**, to suck, puff.

## D

**dado que**, *conj.*, in case that, supposing that.

**dama**, *f.*, lady, lady-love; — *s*, checkers, game of checkers.

**daño**, *m.*, damage, harm; **con** —, to (one's) hurt.

**dar**, to give, strike, recite; — (*a*), to open (upon); — **cuenta de sí**, to write; — **se cuenta de**, to realize; — **cuerda**, to wind up; — **fin**, to end, conclude; — **vuelta a**, to go around; — **media vuelta**, to go half way round; — **un paseo**, to walk, take a walk; — **un susto**, to frighten, startle.

**Darro**, (*El*), *m.*, The Darro (*a stream in southern Spain, flowing past Granada. Its gorge separates The Albaicín from the Alhambra Hill*).

**dativo**, *m.*, dative, indirect object.

**de**, *prep.*, of, from, by, about, with, on, at.

**debajo**, *adv.*, beneath; **por** —, *adv.*, below; — **de**, *prep.*, under.

**deber**, to owe, ought; *subst.*, *m.*, duty, obligation, debt.

**debidamente**, *adv.*, duly.

**debido**, —*a* (*adj. pp. of deber*), owing, due.

**débil**, *adj.*, weak, feeble.

**debilidad**, *f.*, weakness, debility.

**decano**, *m.*, dean, director.

**decena**, *f.*, group of ten numbers, ten.

**decidido**, —*a* (*adj. pp. of decidir*), decided, professed, devoted.

**decidir**, to decide.

**décimo**, —*a*, tenth; — **cuarto** (—*a*), fourteenth; — **nono** (—*a*), nine-

teenth; — **octavo** (—*a*), eighteenth; — **quinto** (—*a*), fifteenth; — **séptimo** (—*a*), seventeenth; — **sexto** (—*a*), sixteenth; — **tercio** (—*a*), thirteenth.

**decir**, to tell, say; **querer** —, to mean.

**declamar**, to declaim, recite.

**declarar**, to declare.

**décuplo**, —*a*, tenfold.

**dedicar**, to devote, dedicate, inscribe.

**dedo**, *m.*, finger, toe.

**deducir**, to deduce.

**defectivo**, —*a*, defective.

**defender**, to defend.

**defensa**, *f.*, defence.

**defensor**, *m.*, defender.

**deferir**, to defer, pay deference to another's opinion.

**deformar**, to deform.

**deforme**, *adj.*, shapeless, deformed.

**degenerar**, to degenerate.

**dejar**, to leave, let, allow; — **de**, to cease, stop, fail; — **cesante**, to dismiss; — **paso**, to give entrance (*or way*).

**delantal**, *m.*, apron.

**delante**, *adv.*, ahead, in front, forward, before; — (**de**), *prep.*, before, in front of; **por** — (**de**), *prep.*, in front of.

**delantero**, —*a*, fore.

**delicioso**, —*a*, delightful, delicious.

**delinquir**, to transgress, be delinquent.

**delito**, *m.*, crime.

**demás** (*el, la, lo, los, las*), *adj. and pron.*, (the) rest, other part, remainder, others.

**demasiado**, —*a*, *adj. and pron.*, too much, too many; *adv.*, too, too much.

**demente**, *m.*, demented (person).

**demonio**, *m.*, demon, devil.

**demostrar**, to demonstrate, prove.

**demostrativo**, —*a*, demonstrative.

**dentadura**, *f.*, teeth, set of teeth.

**dentro**, *adv.*, within, inside; **por** —, *adv.*, within, on the inside; — (**de**), *prep.*, within.

**depender** (**de**), to depend (upon).

- dependiente**, *adj.*, dependent;  
*subst.*, clerk.  
**derecho**, -a, right (*as opposed to*  
*'left'*); *adv.*, straight; **con pie**  
 —, *adv.*, fortunately, with good  
 omen; *subst.*, *m.*, law.  
**derramar**, to shed.  
**derretir**, to melt, dissolve.  
**desacordemente**, *adv.*, discord-  
 antly.  
**desafío**, *m.*, challenge.  
**desaforado**, -a, huge, uncom-  
 monly large.  
**desaparecer**, to disappear.  
**desarrugar**, to smooth out, re-  
 move the wrinkles.  
**desasosiego**, *m.*, uneasiness.  
**desastre**, *m.*, disaster.  
**desatinado**, -a, mad, foolish.  
**desayuno**, *m.*, breakfast.  
**desazonado**, -a, ill at ease.  
**descalzo**, -a, barefooted, bare.  
**descansado**, -a (*adj. pp. of des-*  
*cansar*), restful, rested.  
**descansar**, to rest.  
**descanso**, *m.*, rest, repose.  
**descargar**, to discharge, give,  
 plant, bring down.  
**descarnado**, -a, bare, leafless.  
**descender**, to descend.  
**descolgar**, to unhook, take down,  
 slip down.  
**desconfiar**, to distrust.  
**desconocer**, not to know (of), be  
 ignorant (of).  
**desconocido**, -a (*adj. pp. of*  
*desconocer*), unknown.  
**desconsolar**, to afflict.  
**describir**, to describe.  
**descripción**, *f.*, description.  
**descubierto**, -a (*adj. pp. of*  
*descubrir*), uncovered; **al** —,  
 disclosed.  
**descubrir**, to discover.  
**descuidado**, -a (*adj. pp. of des-*  
*cuidar*), unprepared, unaware,  
 napping.  
**descuidar**, to neglect.  
**desde**, *prep.*, from, since, after, as  
 soon as; — **luego**, *adv.*, there-  
 upon, at once; — **que**, *conj.*,  
 since.  
**desdecir**, to gainsay.  
**desdicha**, *f.*, misfortune, unhap-  
 piness.  
**desdoblar**, to unfold.  
**desear**, to desire, wish, like.  
**desechar**, to exclude, lay aside.  
**desembuchar**, to unbosom.  
**desempeñar**, to perform.  
**desencajado**, -a, out of joint.  
**desengañarse**, to be undeceived.  
**deseo**, *m.*, desire, wish.  
**desesperado**, -a (*adj. pp. of des-*  
*esperar*), desperate.  
**desfallecido**, -a (*adj. pp. of des-*  
*fallecer*), fainting.  
**desgarrar**, to tear, rend.  
**desgracia**, *f.*, misfortune, adver-  
 sity.  
**desgraciado**, -a, unfortunate.  
**deshacerse**, to break up; — **de**,  
 to remove, rid one's self of.  
**deshelar**, to thaw.  
**deshojarse**, to drop (their) leaves.  
**deshonor**, *m.*, dishonor.  
**desierto**, -a, deserted; *subst. m.*,  
 desert.  
**desigual**, *adj.*, uneven, unequal.  
**desigualdad**, *f.*, inequality.  
**deslizarse**, to glide along.  
**desmarrirse**, to grow sad.  
**desmayo**, *m.*, fainting fit, swoon.  
**desnudarse**, to undress.  
**desnudo**, -a, naked, bare.  
**desocupado**, -a (*adj. pp. of des-*  
*ocupar*), unoccupied, free.  
**desolación**, *f.*, desolation.  
**desorden**, *m.*, disorder.  
**desosar**, to bone.  
**desovar**, to spawn.  
**despacio**, *adv.*, slow, slowly.  
**despachar**, to dismiss, despatch,  
 send off, finish.  
**despacho**, *m.*, office.  
**desparpajo**, *m.*, easiness, ease (*of*  
*speech*).  
**despavorir**, to become frightened.  
**despedazar**, to dismantle.  
**despedida**, *f.*, farewell, leave-tak-  
 ing.  
**despedir**, to give forth, cast, dis-  
 miss; — **se**, to take leave.  
**despegar**, not to be in keeping with.

**despejo**, *m.*, clearing (*of the arena*), removal (*of obstacles*).

**despertar**, to awaken.

**desplacer**, to displease.

**desplegar**, to unfold, open.

**despojar** (*de*), to take off.

**despojo**, *m.*, plunder, spoils.

**desprecio**, *m.*, contempt, scorn.

**desprender**, to tear away, loosen.

**después**, *adv.*, then, afterwards, since; — *de*, *prep.*, after, since; — (*de*) *que*, *conj.*, after.

**destacar**, to detach, bring out; — *se*, to stand out, come forth, rise.

**desterrar**, to exile.

**destinación**, *f.*, destination.

**destinar**, to destine.

**destino**, *m.*, destination.

**desván**, *m.*, garret.

**detalle**, *m.*, detail.

**detener**, to stop, arrest, keep, detain; — *se*, to stop.

**determinación**, *f.*, determination.

**determinado**, — *a* (*adj. pp. of determinar*), definite, determined.

**determinar**, to determine.

**detrás**, *adv.*, behind, after; — (*de*), *prep.*, behind, after.

**deuda**, *f.*, debt.

**Deva**, Deva (*a bathing resort with a small harbor on the Bay of Biscay, to the west of San Sebastián and north of Azpeitia*).

**devoción**, *f.*, devotion.

**devolver**, to give back, return.

**devorar**, to devour.

**día**, *m.*, day; *de* —, *adv.*, in the daytime; **el Día de Difuntos**, All Souls' Day; **el Día de los Reyes**, Epiphany (Jan. 6); **el Día de Todos los Santos**, All Saints' Day; **plato del** —, special dish; **¡buenos —s!** good morning! good day!

**diablo**, *m.*, devil, demon; **¡qué —!** what the deuce!

**diamante**, *m.*, diamond.

**¡diantre!** *int.*, the deuce!

**diario**, — *a*, daily, per day; *de* —, *adv.*, daily.

**dicha**, *f.*, happiness, felicity, fortune, good luck.

**dicho**, — *a* (*adj. pp. of decir*), said, aforesaid.

**dichoso**, — *a*, happy, fortunate.

**diciembre**, *m.*, December.

**dictar**, to dictate.

**dicterio**, *m.*, insult.

**Diego**, *m.*, James.

**diente**, *m.*, tooth.

**diez**, *adj.*, ten, tenth; — **y nueve**, *adj.*, nineteen, nineteenth; —

**y ocho**, *adj.*, eighteen, eighteenth; — **y seis**, *adj.*, sixteen, sixteenth; — **y siete**, *adj.*, seventeen, seventeenth.

**diferencia**, *f.*, difference.

**diferente**, *adj.*, different.

**diferir**, to defer, delay.

**difícil**, *adj.*, difficult, hard.

**dificultad**, *f.*, difficulty.

**difundir**, to diffuse, extend.

**difunto**, — *a*, dead, defunct, late;

**Día de Difuntos**, All Souls' Day.

**¡diga!** *int.*, say!

**digerir**, to digest.

**dignamente**, *adv.*, worthily.

**dignarse**, to deign, condescend, be so kind as.

**digno**, — *a*, worthy.

**diluviar**, to rain hard, pour.

**diminutivo**, *m.*, diminutive.

**dinero**, *m.*, money.

**Dios**, *m.*, God; **¡—!** *int.*, heavens! goodness! gracious!; **¡— mío!** *int.*, dear me!; **¡por —!** *int.*, for Heaven's sake!; **¡válgame —!** or **¡— me valga!** *int.*, bless me! bless my soul! God help me!

**diploma**, *m.*, diploma.

**diplomático**, *m.*, diplomat, diplomatist.

**diptongo**, *m.*, diphthong.

**dirección**, *f.*, direction, management.

**directamente**, *adv.*, directly.

**directo**, — *a*, direct.

**director**, *m.*, director, manager.

**dirigir**, to direct, lead, aim; — **se** (*a*), to be directed (to), to direct one's self (to), turn, go, address.

**disciplinado**, — *a*, disciplined.

**discípulo**, *m.*, student, disciple.

- discreto**, -a, discreet, prudent, eloquent.  
**discurrir**, to discourse.  
**discurso**, *m.*, speech, address, space of time.  
**discutir**, to discuss.  
**disfrazar**, to disguise.  
**disfrutar**, to enjoy, possess.  
**disimular**, to conceal, hide.  
**disolver**, to dissolve, separate.  
**dispensar**, to excuse.  
**displacer**, to displease.  
**disponer**, to dispose.  
**dispuesto**, -a (*adj. pp. of disponer*), ready.  
**disputa**, *f.*, dispute.  
**distancia**, *f.*, distance.  
**distante**, *adj.*, distant.  
**distinguido**, -a (*adj. pp. of distinguir*), distinguished.  
**distinguir**, to distinguish, descry, favor.  
**distinto**, -a, distinct, separate.  
**distraer**, to distract, amuse.  
**diversión**, *f.*, amusement, diversion.  
**diverso**, -a, diverse, different, various.  
**divertido**, -a (*adj. pp. of divertir*), amusing, entertaining, entertained, amused.  
**divertir**, to divert, amuse, entertain; —se, to have a good time.  
**dividir**, to divide.  
**divinamente**, *adv.*, divinely.  
**divinizar**, to deify, glorify.  
**divino**, -a, divine.  
**divisar**, to perceive, discern.  
**división**, *f.*, division, part.  
**divulgar**, to divulge.  
**doblar**, to bend, give way, double, turn.  
**doble**, *adj.*, double, twofold.  
**doce**, *adj.*, twelve, twelfth.  
**docena**, *f.*, dozen, group of twelve.  
**doctor**, *m.*, doctor.  
**doctrina**, *f.*, doctrine.  
**doler**, to ache, (feel) pain.  
**Dolfos, Bellido**, *m.*, Bellido Dolfos (*the knight who treacherously slew King Sancho of Castile, in 1072*).  
**dolor**, *m.*, pain, grief; — **de cabeza**, headache.  
**dolora**, *f.*, dolora (*a kind of brief poetic composition invented by Campoamor*).  
**doloroso**, -a, painful.  
**dominar**, to conquer, overcome, master.  
**domingo**, *m.*, Sunday.  
**dominó**, *m.*, domino, game of dominoes.  
**don**, *m.*, Don (*a term of address applied to a gentleman, used only before Christian names*).  
**donaire**, *m.*, grace, elegance, witty saying.  
**donde**, *adv.*, where.  
**¿dónde?** *adv.*, where?  
**Don Quijote**, Don Quixote (*a Spanish romance by Cervantes. Printed at Madrid in two parts, the first in 1605, the second in 1615. Don Quixote is the hero of the romance*).  
**doña**, *f.*, Doña, lady (*a term of address applied to a lady, used only before Christian names*).  
**dorar**, to gild, yellow.  
**dormido**, -a (*adj. pp. of dormir*), asleep, sleeping.  
**dormir**, to sleep; — **la siesta**, to take the afternoon nap; **gorro de —**, nightcap; —se, to fall asleep.  
**dos**, *adj.*, two, second.  
**drama**, *m.*, drama, play.  
**dramático**, -a, dramatical, dramatic.  
**ducentésimo**, -a, two hundredth.  
**duda**, *f.*, doubt.  
**dudar**, to doubt; **a no —lo**, without doubt, certainly.  
**dudoso**, -a, doubtful, dubious, hazardous.  
**dueña**, *f.*, mistress, owner.  
**dueño**, *m.*, owner, master.  
**dulce**, *adj.*, sweet, gentle, pleasant; *subst. m.*, sweetmeat, candy.  
**Dulcinea**, *f.*, Dulcinea (*the lady loved by Don Quixote*).  
**dulzura**, *f.*, sweetness, gentleness.  
**duodécimo**, -a, twelfth.

**duplicado**, -a, double, twofold, duplicate.

**durante**, *prep.*, during.

**durar**, to last.

**duro**, *m.*, dollar (*a Spanish silver five-peseta piece*).

## E

**e**, *conj.*, and (*used before i or hi [not hie]*).

**¡ea!** *int.* (*expressing encouragement or impatience*), come!

**ebrio**, -a, intoxicated, inebriated.

**eco**, *m.*, echo; **el — del Comercio**, the Echo of Commerce (*a daily paper of Madrid*).

**económico**, -a, economical.

**Ecuador**, *m.*, Ecuador.

**echar**, to cast, throw, put out, dance; — **al mundo**, to create, bring forth into the world; — **flores**, to pay compliments, make remarks; — **de menos**, to miss; — **se a**, to begin; **echado que hubo pie a tierra**, when he had dismounted.

**Echegaray**, José, Joseph Echegaray ([1832—] *a Spanish mathematician, engineer, statesman, and dramatist, the foremost representative of the modern Spanish drama*).

**edad**, *f.*, age; **Edad Media**, *f.*, Middle Ages.

**edecán**, *m.*, aide-de-camp, adjutant.

**edificio**, *m.*, building, edifice.

**educación**, *f.*, education.

**efectivamente**, *adv.*, actually, in fact.

**efecto**, *m.*, effect; **en** —, in fact.

**ejecutar**, to execute.

**ejemplo**, *m.*, example.

**ejercicio**, *m.*, exercise.

**ejército**, *m.*, army.

**el**, *def. art.*, *m.*, the.

**él**, *pers. pron.*, *m.*, he, it, him.

**elástico**, -a, elastic, flexible.

**el (la or lo) cual**, **los (or las) cuales**, *rel. pron.*, who, which.

**el (la, lo, los, las) que**, *rel. pron.*, who, whom, which.

**electricista**, *adj.*, electrical (*as a title*, e.g. 'electrical engineer').

**elegante**, *adj.*, elegant.

**elegir**, to choose, select, elect.

**eleva**r, to elevate, erect.

**Elías**, *m.*, Elias.

**ella**, *pers. pron.*, *f.*, she, it, her.

**ellas**, *pers. pron.*, *f. pl.*, they, them.

**ellos**, *pers. pron.*, *m. pl.*, they, them.

**embair**, to impose upon.

**embarcarse**, to embark, go on board.

**embargar**, to overcome (*by emotion*).

**embargo** (*see sin embargo*).

**embelesar**, to charm, fascinate.

**embestir**, to assail, attack.

**Emilia**, *f.*, Emily.

**Emilio**, *m.*, Æmilius.

**eminencia**, *f.*, eminence.

**eminente**, *adj.*, eminent.

**emisario**, *m.*, emissary.

**emoción**, *f.*, emotion, excitement.

**empapar**, to soak.

**empedernir**, to harden.

**empeñado**, -a (*adj. pp. of empeñar*), pawned, insistent, obstinate.

**empeñar**, to pawn; — **se**, to insist upon, take into one's head.

**empeño**, *m.*, engagement, obligation.

**emperador**, *m.*, emperor.

**empezar**, to begin, commence.

**emplear**, to employ, use, make use of.

**empleo**, *m.*, employment, position.

**emprender**, to undertake, begin.

**empresa**, *f.*, undertaking.

**emprestar**, to lend, loan.

**empujón**, *m.*, push, shove.

**en**, *prep.*, in, into, on, upon, at, like, of; — **brazos**, in (one's) arms; — **cambio**, on the other hand; — **cruz**, like a cross, in the form of a cross; — **cuanto**, *conj.*, when, as far as.

**enamorado**, -a, in love.

**enamorar**, to excite (*or inspire*) love.

- enarbolar**, to raise, lift.  
**encaje**, *m.*, lace.  
**encaminarse**, to proceed, go.  
**encantador**, *adj.*, charming, enchanting.  
**encanto**, *m.*, charm.  
**encargar**, to charge with, commit, give; —**se (de)**, to take charge (of), undertake (to).  
**encargo**, *m.*, charge, order; **de —**, *adv.*, on purpose, to order.  
**encarnado**, —**a** (*adj. pp. of encarnar*), red.  
**encender**, to kindle, fire.  
**encerado**, *m.*, blackboard (*a sheet of blackened cloth or boards*); **cepillo de —**, eraser.  
**encerrar**, to lock up, confine, shut up.  
**encierro**, *m.*, prison, place of confinement.  
**encima de**, *prep.*, over, on, above.  
**encina**, *f.*, oak-tree.  
**encomendar**, to commend, commit.  
**encontrar**, to meet, find; —**se**, to be.  
**endemoniado**, —**a**, devilish, fiendish.  
**enemiga**, *f.*, enemy.  
**enemigo**, *m.*, enemy; —, —**a**, *adj.*, hostile, inimical.  
**energía**, *f.*, energy.  
**enérgicamente**, *adv.*, energetically.  
**enérgico**, —**a**, energetic.  
**enero**, *m.*, January.  
**enfermedad**, *f.*, illness, sickness.  
**enfermero**, *m.*, nurse.  
**enfermo**, —**a**, ill, sick.  
**enflaquecer**, to weaken, make thin.  
**engalanar**, to adorn, deck.  
**engaño**, *m.*, falsehood, deceit.  
**enjalbogar**, to whitewash.  
**enjugar**, to dry, wipe.  
**enlace**, *m.*, marriage, wedding, union.  
**enmarañar**, to entangle.  
**enmendar**, to correct, repair.  
**ennegrecido**, —**a** (*adj. pp. of ennegrecer*), blackened.  
**enojarse**, to get angry.  
**enojo**, *m.*, vexation.  
**enorme**, *adj.*, enormous.  
**Enrique**, *m.*, Henry.  
**enriquecer**, to grow rich.  
**ensalada**, *f.*, salad.  
**ensartar**, to string, thread, link.  
**ensayar**, to try, try on.  
**enseñar**, to teach, show.  
**en tanto que**, *conj.*, while, in case that.  
**entender**, to understand, hear.  
**enterar**, to inform, acquaint.  
**entero**, —**a**, entire, whole, all.  
**enterrar**, to bury.  
**entonces**, *adv.*, then; **en aquel —**, *adv.*, at that time.  
**entrada**, *f.*, entrance.  
**entrambos**, —**as**, *adj. and pron.*, both.  
**entrañas**, *f. pl.*, entrails, heart; **de sus —**, darling.  
**enter**, to enter, go in.  
**entre**, *prep.*, between, among; **por —**, *prep.*, through, among; — **sí**, to himself, herself, etc.; — **tanto**, *adv.*, meanwhile; — **tanto que**, *conj.*, while.  
**entreabrir**, to half open, part.  
**entregar**, to hand over, deliver.  
**entresuelo**, *m.*, entresol.  
**entretener**, to amuse, entertain.  
**entretenimiento**, *m.*, amusement, entertainment.  
**entrever**, to have a glimpse of.  
**entristecer**, to make sad.  
**entusiasmado**, —**a**, enthusiastic.  
**entusiasmo**, *m.*, enthusiasm.  
**envejecer**, to age.  
**enviar**, to send.  
**envidioso**, —**a**, envious.  
**enviudar**, to become a widower (*or widow*).  
**envolver**, to wrap, surround.  
**enzarzar**, to involve.  
**Epifanía**, *f.*, Epiphany (*Jan. 6*).  
**epistolar**, *adj.*, epistolary.  
**época**, *f.*, epoch.  
**epopeya**, *f.*, epic.  
**equivaler**, to equal.  
**equivocarse**, to be mistaken.  
**erguir**, to erect, lift up; —**se**, to rise, straighten up.

- erizar**, to bristle.  
**errar**, to err, wander.  
**esbirro**, *m.*, policeman, constable.  
**escalar**, to scale.  
**escalera**, *f.*, staircase.  
**escampar**, to clear up, stop raining.  
**escandaloso**, *-a*, scandalous.  
**escapar**, to escape.  
**escape**, *m.*, flight; **a todo** —, with utmost haste.  
**escarchar**, to freeze, frost.  
**escaso**, *-a*, small, scant, rare, restricted; **andar** —, to be sparing.  
**escena**, *f.*, scene.  
**escoger**, to choose, select.  
**escolar**, *adj.*, scholastic, school; **año** —, school year; **curso** —, course of studies.  
**esconder**, to hide, conceal.  
**escopeta**, *f.*, musket, gun; — **de dos cañones**, double-barreled gun.  
**escribir**, to write.  
**escrito**, *m.*, writing, work.  
**escritor**, *m.*, writer, author.  
**escuchar**, to listen.  
**escudero**, *m.*, squire, page.  
**escudo**, *m.*, shield, coat of arms.  
**escuela**, *f.*, school.  
**ese, esa**, *dem. adj.*, that.  
**ése, ésa, eso, dem. pron.**, that.  
**esencia**, *f.*, essence; **ser de** —, to be absolutely necessary.  
**esencial**, *adj.*, essential, necessary.  
**esfera**, *f.*, face (*of watch or clock*).  
**esforzarse**, to exert one's self, strive.  
**esfuerzo**, *m.*, effort.  
**esmaltar**, to enamel, adorn, embellish.  
**esmero**, *m.*, care.  
**espacio**, *m.*, space.  
**espada**, *f.*, sword.  
**espada**, *m.*, matador (*he who slays the bull by a sword-thrust downward between the shoulders*).  
**espalda**, *f.*, back; **de** —s, *adv.*, backwards; **ir de** —s, to go (*or ride*) backwards; **de** —s, backwards, on one's back.  
**espantar**, to frighten, terrify.  
**espanto**, *m.*, terror, fright.  
**espantoso**, *-a*, frightful, terrible.  
**España**, *f.*, Spain.  
**español**, *-a*, Spanish.  
**esparaván**, *m.*, bone-spavin.  
**esparcido**, *-a* (*adj. pp. of esparcir*), scattered, merry, festive, gay.  
**esparcir**, to scatter.  
**especie**, *f.*, species.  
**espectáculo**, *m.*, spectacle, sight, play.  
**espectador**, *m.*, spectator.  
**espejo**, *m.*, mirror.  
**espera**, *f.*, expectation; **en** —, hoping.  
**esperanza**, *f.*, hope.  
**esperar**, to wait, wait for, hope, expect.  
**espesarse**, to thicken.  
**espesor**, *m.*, thickness, depth.  
**espirar**, to expire, die.  
**esplendente**, *adj.*, resplendent, glittering.  
**esplendor**, *m.*, splendor.  
**esposa**, *f.*, wife.  
**esposo**, *m.*, husband.  
**espuela**, *f.*, spur; **dar de** —s, to put the spurs to, spur.  
**esquela**, *f.*, billet, note, announcement.  
**esqueleto**, *m.*, skeleton, framework.  
**esquilador**, *m.*, sheep-shearer.  
**esquina**, *f.*, corner.  
**establecer**, to establish.  
**estación**, *f.*, season, station.  
**estado**, *m.*, state, condition.  
**Estados Unidos**, *m. pl.*, United States (*abbreviation EE.UU.*).  
**estallido**, *m.*, outburst.  
**estancia**, *f.*, stay.  
**estar**, to be, stand.  
**estatua**, *f.*, statue.  
**estatura**, *f.*, stature.  
**este**, *m.*, east.  
**este, esta**, *dem. adj.*, this, this one.  
**éste, ésta, esto**, *dem. pron.*, this, this one.  
**Estella**, Estella (*a town in the province of Navarre, northern Spain, situated on the Ega, 28*

- miles southwest of Pamplona.*  
*In 1833-1839 it was the stronghold of the Carlists).*
- estéril, *adj.*, sterile, desert.  
 estilo, *m.*, style, sort; *por el* —, of the same sort (*or* style).  
 estimable, *adj.*, estimable.  
 estimar, to esteem.  
 estío, *m.*, summer.  
 estómago, *m.*, stomach.  
 estrechar, to clasp, grasp.  
 estrecho, *-a*, narrow.  
 estrella, *f.*, star.  
 estremecerse, to shake, tremble.  
 estremecimiento, *m.*, tremor, excitement.  
 estrenar, to bring out, stage.  
 estrépito, *m.*, racket.  
 estrepitoso, *-a*, noisy, loud.  
 estruendo, *m.*, noise, clamor.  
 estrujar, to squeeze, press.  
 estudiante, *m. and f.*, student.  
 estudiar, to study.  
 estudio, *m.*, study.  
 estupefacto, *-a*, stupefied.  
 estúpido, *-a*, stupid.  
 etcétera, *f.* (*abbreviations etc.*, &.), et cetera, and so forth.  
 eterno, *-a*, eternal.  
 Eugenio, *m.*, Eugene.  
 Europa, *f.*, Europe.  
 europeo, *-a*, European.  
 evadir, to evade.  
 Evangelios, *m. pl.*, Gospels.  
 evitar, to avoid.  
 exactamente, *adv.*, exactly.  
 exaltar, to exalt, elevate.  
 examen, *m.*, examination.  
 examinar, to examine.  
 excedente; — *por reforma*, laid off (*from work*).  
 excelencia, *f.*, excellency.  
 excelente, *adj.*, excellent.  
 excelentísimo, *-a*, most excellent, honorable.  
 excepción, *f.*, exception.  
 excepto, *prep.*, except; — *que*, *conj.*, except that.  
 excesivo, *-a*, excessive.  
 exceso, *m.*, excess.  
 excitar, to excite, arouse.  
 exclamación, *f.*, exclamation.  
 exclamar, to exclaim.  
 excmo. (*abbreviation for excelentísimo*), (his) excellency.  
 excomulgar, to excommunicate.  
 excursión, *f.*, excursion.  
 excusa, *f.*, excuse, regret.  
 excusar, to excuse; excuso, it is needless.  
 exhalar, to exhale.  
 exhausto, *-a*, exhausted, drained dry.  
 existencia, *f.*, existence.  
 existir, to exist.  
 éxito, *m.*, success, outcome.  
 expansión, *f.*, expansion, outburst.  
 experimentar, to experience.  
 expirar, to expire, die, die out.  
 explicar, to explain, describe.  
 expresión, *f.*, expression.  
 expresivo, *-a*, expressive.  
 exquisito, *-a*, exquisite, delicious.  
 extender, to extend, stretch forth, display.  
 extensión, *f.*, extent.  
 extenso, *-a* (*adj. pp. of extender*), extended.  
 exterior, *adj.*, outer, exterior.  
 exterminar, to exterminate.  
 extraer, to extract.  
 extranjero, *m.*, foreigner, stranger; *adj.*, foreign.  
 extrañar, to surprise, wonder at.  
 extraño, *-a*, strange, foreign.  
 extraordinario, *-a*, extraordinary.  
 extravagante, *adj.*, wild, peculiar.  
 extraviado, *-a* (*adj. pp. of extraviar*), astray, wild.  
 extremidad, *f.*, extremity.  
 extremo, *m.*, extreme.

## F

- fábrica, *f.*, manufactory, structure, edifice.  
 fabricación, *f.*, fabrication, manufacture, manufacturing.  
 fabricar, to manufacture.  
 fábula, *f.*, fable.  
 fácil, *adj.*, easy.  
 facilitar, to provide (*or* supply) with.  
 facturar, to check (*of baggage*).



- facultad**, *f.*, faculty.  
**fachada**, *f.*, façade.  
**faena**, *f.*, task, duty.  
**faja**, *f.*, band, belt, border.  
**falda**, *f.*, skirt, lap.  
**falta**, *f.*, lack, fault.  
**faltar**, to fail, lack.  
**fallecer**, to die.  
**fama**, *f.*, fame, reputation.  
**familia**, *f.*, family; **hijo de** —, son of noble parents.  
**famoso**, *-a*, famous.  
**fantástico**, *-a*, fantastic.  
**farol**, *m.*, street-lamp.  
**fastidio**, *m.*, weariness, ennui.  
**fatal**, *adj.*, fatal.  
**fatigoso**, *-a*, wearisome, painful.  
**fauces**, *f. pl.*, jaws, gullet.  
**favor**, *m.*, favor; **haga el** — **de**, please be so kind as to.  
**favorable**, *adj.*, favorable.  
**favorecer**, to favor.  
**Favorita**, (La), 'The Favorite' (*title of an opera by Donizetti, 1840*).  
**favorito**, *-a*, favorite.  
**fe**, *f.*, faith, religion, word.  
**febrero**, *m.*, February.  
**fecha**, *f.*, date.  
**fechoría**, *f.*, misdeed, crime.  
**felicidad**, *f.*, happiness, joy.  
**felicitación**, *f.*, congratulation.  
**Felipe**, *m.*, Philip.  
**Felipe III**, Philip III ([1578-1621]. *King of Spain, son of Philip II and Anne of Austria. He reigned from 1598 to 1621*).  
**Felipe IV**, Philip IV ([1605-1665]. *King of Spain, son of Philip III. He reigned from 1621 to 1665*).  
**feliz**, *adj.*, happy.  
**femenil**, *adj.*, feminine.  
**femenino**, *-a*, feminine.  
**feo**, *-a*, ugly, hideous; **más** — **que** **Picio**, uglier than sin (*a proverbial expression*).  
**feria**, *f.*, fair.  
**Fernán**, *m.*, Ferdinand.  
**Fernando**, *m.*, Ferdinand.  
**ferrocarril**, *m.*, railroad, railway.  
**fiar**, to trust.  
**ficción**, *f.*, fiction, invention, fable.  
**fideos**, *m. pl.*, vermicelli.  
**fiebre**, *f.*, fever.  
**fiel**, *m.*, faithful, believer.  
**fiera**, *f.*, beast, wild beast.  
**fiesta**, *f.*, festival, fête, entertainment, holiday.  
**figura**, *f.*, figure.  
**figurarse**, to imagine.  
**fijar**, to fix, notice, observe.  
**fijo**, *-a* (*adj. pp. of fijar*), fixed.  
**fila**, *f.*, row.  
**filiación**, *f.*, (personal) description.  
**fin**, *m.*, end, object; **dar** —, to end, conclude; **al** —, *adv.*, at last; **al** — **y al cabo**, *adv.*, at last; **a** — **es de**, *prep.*, about the end of; **en** —, *adv.*, in short, at last; **a** — **de**, *prep.*, for the sake of; **a** — **de que**, *conj.*, in order that.  
**final**, *adj.*, final, last.  
**finura**, *f.*, fineness, courtesy.  
**¡firme!** *int.*, steady!  
**fiscal**, *m.*, attorney-general, prosecuting (or district) attorney.  
**física**, *f.*, physics.  
**fisonomía**, *f.*, face.  
**flaco**, *-a*, thin, lean.  
**flor**, *f.*, flower.  
**florete**, *m.*, fencing foil.  
**fonda**, *f.*, inn, hotel, restaurant.  
**fondo**, *m.*, bottom, depth(s); **a** —, *adv.*, thoroughly; **en el** —, at heart.  
**fonético**, *-a*, phonetic.  
**forastero**, *m.*, foreigner, stranger.  
**forma**, *f.*, form, model; **Sagrada Forma**, (la), the Host.  
**formación**, *f.*, formation; **¡a la** —! fall in!  
**formalmente**, *adv.*, clearly, positively.  
**formar**, to form; — **parte**, to form part.  
**formidable**, *adj.*, formidable.  
**fortuna**, *f.*, fortune.  
**forzar**, to force, constrain.  
**forzoso**, *-a*, necessary, obligatory.  
**fósforo**, *m.*, match.  
**frac**, *m.*, dress-coat.  
**fracción**, *f.*, fraction.  
**fragante**, *adj.*, fragrant.  
**fragmento**, *m.*, fragment.

**francés**, *m.*, French, Frenchman.  
**Francia**, *f.*, France.  
**Francisco**, *m.*, Francis.  
**frase**, *f.*, phrase, sentence.  
**Frasquita**, *f.*, Fannie.  
**Fray**, *m.* (*contr. of fraile, used as an appellation*), Brother.  
**frecuencia**, frequency, frequency;  
*con* —, *adv.*, often.  
**fregar**, to rub, scour.  
**freír**, to fry.  
**frenesí**, *m.*, frenzy, madness.  
**frenético**, *-a*, frantic, frenzied.  
**frente**, *f.*, forehead, brow; *m. or f.*, front; — *a, prep.*, opposite, in front of; *en* — *de, prep.*, opposite, in front of.  
**fresco**, *-a*, cool; **hacer** —, to be cool (*of the weather*).  
**frescura**, *f.*, freshness, coolness, self-possession.  
**fríamente**, *adv.*, coldly.  
**frío**, *-a*, cold; *subst. m.*, cold; **hacer** —, to be cold (*of the weather*); **tener** —, to be cold (*of beings*).  
**frito**, *-a* (*adj. pp. of freír*), fried.  
**frondosidad**, *f.*, foliage.  
**frondoso**, *-a*, leafy, luxuriant.  
**frontispicio**, *m.*, front, frontispiece.  
**frontón**, *m.*, wall (*of a pelota court*), *pelota court*.  
**frotar**, to rub.  
**fruta**, *f.*, fruit.  
**fuego**, *m.*, fire; ¡—! *int.*, fire!  
**fuelle**, *f.*, fountain.  
**Fuenterrabía**, Fontarabia (*a small town of some 4400 inhabitants in the province of Guipuzcoa, northern Spain*).  
**fuera**, *adv.*, outside, without; — *de, prep.*, out of, outside, without, away from.  
**fuerte**, *adj.*, strong, severe, hard; *adv.*, strongly, loudly.  
**fuerza**, *f.*, force (*used also in the plural*); **a viva** —, by main force; **a** — *de*, by dint of.  
**fulgarse**, to escape.  
**fulano**, *-a, pron.*, such a one, so and so.

**fumador**, *m.*, smoker.  
**fumar**, to smoke.  
**función**, *f.*, function, performance.  
**fundación**, *f.*, foundation.  
**fundador**, *m.*, founder.  
**fundar**, to found.  
**funeral**, *m.*, funeral.  
**furia**, *f.*, fury.  
**furioso**, *-a*, furious.  
**futuro**, *-a*, future; **en lo** —, in (the) future; *subst. m.*, future, the future tense.

## G

**gabán**, *m.*, overcoat.  
**gabinete**, *m.*, cabinet, private room, study.  
**gaceta**, *f.*, (local) news column.  
**gacho**, *-a*, hanging, bent downwards.  
**gafas**, *f. pl.*, spectacles.  
**galería**, *f.*, gallery.  
**galerna**, *f.*, storm, stormy north-west wind (*that blows on hot summer days upon the northern coast of Spain*).  
**galgo**, *m.*, greyhound.  
**Galicia**, *f.*, Galicia (*an ancient province in northwestern Spain*).  
**galope**, *m.*, gallop, haste, speed.  
**gallardo**, *-a*, gallant, graceful, handsome.  
**Gallego**, *m.*, Galician.  
**gallina**, *f.*, hen, chicken.  
**gallo**, *m.*, cock, rooster; **Misa del Gallo**, Mass of the Cock, midnight mass on Christmas Eve; **riña de** —s, cock-fight.  
**gana**, *f.*, appetite, desire, inclination (*more commonly used in the plural*); **de buena** —, *adv.*, willingly, gladly; **de mala** —, *adv.*, unwillingly, reluctantly; **tener** —s, to be desirous, inclined.  
**ganancia**, *f.*, reward, gain, earning.  
**ganar**, to earn, win, gain.  
**garantir**, to guarantee.  
**garbanzo**, *m.*, garbanzo (*a kind of pea or pulse much esteemed in Spain*).

- garganta**, *f.*, throat.  
**garrapata**, *f.*, rabble.  
**gato**, *m.*, cat.  
**gazpacho**, *m.*, gazpacho, cold soup  
*(of water, oil, vinegar, vegetables,  
 etc.)*.  
**gemido**, *m.*, groan, moan.  
**gemir**, to groan.  
**general**, *adj.*, general; *subst. m.*,  
 general.  
**Generalife**, (*El*), The Generalife  
*(the celebrated summer residence  
 of the Moorish princes at Gra-  
 nada)*.  
**generalmente**, *adv.*, generally,  
 usually.  
**género**, *m.*, gender, class, kind,  
 branch.  
**generoso**, *-a*, generous.  
**gente**, *f.*, people; — **de tierra**,  
 landmen.  
**gentío**, *m.*, crowd, multitude.  
**geografía**, *f.*, geography.  
**Gerardo**, *m.*, Gerard.  
**gerundio**, *m.*, present participle,  
 gerund.  
**gesticular**, to gesticulate.  
**gestión**, *f.*, effort, step.  
**gesto**, *m.*, gesture, face.  
**gigante**, *m.*, giant.  
**gimnasia**, *f.*, gymnastics.  
**gitana**, *f.*, gipsy.  
**gitano**, *m.*, gipsy.  
**gloria**, *f.*, glory, fame.  
**gloriarse**, to praise (*or* glorify)  
 one's self.  
**glorificar**, to glorify, praise.  
**gobernar**, to govern.  
**golondrina**, *f.*, swallow.  
**golpe**, *m.*, blow.  
**golpear**, to beat, strike.  
**gordo**, *-a*, fat, big, great.  
**gorra**, *f.*, cap.  
**Gorriya**, (*la*), *f.*, 'Reddie' (*name  
 of a cow*).  
**gorro**, *m.*, cap; — **de dormir**, night-  
 cap.  
**gota**, *f.*, drop.  
**gozar** (*de*), to enjoy.  
**gozo**, *m.*, joy, pleasure, enjoyment.  
**gracia**, *f.*, grace, pleasing manners,  
 cleverness, witticism.  
**gracias**, *f.*, *pl.* thanks.  
**gracioso**, *-a*, funny, witty.  
**graduar(se)**, to graduate.  
**gramática**, *f.*, grammar.  
**gran** (*see grande*).  
**Granada**, Granada (*a city of about  
 77,000 inhabitants, capital of the  
 province of Granada, southern  
 Spain*).  
**granadino**, *-a*, of Granada.  
**grande**, *adj.*, large, great.  
**grandioso**, *-a*, magnificent, splen-  
 did.  
**granizar**, to hail.  
**grato**, *-a*, pleasing, pleasant.  
**grave**, *adj.*, heavy, grave, solemn.  
**griego**, *m.*, Greek.  
**gris**, *adj.*, gray.  
**gritar**, to shout, call, cry out.  
**grito**, *m.*, cry, shout.  
**grosero**, *-a*, coarse, indelicate,  
 gross.  
**grotesco**, *-a*, grotesque.  
**gruñido**, *m.*, growl.  
**grupa**, *f.*, croup, crupper (*of a  
 horse*).  
**grupo**, *m.*, group.  
**Guadalquivir**, (*El*), The Guadal-  
 quivir (*a river in southern Spain*).  
**Guadarrama**, *f.*, Guadarrama (*a  
 mountain chain in central Spain*).  
**guante**, *m.*, glove.  
**guapo**, *-a*, handsome, good-looking.  
**guardar**, to preserve, keep (*in*),  
 remain (*in*); — **se (de)**, to keep  
 from, take care not to.  
**guardia**, *m.*, guard, patrolman;  
 — **del Ayuntamiento**, municipal  
 policeman.  
**guardián**, *m.*, guardian, keeper.  
**guarecerse**, to take refuge.  
**guarida**, *f.*, hiding-place.  
**guasa**, *f.*, jest; **poca** —, this is  
 no jest.  
**guerra**, *f.*, war.  
**Guerrero**, **María**, **María Guerrero**  
*(a celebrated Spanish actress)*.  
**guiar**, to guide.  
**guisa**; **a** — **de**, like.  
**guitarra**, *f.*, guitar.  
**gustar** (*a*), to please, like, be fond  
 of.

**Gustavo**, *m.*, Gustavus.  
**gusto**, *m.*, taste, sense of taste, pleasure, enjoyment.

## H

**¡ha!** *int.* (*expressing delight, satisfaction*), ha! eh!

**ha** (*see haber*).

**há** (*see haber*).

**Habana**, Havana.

**haber**, to have; — **lodo**, to be muddy; — **luna**, to be moonlight; — **neblina**, to be foggy; — **polvo**, to be dusty; — **sol**, to be sunny; — **viento**, to be windy; — **menester**, to need; **há**, *impers. pres. ind. of haber*, ago; **hay**, *irr. impers. pres. ind. of haber*, there is, there are; **hé aquí**, behold.

**hábil**, *adj.*, clever, expert, skilful.

**habitación**, *f.*, room.

**habitar**, to live, inhabit, dwell.

**hablar**, to talk, speak; *subst. m.*, speech.

**hace** (*see hacer*).

**hacer**, to do, make, cause; — **buen tiempo**, to be good weather; — **calor**, to be warm (*of the weather*); — **fresco**, to be cool (*of the weather*); — **frío**, to be cold (*of the weather*); — **mal tiempo**, to be bad weather; — **sol**, to be sunny; — **(un) tiempo agradable**, to be pleasant; — **viento**, to be windy; — **buenas migas**, to agree well, get on well together; — **caso**, to pay attention; — **presa**, to set the teeth in; **mandar** —, to order, have made; — **se**, to become, act; — **se entender**, to make one's self understood; — **el favor de**, to please, do (one) the favor to, be so kind as to; **hace**, *impers. pres. ind. of hacer*, ago.

**hacia**, *prep.*, toward, towards; — **atrás**, *adv.*, backwards.

**hacienda**, *f.*, estate.

**halagar**, to flatter.

**hallar**, to find; — **se**, to find one's self (itself, etc.), be.

**hambre**, *f.*, hunger; **tener** —, to be hungry.

**hambriento**, *-a*, hungry.

**harapo**, *m.*, rag.

**haraposo**, *-a*, ragged.

**harto**, *adv.*, enough, quite, very.

**hasta**, *prep.*, until, up to, even; — **luego**, until by and by, so long (*fam.*), I'll see you later; — **mañana**, until to-morrow; — **la noche**, until to-night; — **la tarde**, until this afternoon; — **la vista**, until we meet again, au revoir; — **què**, *conj.*, until.

**Havre**, (El), Le Havre (*seaport in northern France*).

**hay** (*see haber*).

**hazaña**, *f.*, deed, exploit, feat.

**¡hé!** *int.* (*expressing surprise*), eh!; — **aquí**, here is, this is.

**hecho**, *-a* (*adj. pp. of hacer*), fully matured, developed, grown into, like; *subst. m.*, feat, exploit, deed.

**helar**, to freeze.

**henchir**, to fill, puff up.

**heredad**, *f.*, farm.

**herencia**, *f.*, inheritance.

**herida**, *f.*, wound.

**herido**, *m.*, wounded (person).

**herir**, to wound, strike.

**hermana**, *f.*, sister, sister of charity, nun.

**hermandad**, *f.*, brotherhood, fraternity.

**hermano**, *m.*, brother.

**hermoso**, *-a*, beautiful, handsome.

**hermosura**, *f.*, beauty.

**héroe**, *m.*, hero.

**heroico**, *-a*, heroic.

**herramienta**, *f.*, tool.

**herrero**, *m.*, smith, iron-worker.

**hervir**, to boil.

**hidalgo**, *m.*, gentleman, nobleman.

**hierba**, *f.*, grass.

**hierro**, *m.*, iron.

**hija**, *f.*, daughter.

**hijo**, *m.*, son, offspring; — **de familia**, son of noble parents.

**hilacha**, *f.*, thread (*raveled out of*

*cloth*); **con** —s, in threads, ragged.  
**hilo**, *m.*, thread, stream.  
**hispano-americano**, —a, Spanish-American.  
**historia**, *f.*, history, story.  
**histórico**, —a, historical.  
**hocico**, *m.*, muzzle, snout.  
**hoja**, *f.*, leaf.  
**¡hola!** (*written also ¡ola!*), *int.* (*expressing recognition*), hello! ho! ah! well!  
**holganza**, *f.*, idleness, ease, tranquillity.  
**holgar**, to rest.  
**hombre**, *m.*, man, fellow; **¡—!** *int.*, man alive!  
**hombro**, *m.*, shoulder.  
**homenaje**, *m.*, homage.  
**honor**, *m.*, honor.  
**honra**, *f.*, honor; **tener a —**, to have the honor.  
**honrado**, —a, respectable, honorable, honest.  
**hora**, *f.*, hour, time (*of day*); **estar en —**, to keep time (*of time-pieces*); **media — de camino**, half an hour's journey.  
**horario**, *m.*, hour-hand.  
**horizonte**, *m.*, horizon.  
**hormigueo**, *m.*, itching.  
**horrible**, *adj.*, horrible, horrid.  
**horror**, *m.*, horror.  
**hospital**, *m.*, hospital; **Hospital Provincial**, Provincial Insane Asylum.  
**hospitalario**, —a, hospitable.  
**hotel**, *m.*, hotel.  
**hoy**, *adv.*, to-day; — **día**, *adv.*, now-days.  
**hoyo**, *m.*, hole, grave.  
**huelga**, *f.*, strike (*of workmen*).  
**huérfano**, —a, orphaned, bereft; *subst.*, *m. or f.*, orphan.  
**huerta**, *f.*, orchard, garden, fruit-garden, kitchen-garden, irrigated land.  
**hueso**, *m.*, bone.  
**huésped**, *f.*, guest, host; **casa de —es**, boarding-house.  
**huesudo**, —a, bony.  
**huevo**, *m.*, egg.

**huir**, to flee, escape, shun.  
**humano**, —a, human, of people.  
**humedad**, *f.*, dampness.  
**humilde**, *adj.*, humble.  
**humillación**, *f.*, humiliation.  
**humor**, *m.*, humor; **de mal —**, in bad humor.  
**hundir**, to sink.  
**¡huy!** *int.* (*expressing pain*), ouch! ow!

## I

**ida**, *f.*; **billete de — y vuelta**, round-trip ticket.  
**idea**, *f.*, idea.  
**idioma**, *m.*, language.  
**iglesia**, *f.*, church.  
**Ignacio**, *m.*, Ignatius.  
**igual**, *adj.*, even, equal, similar.  
**igualdad**, *f.*, equality.  
**igualmente**, *adv.*, equally, likewise.  
**iluminar**, to light up, light.  
**ilusión**, *f.*, illusion.  
**ilustrísimo**, —a, Lordship (*an appellation of honor given to bishops and other persons of a certain dignity*).  
**imagen**, *f.*, image.  
**imaginación**, *f.*, imagination.  
**imaginarse**, to wonder.  
**imbécil**, *m.*, foolish person, fool.  
**imitar**, to imitate.  
**impaciencia**, *f.*, impatience.  
**imparcial**, *adj.*, impartial.  
**impedir**, to hinder, impede, prevent.  
**imperar**, to command, reign.  
**imperativo**, *m.*, imperative.  
**imperfecto**, —a, imperfect.  
**imperioso**, —a, imperious.  
**impersonalmente**, *adv.*, impersonally.  
**implacable**, *adj.*, implacable.  
**implorar**, to beg, implore.  
**imponente**, *adj.*, imposing.  
**imponer**, to impose, acquaint; —se, to learn, become acquainted.  
**importancia**, *f.*, importance.  
**importante**, *adj.*, important.  
**importar**, to matter, be important.  
**imposible**, *adj.*, impossible.  
**impresión**, *f.*, impression.

- impreso**, -a, printed; *subst.*, *m. pl.*,  
 -s, printed matter.  
**imprimir**, to print.  
**impropio**, -a, improper.  
**improviso**; **de** —, suddenly.  
**impulso**, *m.*, impulse; **a** — **de**,  
 impelled by.  
**inadvertidamente**, *adv.*, inadvertently,  
 unnoticed.  
**incapaz**, *adj.*, incapable.  
**incesante**, *adj.*, incessant.  
**incitar**, to incite, urge.  
**inclinarse**, to bend, lean, incline,  
 drop.  
**incómodo**, -a, uncomfortable, in-  
 convenient.  
**inconcebible**, *adj.*, inconceivable.  
**incorporarse**, to sit up, straighten  
 up, rise.  
**inculto**, -a, uncultivated.  
**indefinidamente**, *adv.*, indefinitely.  
**independencia**, *f.*, independence.  
**independiente**, *adj.*, independent.  
**indeterminado**, -a, indefinite.  
**Indias occidentales**, *f.*, West In-  
 dies.  
**indicación**, *f.*, description, in-  
 formation.  
**indicar**, to designate, indicate,  
 mark, inform of, tell of.  
**indicativo**, *m.*, indicative.  
**indiferencia**, *f.*, indifference.  
**indiferente**, *adj.*, indifferent.  
**indignado**, -a (*adj. pp. of indignar*),  
 indignant, irritated.  
**indisposición**, *f.*, indisposition.  
**indispuesto**, -a (*adj. pp. of indis-*  
*poner*), indisposed.  
**individuo**, *m.*, individual, man,  
 person.  
**inducir**, to induce.  
**industria**, *f.*, industry.  
**industrial**, *adj.*, industrial.  
**inescrutable**, *adj.*, inscrutable.  
**infalibilidad**, *f.*, infallibility.  
**infame**, *m.*, infamous (person).  
**infeliz**, *adj.*, unhappy, unfortu-  
 nate; *subst. m.*, unhappy (per-  
 son), poor wretch.  
**inferior**, *adj.*, inferior, lower.  
**inferioridad**, *f.*, inferiority.  
**inferir**, to infer, deduce.  
**infernál**, *adj.*, infernal.  
**infel**, *m.*, infidel, heretic.  
**infierno**, *m.*, hell.  
**ínfimo**, -a, worst.  
**infinitivo**, *m.*, infinitive.  
**inflexión**, *f.*, inflection.  
**infundir**, to infuse.  
**ingeniero**, *m.*, engineer.  
**ingenio**, *m.*, genius, intelligence.  
**ingenioso**, -a, ingenious.  
**Inglaterra**, *f.*, England.  
**inglés (inglesa)**, *adj.*, English.  
**ingratitude**, *f.*, ingratitude.  
**ingreso**, *m.*, entrance.  
**inmaculado**, -a, immaculate.  
**Inmaculada Concepción**, *f.*, Im-  
 maculate Conception.  
**inmediatamente**, *adv.*, immedi-  
 ately, straightway.  
**inmediato**, -a, immediate, next,  
 nearest.  
**inmejorable**, *adj.*, unsurpassable.  
**inmenso**, -a, immense.  
**inmóvil**, *adj.*, motionless.  
**innumerable**, *adj.*, innumerable.  
**inocente**, *adj.*, innocent, simple.  
**inoportuno**, -a, inopportune, in-  
 convenient.  
**inquirir**, to inquire.  
**inscribir**, to inscribe.  
**insensible**, *adj.*, insensible.  
**insolente**, *adj.*, insolent.  
**inspeccionar**, to inspect, examine.  
**inspiración**, *f.*, inspiration.  
**inspirar**, to inspire.  
**instante**, *m.*, instant, moment.  
**instinto**, *m.*, instinct.  
**instituir**, to institute.  
**instrucción**, *f.*, instruction, educa-  
 tion.  
**instruir**, to instruct, educate.  
**intelectual**, *adj.*, intellectual, in-  
 telligent.  
**intención**, *f.*, intention.  
**intensivo**, -a, intensive.  
**intenso**, -a, intense, violent.  
**interés**, *m.*, interest.  
**interesante**, *adj.*, interesting.  
**interesar**, to interest.  
**interior**, *adj.*, interior, inner, un-  
 der; **ropa** —, underclothing;  
*subst. m.*, interior.

**interjección**, *f.*, interjection.  
**interlocutor**, *m.*, spokesman.  
**interminable**, *adj.*, interminable, endless.  
**interno**, *-a*, internal, inner.  
**interrogar**, to ask, question.  
**interrogativo**, *-a*, interrogative.  
**interrogatorio**, *m.*, examination, interrogatory, questioning.  
**interrumpir**, to interrupt.  
**intervenir**, to interfere.  
**íntimo**, *-a*, intimate.  
**introducción**, *f.*, introduction.  
**introducir**, to introduce; —*se*, to introduce one's self, get in.  
**inútil**, *adj.*, useless.  
**inútilmente**, *adv.*, uselessly, in vain.  
**invadir**, to invade.  
**invariable**, *adj.*, invariable.  
**invariablemente**, *adv.*, invariably.  
**inventar**, to invent.  
**invertir**, to invert.  
**invierno**, *m.*, winter.  
**invisible**, *adj.*, invisible.  
**invitación**, *f.*, invitation.  
**invitar**, to invite.  
**ir**, to go; — *de espaldas*, to go (or ride) backwards; *vamos a ver*, let us see; ¡*vaya!* *int.*, well, I declare! really! come now!  
**ira**, *f.*, ire, anger, wrath, indignation.  
**irregular**, *adj.*, irregular.  
**Isabel**, *f.*, Isabel.  
**Isabel de Valois**, Elizabeth (or Isabella) of Valois ([1545–1568]. *The third wife of Philip II of Spain*).  
**Italia**, *f.*, Italy.  
**italiano**, *-a*, Italian.  
**izquierdo**, *-a*, left (*as opposed to* 'right').

## J

**jabón**, *m.*, soap.  
**jaco**, *m.*, nag.  
**jadeante**, *adj.*, panting, breathless.  
**jamás**, *adv.*, ever, never.  
**Japón**, *m.*, Japan.  
**jaranero**, *-a*, merry, jolly.

**jardín**, *m.*, garden.  
**jefe**, *m.*, chief, leader, captain.  
**Jerez**, Jerez (*a city of some 63,500 inhabitants in the province of Cadiz, southern Spain. It is famous for its sherry wine*).  
**jerezano**, *-a*, of Jerez, sherry.  
**Jerónimo**, *m.*, Jerome.  
**Jerusalén**, Jerusalem.  
**Jesucristo**, *m.*, Jesus Christ.  
**Jesuita**, *m.*, Jesuit.  
**Jesús**, *m.*, Jesus; ¡—! *int.*, well, I declare! oh heavens!; — **Nazareno**, Jesus of Nazareth.  
**¡ji . . . ji!** *int.*, hee . . . hee (*denoting suppressed laughter*).  
**Jiménez de Cisneros**, Jiménez de Cisneros ([1437–1517]. *A Spanish cardinal and statesman. He became cardinal in 1507. He printed the Complutensian Polyglot Bible, and founded the University of Alcalá de Henares*).  
**jirón**, *m.*, tatter, strip, shred.  
**¡jo!** *int.*, whoa! stand still!  
**Joaquín**, *m.*, Joachim.  
**jornada**, *f.*, trip, journey.  
**José**, *m.*, Joseph.  
**Josefa**, *f.*, Josephine.  
**joven**, *adj.*, young; *subst. m. or f.*, youth, young man (or woman).  
**joyero**, *m.*, jeweller.  
**Juan**, *m.*, John.  
**jubilado**, *-a*, retired on a pension.  
**júbilo**, *m.*, joy, delight, rejoicing.  
**judía**, *f.*, French bean, kidney bean.  
**juego**, *m.*, game, play.  
**jueves**, *m.*, Thursday.  
**juez**, *m.*, judge.  
**jugador**, *m.*, player.  
**jugar**, to play.  
**jugo**, *m.*, juice, milk.  
**juguete**, *m.*, toy, plaything.  
**juicio**, *m.*, judgment, opinion.  
**julio**, *m.*, July.  
**junco**, *m.*, rush, cane.  
**junio**, *m.*, June.  
**juntamente**, *adv.*, together.  
**juntar**, to gather together, amass.  
**junto**, *-a*, together.  
**juramento**, *m.*, oath.

jurar, to swear, take oath.

justicia, *f.*, justice.

Justiniano, Justinian ([483-565].

*A Roman emperor at whose command the Justinian Code was compiled).*

## L

la, *def. art., f.*, the; *pers. pron., f.*, her, it.

labio, *m.*, lip, edge.

labor, *f.*, tillage, tilled field.

laboratorio, *m.*, laboratory.

laborioso, -a, industrious, assiduous.

labrador, *m.*, farmer, rustic.

lado, *m.*, side; al —, beside (them), along with (them); de un — a otro, hither and thither.

ladrillo, *m.*, brick.

ladrón, *m.*, thief; ¡al —! *int.*, stop thief!

lago, *m.*, lake.

lágrima, *f.*, tear.

lamentación, *f.*, lamentation, wailing.

lamentar(se), to lament.

lámpara, *f.*, lamp.

lancha, *f.*, barge, boat.

langosta, *f.*, lobster.

lanza, *f.*, lance.

lanzada, *f.*, blow with a lance.

lanzar, to utter, hurl, throw.

lápiz, *m.*, pencil.

largo, -a, long; a lo — de, *prep.*, along, over.

lástima, *f.*, pity; ¡qué —! what a pity!

lastimoso, -a, pitiable.

látigo, *m.*, whip.

latir, to beat, throb.

lavabo, *m.*, wash-stand.

lavadero, *m.*, washing-place, bath.

lavandera, *f.*, laundress, wash-woman.

lavar, to wash.

le, *pers. pron.*, him, it, you; to him, to her, to it, to you.

lección, *f.*, lesson.

lector, *m.*, reader.

lectura, *f.*, reading.

leche, *f.*, milk.

lechuga, *f.*, lettuce.

leer, to read; — por cima, to glance over.

legalidad, *f.*, legality, fidelity.

legítimo, -a, legitimate.

legua, *f.*, league.

lejanía, *f.*, distance.

lejano, -a, distant, far away.

lejos, *adv.*, distant, far, far off, in the distance; — de, *prep.*, far from; — de que, *conj.*, so far from.

lengua, *f.*, language, tongue.

lenguaje, *m.*, language, speech.

lentamente, *adv.*, slowly.

lentitud, *f.*, slowness.

lento, -a, slow; *adv.*, slowly.

leña, *f.*, wood, fire-wood.

león, *m.*, lion.

León, *m.*, Leon (*a former kingdom of Spain, bounded by Asturias on the north, Old Castile on the east, Estremadura on the south, and Portugal and Galicia on the west).*

Lepanto, Lepanto (*the Battle of Lepanto was a naval victory gained Oct. 7, 1571, by the Italian and Spanish fleets under Don Juan of Austria over the Turkish fleet).*

letargo, *m.*, lethargy.

letra, *f.*, letter, character.

letrilla, *f.*, rondelet.

levantar, to raise, lift; —se, to rise, arise, get up; — tiendas, to break up camp, go home.

leve, *adj.*, light, faint.

levita, *f.*, frock-coat.

leyenda, *f.*, legend, reading.

liberal, *adj.*, liberal, generous.

libertad, *f.*, liberty.

librar, to free, liberate.

libre, *adj.*, free, clear.

libro, *m.*, book.

licenciado, *m.*, licentiate.

Licurgo, *m.*, Lycurgus.

lienzo, *m.*, linen.

ligadura, *f.*, rope, bond.

ligar, to bind, tie.

ligeramente, *adv.*, lightly, slightly.

ligero, -a, light.



**limitar**, to limit, restrict.  
**límite**, *m.*, limit.  
**limón**, *m.*, lemon.  
**limosna**, *f.*, alms.  
**limpiar**, to clean.  
**limpio**, *-a*, clean, clear, limpid.  
**linde**, *m. or f.*, boundary, limit.  
**lindo**, *-a*, pretty, nice.  
**línea**, *f.*, line.  
**lista**, *f.*, menu, bill of fare, list; **en** —, general delivery; — **nominal**, roll call.  
**listo**, *-a*, ready.  
**literalmente**, *adv.*, literally.  
**literario**, *-a*, literary.  
**literatura**, *f.*, literature.  
**lo**, *def. art., n., the; pers. pron., m., it.*  
**local**, *adj.*, local.  
**loco**, *-a*, mad, crazy; *subst. m. or f.*, mad (person).  
**locución**, *f.*, phrase, locution.  
**lodo**, *m.*, mud; **haber** —, to be muddy.  
**lograr**, to attain, obtain, succeed.  
**loma**, *f.*, hill, hillock, slope.  
**lomo**, *m.*, back.  
**Lope**, *m.*, Lope.  
**Lope de Vega** ([1562-1635]. *A celebrated Spanish dramatist and poet*).  
**Lorenzo**, *m.*, Laurence.  
**loro**, *m.*, parrot.  
**Lucas**, *m.*, Luke.  
**lúcidamente**, *adv.*, splendidly, brilliantly.  
**lúcido**, *-a*, bright, brilliant, splendid.  
**lucir**, to shine.  
**lucha**, *f.*, struggle.  
**luego**, *adv.*, then, soon, next; **desde** —, *adv.*, thereupon, at once; **hasta** —, until by and by, so long (*fam.*), I'll see you later; — **que**, *conj.*, as soon as.  
**lugar**, *m.*, place, village; **tener** —, to take place.  
**lugarejo**, *m. (dim. of lugar)*, small place, hamlet.  
**Luis**, *m.*, Louis.  
**lujo**, *m.*, luxury, extravagance.  
**luminoso**, *-a*, luminous.

**luna**, *f.*, moon; **haber** —, to be moonlight.  
**lunes**, *m.*, Monday.  
**luz**, *f.*, light.

## Ll

**llama**, *f.*, flame.  
**llamamiento**, *m.*, call.  
**llamar**, to call, name, knock, rap (*at a door or window*).  
**llanto**, *m.*, weeping, tears.  
**llanura**, *f.*, plain, field.  
**llegada**, *f.*, arrival.  
**llegar**, to arrive, come, reach; — **a ser**, to become.  
**llenar**, to fill.  
**lleno**, *-a*, full, covered.  
**llevar**, to wear, take, carry; — **se**, to take away.  
**llorar**, to weep.  
**llover**, to rain.  
**lloviznar**, to drizzle.  
**lluvia**, *f.*, rain.

## M

**macareno**; **de** —, gaudily, in a flashy manner.  
**madera**, *f.*, wood (*used in construction, in distinction to leña, 'fire-wood'*).  
**madre**, *f.*, mother.  
**madreselva**, *f.*, honeysuckle.  
**Madrid**, Madrid (*a city of over 597,000 inhabitants, the capital of Spain. It is situated near the geographical center of the peninsula*).  
**madriguera**, *f.*, burrow.  
**madrileño**, *-a*, of (or belonging to) Madrid.  
**madrugada**, *f.*, early morning.  
**madrugar**, to rise early.  
**maestra**, *f.*, teacher.  
**maestría**, *f.*, skill.  
**maestro**, *m.*, teacher, master.  
**magnífico**, *-a*, magnificent.  
**mago** (*see Reyes Magos*).  
**mal**, *adj.* (*see malo*); *adv.*, ill, badly, wrong; **a** —, *adv.*, ill.  
**Málaga**, Málaga (*a city of about 136,000 inhabitants, capital of*

- the province of Malaga, and an important Mediterranean seaport).*  
**malagueño**, *m.*, man from Malaga.  
**maldecir**, to curse.  
**maldito**, -a (*adj. pp. of maldecir*), cursed; *subst. m.*, accursed (person).  
**malestar**, *m.*, discomfort.  
**maleta**, *f.*, valise, suit-case.  
**malhechor**, *m.*, malefactor, criminal.  
**malicioso**, -a, mischievous.  
**malo**, -a, bad, evil, ill, poor.  
**malparado**, -a (*adj. pp. of malparar*), discomfited, damaged, hurt.  
**maltratamiento**, *m.*, ill treatment.  
**maltrecho**, -a, ill treated, misused, hurt.  
**mamá**, *f.*, mama.  
**manantial**, *m.*, spring.  
**manco**, -a, one-handed, maimed.  
**Mancha**, (*La*), *f.*, La Mancha (*the most sparsely populated province of Spain, lying south of Madrid, and celebrated as the scene of the birth and early exploits of Don Quixote*).  
**mandar**, to order, command, send; — **hacer**, to order, have made.  
**manecilla**, *f.*, hand (*of a watch or clock*).  
**manecita**, *f.*, little hand.  
**manera**, *f.*, way, manner; **de ninguna** —, *adv.*, by no means, not at all; **de — que**, *conj.*, so that, so as.  
**manía**, *f.*, whim, mania, habit.  
**maniatar**, to tie the hands (of anyone).  
**manicomio**, *m.*, insane asylum.  
**manifestar**, to manifest, show, express.  
**maniobra**, *f.*, maneuver, trick.  
**manir**, to grow tender (*of meats*).  
**mano**, *f.*, hand; **cogidos de la —**, holding hands.  
**Manolita**, *f.* (*dim. of Manuela*), Emma.  
**mansedumbre**, *f.*, meekness, mildness.
- manta**, *f.*, blanket.  
**manteca**, *f.*, lard, butter.  
**mantel**, *m.*, table-cloth.  
**mantener**, to maintain.  
**mantequilla**, *f.*, butter.  
**mantilla**, *f.*, mantilla, saddle-cloth.  
**manto**, *m.*, mantle, cloak.  
**Manuel**, *m.*, Emanuel.  
**manzana**, *f.*, apple.  
**maña**, *f.*, skill, cleverness.  
**mañana**, *adv.*, to-morrow; **hasta —**, until to-morrow; **pasado —**, *adv.*, day after to-morrow; *subst. f.*, morning, morrow.  
**mapa**, *m.*, map.  
**máquina**, *f.*, machine, works (*of a watch or clock*).  
**maquinalmente**, *adv.*, mechanically.  
**mar**, *m. or f.*, sea, (any) large quantity.  
**maravilloso**, -a, marvelous.  
**marcar**, to mark, indicate.  
**marcha**, *f.*, march, procession, course, way; **¡en —!** go! march!  
**marchar**, to go, walk, move on; — **se**, to go, go away.  
**Mari Belcha**, *f.* (*Basque*), Black Mary.  
**María**, *f.*, Mary; — **Santísima**, Holy Mary.  
**María de la Luz**, *f.*, Mary of the Light (*the name of Gloria's cousin in Valdés's novel "La Hermana San Sulpicio"*).  
**marido**, *m.*, husband.  
**marinero**, -a, sea-faring; *subst. m.*, sailor.  
**mármol**, *m.*, marble.  
**martes**, *m.*, Tuesday.  
**martilleo**, *m.*, hammering.  
**martillo**, *m.*, hammer.  
**mártir**, *m.*, martyr.  
**marzo**, *m.*, March.  
**mas**, *conj.*, but.  
**más**, *adv.*, more; — **bien**, *adv.*, rather; **a — no poder**, to the utmost; **cuanto —**, *adv.*, (all) the more; **cuanto — que**, *conj.*, the more since; **valer —**, to be better, worth more.  
**mascar**, to chew.  
**masculino**, -a, masculine.

- mastín**, *m.*, mastiff.  
**mata**, *f.*, shrub, thicket.  
**matador**, *m.*, matador.  
**matar**, to kill, slay.  
**material**, *m.*, material.  
**matrimonio**, *m.*, marriage; **parte de** —, wedding announcement (or invitation).  
**mayo**, *m.*, May.  
**mayor**, *adj.* (*comp.* of *grande*), greater, greatest, older, oldest, elder, eldest, chief; **la** — **parte** (de), the greater part (of), most (*before nouns*); **músico** —, leader (or director) of a band of music.  
**mayúscula**, *f.*, capital letter.  
**me**, *pers. pron.*, me, to me.  
**mecer**, to rock, sway, swing.  
**media**, *f.*, stocking.  
**media noche**, *f.*, midnight.  
**medicina**, *f.*, medicine.  
**médico**, *m.*, doctor.  
**medicuzarra**, *m.*, old doctor.  
**medida**, *f.*, measure; **a** — **que**, *conj.*, according as, as far as.  
**medio**, *m.*, middle, means; **en** — **de**, *prep.*, in the midst of; **por** — **de**, *prep.*, through, by means of; — (*a*), *adj.*, half; **media hora de camino**, half an hour's journey; **dar media vuelta**, to go half-way round.  
**mediodía**, *m.*, noon, noonday.  
**medir**, to measure.  
**meditar**, to meditate.  
**medroso**, *a*, fearful.  
**mejilla**, *f.*, cheek.  
**mejor**, *adj.* (*comp.* of *bueno*), better; — **dicho**, rather; *adv.* (*comp.* of *bien*), better.  
**melancolía**, *f.*, melancholy, gloom.  
**melancólico**, *a*, melancholy.  
**meloso**, *a*, honied, sweet, gentle.  
**memorable**, *adj.*, memorable.  
**memoria**, *f.*, memory; **de** —, by heart.  
**mención**, *f.*, mention.  
**mentonar**, to mention.  
**mendigo**, *m.*, beggar.  
**menester**, *m.*, necessity, need, want; **haber** —, to need.  
**mengano**, *a*, *indef. pron.*, such a one, so and so.  
**menor**, *adj.* (*comp.* of *pequeño*), less, younger, least, youngest; **venta (al) por** —, retail.  
**menos**, *adv.* (*comp.* of *poco*), less, least; *prep.*, except; **al** —, *adv.*, at least; **a lo** —, *adv.*, at least; **por lo** —, *adv.*, at least; **a** — **que**, *conj.*, unless; **no poder** — **de**, not to be able to help.  
**menta**, *f.*, mint.  
**mente**, *f.*, mind.  
**mentir**, to lie, tell a falsehood.  
**menudo**, *a*, small, little, slender; **a** —, *adv.*, often.  
**mercar**, to buy.  
**merced**, *f.*, gift, grace, thanks, honor, lordship.  
**merecer**, to deserve, be deserving.  
**merendar**, to lunch.  
**mérito**, *m.*, worth, merit.  
**mero**, *a*, mere.  
**mes**, *m.*, month.  
**mesa**, *f.*, table, desk.  
**meter**, to put (in), place.  
**metido**; — **en carnes**, plump.  
**método**, *m.*, method.  
**mezquita**, *f.*, mosque.  
**mi**, *poss. adj.*, my.  
**mí**, *pers. pron.*, me.  
**miedo**, *m.*, fear; **tener** —, to be afraid; **de** — **que**, *conj.*, for fear that.  
**miembro**, *m.*, member.  
**mientras (que)**, *conj.*, while, whilst.  
**miércoles**, *m.*, Wednesday; **Miércoles de Ceniza**, Ash Wednesday.  
**mies**, *f.*, grain, wheat.  
**miga**, *f.*, crumb; **hacer buenas** —s, to agree well, get on well together.  
**Miguel**, *m.*, Michael.  
**miguelete**, *m.*, mountain soldier.  
**mil**, *adj.*, one thousand, one-thousandth.  
**milagroso**, *a*, miraculous.  
**milésimo**, *a*, thousandth.  
**militar**, *adj.*, military; *subst. m.*, soldier.  
**millar**, *m.*, thousand, group of a

- thousand (*generally used in the plural*).
- millón**, *m.*, a million.
- millonésimo**, *-a*, millionth.
- mineral**, *m.*, mineral.
- ministerio**, *m.*, ministry.
- minúscula**, *f.*, small letter.
- minutas**, *f. pl.*, minutes, records.
- minutero**, *m.*, minute-hand.
- minuto**, *m.*, minute.
- mío**, *-a*, *poss. adj. and pron.*, my, mine (*the def. art. usually precedes in the pronominal form*).
- mirada**, *f.*, glance.
- mirar**, to look (at), see; *subst. m.*, glance.
- misa**, *f.*, mass; **Misa del Gallo** (*lit.* 'Mass of the Cock'), midnight mass on Christmas Eve; — **de requiem**, requiem mass (*said or sung for the repose of a departed soul*).
- miserable**, *adj.*, miserable.
- miseria**, *f.*, poverty, misery.
- misericordia**, *f.*, mercy, pity.
- mísero**, *-a*, miserable, wretched.
- mismo**, *-a*, same, self, even, very.
- misterio**, *m.*, mystery.
- misterioso**, *-a*, mysterious.
- mitad**, *f.*, half; *a la — de*, *prep.*, half-way through.
- ¡miz miz!** *int.*, kitty, kitty! come, kitty!
- mocedad**, *f.*, youthful exploit; youth, juvenility.
- Mocedades del Cid**, *Las*. The youthful exploits of the Cid (*the title of the chief play of Guillén de Castro which appeared in 1618*).
- moda**, *f.*, style, fashion; **ser de —**, to be in style (*or fashion*).
- moderno**, *-a*, modern.
- modestamente**, *adv.*, modestly.
- modesto**, *-a*, modest.
- módico**, *-a*, moderate (*in price*).
- modismo**, *m.*, idiom.
- modo**, *m.*, way, manner, mode, mood; **de todos —s**, *adv.*, any-way; **de — que**, *conj.*, so that.
- mohino**; **burro** —, mule.
- moler**, to grind,
- molienda**, *f.*, grinding, milling.
- molinero**, *m.*, miller.
- molinete**, *m.*, little mill; **hacer — con**, to brandish, wield.
- molino**, *m.*, mill.
- molliznar**, to drizzle.
- molliznear**, to drizzle.
- momento**, *m.*, moment.
- momia**, *f.*, mummy.
- monarca**, *m.*, monarch, sovereign.
- Mondoñedo**, Mondoñedo (*a town of some 10,000 inhabitants, in the province of Lugo, north-western Spain*).
- moneda**, *f.*, money, coin.
- monopolio**, *m.*, monopoly.
- monótono**, *-a*, monotonous.
- monserga**, *f.*, gabble, confusion.
- monstruo**, *m.*, monster.
- montaña**, *f.*, mountain.
- montar**, to mount, ride.
- monte**, *m.*, monte (*a game of cards*), mountain, mount.
- monterilla**, *f.*, cap.
- monumento**, *m.*, monument.
- moreno**, *-a*, dark, swarthy, brunette.
- morir**, to die; — **se**, to die.
- morisco**, *-a*, Moorish.
- moro**, *-a*, Moorish; *subst. m. or f.*, Moor.
- mortal**, *adj.*, mortal.
- mortuorio**, *-a*, mortuary, of a death.
- moruno**, *-a*, Moorish.
- mostrador**, *m.*, counter.
- mostrar**, to show.
- motivo**, *m.*, motive, reason, purpose; **con — de**, *prep.*, in honor of, in celebration of.
- mover**, to move, inspire; — **se**, to move (*about or along*).
- movimiento**, *m.*, movement, motion, stir, life.
- moza**, *f.*, young lady, girl servant.
- mozo**, *m.*, youth, waiter, servant.
- muchacha**, *f.*, girl.
- muchacho**, *m.*, boy.
- muchedumbre**, *f.*, crowd.
- mucho**, *-a*, *adj. and pron.*, much, a great deal; *pl.*, many; *adv.*, much, very; **lo — que siento**, how sorry I am; **lo siento —**, I

am very sorry; — *rato*, *adv.*, a long while.  
**mudar**, to change; — *se*, to change, be changed, move.  
**mudo**, —a, dumb, mute, silent.  
**mueblaje**, *m.*, furniture.  
**mueca**, *f.*, face, grimace.  
**muerte**, *f.*, death.  
**muerto**, —a (*adj. pp. of morir*), died, killed, slain; *subst. m. or f.*, (the) dead.  
**mujer**, *f.*, woman, wife.  
**mula**, *f.*, mule.  
**multicolor**, *adj.*, many hued, many colored.  
**múltiplo**, —a, multiple.  
**multitud**, *f.*, multitude, crowd.  
**mullido**, —a, soft.  
**mundanal**, *adj.*, mundane, worldly, of the world.  
**mundo**, *m.*, world; *todo el* —, everybody; *echar al* —, to create, bring forth into the world; *ver* —, to travel.  
**muñeca**, *f.*, wrist.  
**muralla**, *f.*, wall, rampart.  
**murciano**, —a, Murcian, native of Murcia.  
**Murillo**, Bartolomé Esteban, Bartholomew Stephen Murillo ([1618–1682]. *A celebrated Spanish painter*).  
**murmullo**, *m.*, whisper, murmur, ripple.  
**murmurar**, to murmur.  
**muro**, *m.*, wall.  
**musculoso**, —a, muscular.  
**museo**, *m.*, museum.  
**música**, *f.*, music, band; *caja de* —, music-box.  
**musical**, *adj.*, musical.  
**músico**, *m.*, musician; — *mayor*, leader (*or director*) of a band of music.  
**mutuo**, —a, mutual.  
**muy**, *adv.*, very, decidedly.

## N

**nacer**, to be born, spring (forth).  
**nacimiento**, *m.*, birth.  
**nación**, *f.*, nation.

**nacional**, *adj.*, national.  
**nada**, *pron.*, nothing; *adv.*, not at all.  
**nadie**, *pron.*, nobody.  
**naípe**, *m.*, playing-card.  
**Nápoles**, Naples.  
**naranja**, *f.*, orange.  
**naranjo**, *m.*, orange-tree.  
**nariz**, *f.*, nose.  
**narración**, *f.*, narration, relation.  
**narrar**, to narrate, relate.  
**natalicio**, *m.*, nativity, birth, birthday.  
**natividad**, *f.*, nativity, birth.  
**natural**, *adj.*, natural; *subst. m. and f.*, native, inhabitant.  
**naturaleza**, *f.*, nature.  
**naturalidad**, *f.*, naturalness, ease.  
**naturalmente**, *adv.*, naturally.  
**navarro**, —a, native of Navarre, Navarrese.  
**Navidad**, *f.*, Christmas.  
**Nazareno**; **Jesús** —, Jesus of Nazareth.  
**neblina**, *f.*, fog, mist; *haber* —, to be misty.  
**necesario**, —a, necessary.  
**necesidad**, *f.*, necessity, need.  
**necesitar**, to need, require.  
**necio**, —a, foolish, stupid.  
**negación**, *f.*, negation.  
**negar**, to deny.  
**negativo**, —a, negative.  
**negocio**, *m.*, occupation, affair, business.  
**negro**, —a, black.  
**Nerón**, Nero (*a Roman emperor* [54–68], *famous for his crimes*).  
**nervios**; **ataque de** —, nervous attack.  
**nervioso**, —a, nervous.  
**neutro**, —a, neuter.  
**nevar**, to snow.  
**ni**, *conj.*, neither, nor, not even, even; **no** . . . —, not even; **no** (—) . . . —, neither . . . nor; — **aun**, *adv.*, not even.  
**nido**, *m.*, nest.  
**nieta**, *f.*, granddaughter.  
**nieve**, *f.*, snow.  
**ningún** (*see ninguno*).  
**ninguno**, —a, *adj. and pron.*, no one, nobody, none, no.

**niña**, *f.*, child, girl.  
**niñez**, *f.*, childhood.  
**niño**, *m.*, child, boy; — **de pecho**, nursing child, infant.  
**no**, *adv.*, no, not; — **bien . . . cuando**, *conj.*, scarcely . . . when; — **obstante que**, *conj.*, notwithstanding that; — **sea que**, *conj.*, lest; — { **sólo** } . . . **sino**, *conj.*, not only . . . but; — . . . **ni**, not even; — . . . **ni . . . ni**, neither . . . nor.  
**noble**, *adj.*, noble, of noble birth.  
**noción**, *f.*, notion, idea.  
**nocturno**, *-a*, nocturnal, nightly, evening.  
**noche**, *f.*, night; **de —**, *adv.*, at night; **hasta la —**, until to-night; **por la —**, *adv.*, at night; **Noche Buena**, Christmas Eve; **¡buenas —s!** good evening *or* good night!  
**nómada**, *adj.*, nomadic, wandering.  
**nombrar**, to name, appoint.  
**nombre**, *m.*, name, noun.  
**nominal**; **lista —**, roll-call.  
**nonagenario**, *-a*, nonagenarian (90 years old).  
**nonagésimo**, *-a*, ninetieth.  
**noningentésimo**, *-a*, nine hundredth.  
**nono**, *-a*, ninth.  
**norte**, *m.*, north, pole-star, guide, rule.  
**nos**, *pers. pron.*, we, us, to us.  
**nosotros**, *pers. pron.*, we, us.  
**notabilidad**, *f.*, notability, eminent person, authority.  
**notable**, *adj.*, notable, remarkable.  
**notar**, to notice.  
**noticia**, *f.*, notice, tidings, news.  
**notificar**, to notify, inform.  
**novcientos**, *-as*, *adj.*, nine hundred, nine hundredth.  
**novela**, *f.*, novel.  
**novelista**, *m.*, novelist.  
**noveno**, *-a*, ninth.  
**noventa**, *adj.*, ninety, ninetieth.  
**noviembre**, *m.*, November.  
**nube**, *f.*, cloud.  
**nublado**, *-a*, cloudy.

**nuca**, *f.*, nape (of the neck).  
**nudo**, *m.*, knot, lump.  
**nuestro**, *-a*, *adj.*, and *pron.*, our (the *def. art.* usually precedes in the pronominal forms).  
**nueva**, *f.*, news.  
**Nueva York**, New York.  
**nueve**, *adj.*, nine, ninth.  
**nuevo**, *-a*, new; **de —**, *adv.*, again; **Año Nuevo**, New Year.  
**numeral**, *adj.*, numeral; *subst. m.*, numeral.  
**número**, *m.*, number; — **quebrado**, fraction.  
**numeroso**, *-a*, numerous, large.  
**nunca**, *adv.*, never, ever.

## O

**o**, *conj.* (becomes *u* before initial *o* or *ho*), or; — . . . —, *conj.*, either . . . or.  
**obedecer** (*a*), to obey.  
**obispo**, *m.*, bishop.  
**objeto**, *m.*, object.  
**oblicuo**, *-a*, oblique, slanting, side.  
**obligación**, *f.*, obligation, duty.  
**obligado**, *-a*, necessary, compulsory.  
**obligar**, to oblige, compel, make.  
**obra**, *f.*, work; — **maestra**, masterpiece.  
**obrar**, to work, be in the hands of; — **en el poder (de uno)**, to be in (one's) hands, reach (one).  
**obrero**, *m.*, workman.  
**obscuridad**, *f.*, darkness, obscurity.  
**oscuro**, *-a*, dark, obscure; **ser (or estar) —**, to be dark.  
**obsequio**, *m.*, gift; **en — de**, *prep.*, for the sake of.  
**observación**, *f.*, observation.  
**observar**, to observe.  
**obstáculo**, *m.*, obstacle.  
**obstante**; **no —**, *adv.*, notwithstanding; **no — que**, *conj.*, notwithstanding that.  
**obtener**, to obtain, win.  
**ocasión**, *f.*, occasion, opportunity.  
**occidente**, *m.*, occident, west.  
**ocioso**, *-a*, idle, unoccupied.  
**octavo**, *-a*, eighth.

octingentésimo, -a, eight hundredth.  
 octogenario, -a, octogenarian (80 years old).  
 octogésimo, -a, eightieth.  
 octubre, *m.*, October.  
 óctuplo, -a, octuple, eightfold.  
 ocultar, to hide, conceal.  
 oculto, -a, hidden.  
 ocupación, *f.*, occupation, occupancy.  
 ocupado, -a (*adj. pp. of ocupar*), occupied, busy.  
 ocupar, to occupy, hold.  
 ocurrir, to occur, take place.  
 ochenta, *adj.*, eighty, eightieth.  
 ochentena, *f.*, eighty, a group of eighty, fourscore.  
 ocho, *adj.*, eight, eighth.  
 oda, *f.*, ode.  
 odiar, to hate.  
 odio, *m.*, hate, hatred.  
 oeste, *m.*, west.  
 oficial, *adj.*, official, public, of the government; *subst. m.*, officer.  
 oficio, *m.*, office, profession, occupation.  
 ofrecer, to offer; ¿qué se le ofrece a usted? what do you wish?  
 ¡oh! *int.*, oh!  
 oído, *m.*, hearing, ear, inner ear.  
 ¡oiga! or ¡oye! (*imper. of oír used as int.*), listen! say! hello!  
 oír, to hear.  
 ¡ojalá! *int.* (*expressing strong desire*), would that! God grant!  
 ojeroso, -a, heavy eyed, having dark rings round the eyes.  
 ojo, *m.*, eye.  
 ola, *f.*, wave.  
 ¡ola! (*see ¡hola!*).  
 ¡ole! *int.* (*expressing enthusiasm, approval*), bravo!  
 oler, to smell.  
 olfato, *m.*, smell, sense of smell.  
 olivar, *m.*, olive-grove.  
 olivo, *m.*, olive-tree.  
 oloroso, -a, fragrant.  
 olvidar, to forget.  
 omitir, to omit.  
 once, *adj.*, eleven, eleventh.  
 ópera, *f.*, opera.

operación, *f.*, operation.  
 oponer, to oppose.  
 oportuno, -a, seasonable, opportune, proper.  
 opreso, -a (*adj. pp. of oprimir*), oppressed.  
 oprimir, to oppress.  
 óptico, *m.*, optician.  
 opuesto, -a, opposite, opposed.  
 oración, *f.*, sentence.  
 oral, *adj.*, oral.  
 órbita, *f.*, orbit, cavity.  
 orden, *f.*, order, command; *m.*, organization.  
 ordenanza, *m.*, orderly.  
 ordinal, *adj.*, ordinal.  
 ordinario, -a, ordinary.  
 oreja, *f.*, ear, outer ear.  
 orejudo, -a, large-eared.  
 organillo, *m.*, hand-organ, little organ.  
 organista, *m.*, organist.  
 organizar, to organize.  
 órgano, *m.*, organ.  
 orgulloso, -a, proud.  
 original, *adj.*, original.  
 orilla, *f.*, edge, shore, bank.  
 oro, *m.*, gold.  
 ortodoxo, -a, orthodox.  
 ortografía, *f.*, orthography.  
 ortográfico, -a, orthographic.  
 os, *pers. pron.*, you, to you.  
 osar, to dare.  
 oscuro (*see obscuro*).  
 otoño, *m.*, autumn, fall.  
 otro, -a, *adj. and pron.*, other, another; alguno que —, *adj. and pron.*, some or other, an occasional; otra vez, *adv.*, again.  
 oveja, *f.*, sheep, ewe.  
 Oviedo, Oviedo (*a city of about 53,000 inhabitants, capital of the province of Oviedo, in northwestern Spain*).  
 ¡ox! shoo! (*to frighten fowls*).  
 ¡oye! (*see oiga*).

## P

Pablo, *m.*, Paul.  
 pacer, to graze.  
 paciencia, *f.*, patience.  
 pacífico, -a, peaceful, mild, gentle.

**padecer**, to suffer; *subst.*, *m.*, suffering.

**Padilla, Doña María de**, Lady Mary of Padilla ([d. 1361], *favorite of Peter the Cruel of Castile*).

**padre**, *m.*, father.

**pagar**, to pay, pay for, repay; — *la casa*, to pay the rent.

**página**, *f.*, page.

**pago**, *m.*, pay, reward.

**país**, *m.*, country.

**paisano**, *m.*, peasant.

**paja**, *f.*, straw.

**pájaro**, *m.*, bird.

**paje**, *m.*, page.

**palabra**, *f.*, word.

**palacio**, *m.*, palace.

**paladar**, *m.*, palate.

**palco**, *m.*, box, loge.

**pálido**, —*a*, pale, pallid.

**palillos**, *m. pl.*, castanets.

**paliza**, *f.*, beating, cudgeling.

**palma**, *f.*, palm.

**paloma**, *f.*, dove, pigeon (*also as term of endearment*).

**Pamplona**, Pampeluna (*a city of about 30,000 inhabitants, capital of the province of Navarre*).

**pan**, *m.*, bread.

**panecillo**, *m.*, roll.

**pantalón**, *m.*, trousers (*commonly used in the plural*).

**panzudo**, —*a*, big-bellied, chubby, corpulent, round.

**pañuelo**, *m.*, handkerchief, kerchief.

**Papa**, *m.*, pope.

**papá**, *m.*, papa.

**papel**, *m.*, paper, rôle; **hacer un** —, to play a rôle.

**Paquito**, *m.* (*dim. of Paco, a colloquial form of Francisco*), Frank.

**par**, *m.*, pair, couple; **de — en —**, *adv.*, wide (open) (*of a door*).

**para**, *prep.*, for, to, in order to, about to; — **que**, *conj.*, in order that.

**paradero**, *m.*, stopping-place, whereabouts.

**paraguas**, *m.*, umbrella.

**paraíso**, *m.*, paradise.

**paraje**, *m.*, place.

**paralizar**, to paralyze.

**Paraninfo**, *m.*, Paronymph, Commencement Hall.

**parar(se)**, to stop, stay.

**pardo**, —*a*, brown.

**parecer**, to appear, seem, look like; —**se a**, to resemble, look like.

**parecido**, —*a* (*adj. pp. of parecer*), like, similar.

**pared**, *f.*, wall; **reloj de —**, (wall) clock.

**pareja**, *f.*, couple, pair.

**pariente**, *m. or f.*, relative, kinsman.

**París**, Paris.

**parque**, *m.*, park.

**párroco**, *m.*, parish priest.

**parroquial**, *adj.*, parish, parochial; *subst. f.*, parochial church.

**parte**, *f.*, part, division; **por todas** —*s*, everywhere; **la mayor** —, the greater part, most (*before nouns*); **formar** —, to form part; **tomar** —, to take part; *subst. m.*, despatch, announcement, invitation; — **de matrimonio**, wedding announcement (*or invitation*); **dar** —, to give notice, inform, report.

**participar**, to participate, share, inform of.

**participio**, *m.*, participle; — **pasivo**, past participle.

**particular**, *adj.*, personal, private, special.

**particularidad**, *f.*, peculiarity.

**partido**, *m.*, side (*of persons who play a game*).

**partir**, to depart, leave, divide, rend, break.

**pasado**, —*a* (*adj. pp. of pasar*), past, last; — **mañana**, *adv.*, day after to-morrow.

**pasajero**, *m.*, passer, passer-by, passenger.

**pasar**, to pass, spend, walk, happen, take place; —**se**, to pass by (*or away*), happen, take place.

**pasatiempo**, *m.*, pastime.

**Pascua**, *f.*, Easter.

**Pascual**, *m.*, Paschal.

**Pascualet**, *m.*, little Paschal.

**pasear**, to walk, stroll.



**paseo**, *m.*, walk, avenue; **dar un** —, to take a walk, walk.  
**pasión**, *f.*, passion, feeling.  
**pasivo**, *-a*, passive, past (*of participles*); **participio** —, past participle.  
**pasmarse**, to marvel, be stunned.  
**paso**, *m.*, pace, step, way; **dejar** —, to give entrance (*or* way).  
**pastar**, to graze.  
**pastel**, *m.*, cake.  
**pastor**, *m.*, shepherd.  
**pata**, *f.*, foot (and leg of beasts), paw.  
**patata**, *f.*, potato.  
**paterno**, *-a*, paternal.  
**patillas**, *f. pl.*, whiskers.  
**patio**, *m.*, inner court, courtyard.  
**patria**, *f.*, fatherland, native land, home country, country.  
**patriótico**, *-a*, patriotic.  
**patrón**, *m.*, landlord, host.  
**patrona**, *f.*, landlady.  
**pausa**, *f.*, pause, stop.  
**pausadamente**, *adv.*, slowly, deliberately.  
**paz**, *f.*, peace.  
**peculiar**, *adj.*, peculiar.  
**pecho**, *m.*, breast; **niño de** —, nursing child, infant.  
**pedazo**, *m.*, piece.  
**pedestal**, *m.*, pedestal, foundation.  
**pedir**, to ask, beg, crave; — **prestado**, to borrow.  
**Pedro**, *m.*, Peter.  
**Pedro de Castilla**, **Don**, Don Pedro of Castile ([1334–1369], king of Castile, called the Cruel).  
**pegar**, to stick, paste, beat, strike; — **se**, to stick, cling.  
**peinar**, to comb, groom.  
**peine**, *m.*, comb.  
**pelado**, *-a*, bare, treeless, bald.  
**pelea**, *f.*, fight, battle, strife.  
**peligroso**, *-a*, perilous, dangerous, hazardous.  
**pelo**, *m.*, hair (*of head, or in general*); **en** —, without a saddle, bare-backed.  
**pelota**, *f.*, pelota (*Basque game*), handball, ball.  
**pendiente**, *adj.*, hanging, steep.  
**penetrar**, to penetrate, enter.  
**penitencia**, *f.*, penitence, repentance.

**pensamiento**, *m.*, thought.  
**pensar** (**en**), to think (*of*), intend.  
**pensativo**, *-a*, pensive, buried in thought.  
**penúltimo**, *-a*, penultimate, next to the last.  
**peón**, *m.*, day-laborer; — **caminero**, road mender.  
**peor**, *adj.* (*comp. of malo*), worse; *adv.* (*comp. of mal*), worse.  
**pepino**, *m.*, cucumber.  
**Pepita**, *f.* (*dim. of Josefa*, 'Josephine'), Josie.  
**pequeño**, *-a*, small, little.  
**percibir**, to perceive.  
**perder**, to lose.  
**perdón**, *m.*, pardon.  
**perdonar**, to pardon.  
**peregrinación**, *f.*, pilgrimage.  
**perengano**, *-a*, *indef. pron.*, such a one, so and so.  
**perenne**, *adj.*, perpetual.  
**perezosamente**, *adv.*, lazily, slowly.  
**perezoso**, *-a*, lazy.  
**perfección**, *f.*, perfection; **a la** —, *adv.*, perfectly, to perfection.  
**perfeccionar**, to perfect.  
**perfecto**, *-a*, perfect.  
**periódico**, *m.*, paper, newspaper.  
**perjurio**, *m.*, perjury.  
**permanecer**, to remain.  
**permiso**, *m.*, permission.  
**permitir**, to permit, allow.  
**pero**, *conj.*, but.  
**perro**, *m.*, dog; — **chico**, *m.* (*fam.*) cent (*copper coin worth five céntimos*); — **gordo** (*or grande*), *m.* (*fam.*) penny (*copper coin worth ten céntimos*).  
**persecución**, *f.*, persecution.  
**perseguir**, to pursue, persecute.  
**persona**, *f.*, person.  
**personaje**, *m.*, personage, person.  
**personal**, *adj.*, personal, private.  
**personalmente**, *adv.*, personally, in person.  
**persuasivo**, *-a*, persuasive.  
**Perú**, (**El**), *m.*, Peru.  
**pervertir**, to pervert.  
**pesadamente**, *adv.*, heavily.  
**pesado**, *-a*, heavy.  
**pésame**, *m.*, condolence, sympathy.

- pesar**, *m.*, sorrow, grief; **a — de**, *prep.*, in spite of; **a — de que**, *conj.*, in spite of.  
**pescado**, *m.*, fish (*that has been caught in distinction to pez*, 'fish [in the water]').  
**pescuezo**, *m.*, neck.  
**peseta**, *f.*, peseta (*Spanish silver coin worth about twenty cents*).  
**peso**, *m.*, dollar (*five-peseta piece*).  
**piadoso**, *-a*, merciful, clement, pious.  
**piano**, *m.*, piano.  
**picador**, *m.*, picador (*he who, on horseback, baits the bull with a long staff armed with a pointed iron tip*).  
**picar**, to prick, pierce, goad, pique.  
**picardía**, *f.*, trickery, cunning.  
**picaresco**, *-a*, roguish, knavish.  
**pícaro**, *-a*, rascally, roguish, knavish; *subst. m. or f.*, rascal, rogue, knave.  
**Picio** (*see feo*).  
**picotear**, to peck.  
**pie**, *m.*, foot; **a —**, *adv.*, on foot; **de —**, *adv.*, standing; **en —**, *adv.*, on foot, standing; **con — derecho**, *adv.*, fortunately, with good omen; **volver —s atrás**, to retrace one's steps.  
**piedad**, *f.*, pity, compassion.  
**piedra**, *f.*, stone.  
**pierna**, *f.*, leg.  
**pieza**, *f.*, piece, fragment, snatch.  
**pilar**, *m.*, pillar, column.  
**pillar**, to take, catch.  
**pilluelo**, *m.*, little rascal, urchin, thief.  
**pimienta**, *f.*, pepper.  
**pintar**, to paint, depict.  
**pintor**, *m.*, painter.  
**pintoresco**, *-a*, picturesque.  
**pintura**, *f.*, painting.  
**pipa**, *f.*, pipe.  
**pirata**, *m.*, pirate.  
**Pirineos**, *m. pl.*, Pyrenees.  
**piso**, *m.*, story, floor, pavement; **— bajo**, ground floor.  
**pizarra**, *f.*, blackboard (*of slate*).  
**placer**, to please; *subst. m.*, pleasure; **a —**, *adv.*, to (suit) one's pleasure.  
**planchar**, to iron.  
**planicie**, *f.*, plain.  
**planta**, *f.*, plant, floor; **— baja**, ground floor.  
**plantar**, to plant; **—se**, to reach quickly, stand.  
**plata**, *f.*, silver.  
**plato**, *m.*, plate, dish; **— del día**, special dish.  
**plaza**, *f.*, bull-ring, arena, square, place, position.  
**plazo**, *m.*, time limit, period.  
**plazoleta**, *f.*, little square, place, spot.  
**plegar**, to fold.  
**plomo**, *m.*, lead; **a —**, *adv.*, perpendicularly.  
**pluma**, *f.*, pen, feather.  
**plural**, *m.*, plural.  
**población**, *f.*, city, town, population.  
**pobre**, *adj.*, poor; *subst.*, poor man; **a lo —**, as though poor, after the fashion of the poor.  
**poco**, *adj. and pron.*, little, few; *adv.*, little, slightly; **—a —**, *adv.*, little by little.  
**podar**, to prune, trim.  
**podenco**, *m.*, harrier.  
**poder**, to be able, can, accomplish; **a más no —**, to the utmost; **no — menos de**, not to be able to help; *subst. m.*, power; **obrar en el — (de uno)**, to be in (one's) hands, reach (one); **ser en el — (de uno)**, to receive (*speaking of letters*).  
**poderoso**, *-a*, powerful.  
**podrir**, to rot, decay.  
**poema**, *m.*, poem.  
**Poema del Cid**, Poem of the Cid. (*A Spanish poem written about 1200.*)  
**poesía**, *f.*, poem, poetry (*used also in the plural*).  
**poeta**, *m.*, poet.  
**poético**, *-a*, poetic.  
**policía**, *f.*, police.  
**política**, *f.*, politics.  
**polvo**, *m.*, dust; **haber —**, to be dusty.  
**polvoroso**, *-a*, dusty.  
**pollino**, *m.*, young ass.  
**pollo**, *m.*, chicken.

- pompón**, *m.*, pompon.  
**poner**, to place, put, don, set, lay; —**se**, to be placed, put, set, become.  
**popular**, *adj.*, popular.  
**poquito**, —**a** (*dim. of poco*), very small, little, few.  
**por**, *prep.*, by, for, in, from, through, along, throughout, regarding, as, per, to, disposed to, yet to be, for the sake of, in behalf of; — **afuera**, *adv.*, without, on the outside; — **allí**, *adv.*, over yonder, yonder; — **cima de**, *prep.*, above, over; — **con-siguiente**, *adv.*, consequently; — **delante (de)**, *prep.*, in front of; — **dentro**, *adv.*, within, on the inside; — **entre**, *prep.*, through, among; — **el estilo**, of the same sort (*or* style); — **lo menos**, at least; — **miedo que**, *conj.*, for fear that; — **que**, *conj.*, in order that; ¿— **qué?** *adv. and conj.*, why? — . . . **que**, *conj.*, however.  
**porción**, *f.*, portion, part.  
**pormenor**, *m.*, detail.  
**poro**, *m.*, pore.  
**porque**, *conj.*, because, for.  
**¿por qué?** (*see por*).  
**portador**, *m.*, bearer.  
**portal**, *m.*, gateway, entrance.  
**portalón**, *m.*, large gateway, entrance.  
**portar**, to carry, bear, comport.  
**porte**, *m.*, postage, bearing, carriage.  
**portezuela**, *f.*, carriage door.  
**Portugal**, *m.*, Portugal.  
**porvenir**; **lo** —, the future.  
**posada**, *f.*, inn, hotel.  
**poseer**, to possess, own.  
**posesión**, *f.*, possession.  
**posesivo**, —**a**, possessive.  
**posible**, *adj.*, possible.  
**posición**, *f.*, position.  
**postre**, *m.*, dessert.  
**postrer** (*see postrero*).  
**postrero**, —**a**, last.  
**potro**, *m.*, colt, young horse.  
**práctica**, *f.*, practice.  
**pradera**, *f.*, prairie, meadow.  
**Prado**, Prado (*a walk in Madrid*).  
**preceder**, to precede.  
**preceptor**, *m.*, tutor.  
**precio**, *m.*, price.  
**precioso**, —**a**, precious.  
**precipitadamente**, *adv.*, hastily.  
**precisamente**, *adv.*, precisely, exactly.  
**precisión**, *f.*, precision, exactitude.  
**preciso**, —**a**, necessary, urgent.  
**precursor**, *m.*, precursor, forerunner, herald.  
**predecir**, to predict.  
**predicador**, *m.*, preacher; **padre** —, preacher.  
**preferencia**, *f.*, preference, choice.  
**preferir**, to prefer.  
**pregunta**, *f.*, question, inquiry.  
**preguntar**, to ask (*a question*), inquire; —**se**, to wonder.  
**prelado**, *m.*, prelate, ecclesiastic.  
**prematuramente**, *adv.*, prematurely.  
**premio**, *m.*, prize.  
**prenda**, *f.*, pledge, pawn, token; **en** —, as security, in pawn; —**s de vestir**, articles of dress, garments, clothes.  
**prender**, to please, attract.  
**prender**, to seize, catch, take, arrest.  
**preocupar**, to preoccupy, concern.  
**preparar**, to prepare.  
**preposición**, *f.*, preposition.  
**presa**, *f.*, seizure, hold, fang, mill-dam, weir, prey; **hacer** —, to set the teeth in.  
**presbítero**, *m.*, priest.  
**presencia**, *f.*, presence.  
**presenciar**, to be present at, behold, witness.  
**presentación**, *f.*, presentation, introduction.  
**presentar**, to present, introduce.  
**presente**, *adj.*, present; *subst. m.*, present.  
**preservar**, to preserve, keep.  
**presidencial**, *adj.*, presidential, of the presiding officer.  
**presidente**, *m.*, president, presiding officer.

- presidio**, *m.*, prison, jail.  
**presidir**, to preside.  
**preso**, -a (*adj. pp. of prender*), seized, arrested.  
**prestado**, -a, lent, borrowed; **pedir** —, to borrow.  
**prestar**, to lend.  
**prestigioso**, -a, distinguished, eminent.  
**presurosamente**, *adv.*, hastily, rapidly.  
**pretensión**, *f.*, pretension, claim.  
**pretérito imperfecto**, *m.*, imperfect.  
**pretérito perfecto**, *m.*, preterit.  
**prevención**, *f.*, prejudice, police station.  
**prever**, to foresee.  
**prima**, *f.* (*see primo*).  
**primavera**, *f.*, spring.  
**primer** (*see primero*).  
**primero**, -a, first; *subst. m.*, first floor (*but never really the first floor in Spanish houses. Sometimes the 2d story and sometimes higher*).  
**primo**, -a, first; *subst. m. or f.*, cousin.  
**primordial**, *adj.*, first, original.  
**princesa**, *f.*, princess.  
**principal**, *adj.*, principal; *subst. m.*, principal floor (*in Spanish houses always the 2d floor above the street*).  
**principalmente**, *adv.*, principally.  
**príncipe**, *m.*, prince.  
**principiar**, to begin, commence.  
**principio**, *m.*, beginning, start; **a —s de**, *prep.*, about the beginning of; **al —**, *adv.*, at first.  
**prisa**, *f.*, hurry, haste, speed.  
**privación**, *f.*, privation, sacrifice.  
**probable**, *adj.*, probable.  
**probablemente**, *adv.*, probably.  
**probar**, to prove, try.  
**proceder**, to proceed.  
**prócer**, *m.*, nobleman.  
**procesión**, *f.*, procession.  
**proceso**, *m.*, trial.  
**procurar**, to try, seek, attempt.  
**producir**, to produce.  
**proeza**, *f.*, prowess, bravery.  
**profano**, -a, profane, secular.  
**proferir**, to proffer, pronounce, utter.  
**profesión**, *f.*, profession.  
**profesor**, *m.*, professor, teacher.  
**profesora**, *f.*, professor, teacher.  
**profundamente**, *adv.*, profoundly.  
**profundo**, -a, profound, deep.  
**programa**, *m.*, program.  
**prolongar**, to prolong.  
**promesa**, *f.*, promise.  
**prometer**, to promise.  
**pronombre**, *m.*, pronoun.  
**pronosticar**, to prognosticate, foretell, predict.  
**pronto**, *adv.*, soon; **de —**, *adv.*, all of a sudden, immediately.  
**pronunciación**, *f.*, pronunciation.  
**pronunciar**, to pronounce.  
**propagar**, to spread, propagate.  
**propiedad**, *f.*, property.  
**propietario**, -a, proprietary.  
**propina**, *f.*, tip (*money given in return for favors*).  
**propio**, -a, proper, suitable, own, self.  
**proponer**, to propose.  
**propósito**, *m.*, purpose, design, intention; **a —**, *adv.*, apropos; **a — para**, *prep.*, fit for, likely to.  
**prosa**, *f.*, prose, discourse.  
**proscribir**, to proscribe.  
**proseguir**, to pursue.  
**prosperidad**, *f.*, prosperity.  
**protector**, *m.*, protector.  
**proteger**, to protect.  
**proveer**, to provide.  
**providencia**, *f.*, providence.  
**provincia**, *f.*, province.  
**provocar**, to provoke, arouse, excite.  
**proximidad**, *f.*, proximity, nearness.  
**próximo**, -a, next, nearest.  
**proyectarse**, to be cast (*or thrown*).  
**prueba**, *f.*, proof.  
**psicológico**, -a, psychological.  
**publicación**, *f.*, publication.  
**publicar**, to publish.  
**público**, -a, public; *subst. m.*, public.  
**pudrir**, to putrefy, rot, decay.  
**pueblo**, *m.*, town, people.  
**punte**, *m.*, bridge.  
**pueril**, *adj.*, boyish, childish, puerile.  
**puerta**, *f.*, door, gate, gateway.

**Puerta del Sol**, Gate of the Sun (*the main public square in Madrid*).

**puerto**, *m.*, port, harbor.

**Puerto Rico**, Porto Rico.

**pues**, *conj.*, since, for, then, therefore, but; ¡—! *int.*, well!

**puesto**, —a (*adj. pp. of poner*), placed, put, arranged; *subst. m.*, position, place, stand, cabstand; — **que**, *conj.*, since.

¡puf! *int.* (*expressing aversion*), ugh!

**pugnar**, to fight, struggle.

**pulcro**, —a, beautiful, neat, graceful.

**pulmones**, *m. pl.*, lungs.

**punta**, *f.*, point, tip; **sobre la — de los pies**, on the tips of the toes.

**punto**, *m.*, point, period (*in punctuation*); — **de apoyo**, place of support; **a — de**, *prep.*, at (*or on*) the point of; **en —**, *adv.*, exactly, precisely, sharp.

**puntuación**, *f.*, punctuation.

**puntualmente**, *adv.*, punctually.

**puñal**, *m.*, dagger.

**puñetazo**, *m.*, blow with the fist.

**puño**, *m.*, cuff, fist.

**pupila**, *f.*, pupil, eye.

**pupilo**, *m.*, border.

**puro**, —a, pure; (*of coffee*), black, without milk; *subst. m.*, cigar (*as distinguished from cigarette*).

## Q

**que**, *rel. pron. and adj.*, who, that, which, whom; **el (la, lo, los, las) —**, *rel. pron.*, who, which, whom; *conj.* (*for porque*), for, that, so that, in order that, whether, than, but; **antes (de) —**, *conj.*, before; **a — (for apuesto a que)**, I bet; **así —**, *conj.*, as soon as; **bien —**, *conj.*, although; **como —**, *conj.*, as if; **desde —**, *conj.*, since; **alguno — otro**, *adj. and pron.*, some or other, an occasional.

¿**qué?** *inter. pron. and adj.*, what? which? ¿— **tal?** how? (*used instead of ¿cómo?* to inquire after the quality or condition of a person or thing).

**quebrado**, —a (*adj. pp. of quebrar*), broken; **número —**, fraction.

**quebrar**, to break.

**quedar(se)**, to remain, stay, stop; — **se con**, to keep; — **en lo dicho**, to agree.

**quehacer**, *m.*, duty, chore.

**queja**, *f.*, complaint.

**quejarse (de)**, to complain.

**quejido**, *m.*, complaint, moan.

**quemar**, to burn.

**querer**, to wish, want, desire, like, love; — **decir**, to mean.

**querido**, —a (*adj. pp. of querer*), loved, dear, beloved.

**queso**, *m.*, cheese.

¡**quíá!** *int.* (*expressing indignant denial*), why no! of course not!

**quien**, *rel. pron.*, who, whom.

¿**quién?** *inter. pron.*, who? whom?

**quienquiera**, *pron.*, whoever, who-soever.

**quieto**, —a, quiet, still.

**Quijote**, *m.*, Quixote, Quijote.

**quimera**, *f.*, chimera, wild fancy.

**quince**, *adj.*, fifteen, fifteenth.

**quincena**, *f.*, fifteen, group of fifteen.

**quincuagésimo**, —a, fiftieth.

**quingentésimo**, —a, five hundredth.

**quinientos**, —as, *adj.*, five hundred, five hundredth.

**quinqué**, *m.*, lamp.

**quintana**, *f.*, esplanade.

**quinto**, —a, fifth.

**quintuplicado**, —a (*adj. pp. of quintuplicar*), quintuple, fivefold.

**quíntuplo**, —a, quintuple, fivefold.

**quitar**, remove, take away, quit;

¡**quita!** or ¡**quítese V.!** *int.*, quit! get out!

**Quito**, *(a city of about 80,000 inhabitants, the capital of Ecuador, South America)*.

**quizá(s)**, *adv.*, perhaps.

## R

**rabia**, *f.*, rage.

**rabo**, *m.*, tail.

**radical**, *adj.*, radical.

**raer**, to erase.

**Rafael**, *m.*, Raphael.  
**raíz**, *f.*, root.  
**rama**, *f.*, branch.  
**ramo**, *m.*, bouquet, bunch, limb.  
**Ramón**, *m.*, Raymond.  
**rápidamente**, *adv.*, rapidly.  
**rápido**, *m.*, fast express-train.  
**raro**, *-a*, rare, strange; **rara vez**, *adv.*, rarely, seldom.  
**raso**, *m.*, satin.  
**rastro**, *m.*, trace.  
**rastrajo**, *m.*, stubble.  
**rato**, *m.*, while, space of time; **mucho** —, a long while.  
**rayar**, to erase, streak, line, border on, begin, appear.  
**rayo**, *m.*, ray, beam.  
**razón**, *f.*, reason, right, intelligence; **tener** —, to be right; **no tener** —, to be wrong.  
**real**, *adj.*, royal; *subst. m.*, real (*silver coin worth about five cents*).  
**realce**, *m.*, luster, splendor.  
**realmente**, *adv.*, really.  
**rebosar**, to overflow, run over, teem.  
**rebuznar**, to bray.  
**recaer**, to fall back, turn.  
**recibir**, to receive.  
**recién** (*see recientemente*).  
**recientemente** (*sometimes recién*), *adv.*, recently.  
**reclamar**, to claim.  
**recobrar**, to recover.  
**recoger**, to pick up.  
**recolección**, *f.*, harvest, gathering, recollection.  
**recomendar**, to recommend.  
**reconocer**, to thank, be grateful for.  
**reconocido**, *-a* (*adj. pp. of reconocer*), grateful, thankful.  
**reconvención**, *f.*, accusation, reproach.  
**recordar**, to remember, remind of.  
**recorrer**, to run over, traverse, review.  
**recostar**, to lean (*or place*) against.  
**recto**, *-a*, straight, direct.  
**rector**, *m.*, rector, president.  
**recuerdo**, *m.*, remembrance, regard.  
**recurrir**, to recur, have recourse to.

**redoble**, *m.*, double beat.  
**redondo**, *-a*, round; — **al suelo**, flat on the ground.  
**reducir**, to reduce, confine, limit.  
**reexpedir**, to forward; **a** —, please forward.  
**refacción**, *f.*, repast.  
**referencia**, *f.*, reference; **por** —s, by hearsay.  
**referente** (**a**), *prep.*, referring (to).  
**referido**, *-a* (*adj. pp. of referir*), above mentioned.  
**referir**, to refer, relate, tell.  
**reflexión**, *f.*, reflexion.  
**reflexivo**, *-a*, reflexive.  
**reforma**, *f.*, reform, removal from office.  
**refrán**, *m.*, proverb, saying, adage.  
**refrenar**, to check.  
**refrescar**, to refresh.  
**refresco**, *m.*, refreshment, cold drink.  
**regalado**, *-a*, spoiled, pampered.  
**regalar**, to present, favor; —**se**, to regale one's self, live sumptuously.  
**regalo**, *m.*, gift, present.  
**regar**, to water.  
**regatear**, to bargain, haggle.  
**régimen**, *m.*, object.  
**regimiento**, *m.*, regiment.  
**región**, *f.*, region.  
**regir**, to rule, govern.  
**registrar**, to examine.  
**registro**, *m.*, register, record, book-mark.  
**regla**, *f.*, rule.  
**regocijo**, *m.*, rejoicing.  
**regordete**, *adj.*, chubby.  
**regresar**, to return.  
**regreso**, *m.*, return.  
**regular**, *adj.*, regular, fairly good; *adv.*, fairly well.  
**regularizar**, to regulate.  
**reina**, *f.*, queen.  
**reinar**, to reign.  
**reino**, *m.*, reign.  
**reír(se)** (**de**), to laugh (at).  
**relación**, *f.*, relation, narration; **con** — **a**, *prep.*, in comparison with.  
**relampaguear**, to lighten.

relatar, to relate.  
 relativamente, *adv.*, relatively.  
 relativo, -a, relative.  
 relato, *m.*, relation, narration, story, account.  
 relieve, *m.*, relief; alto —, high-relief; bajo —, bas-relief.  
 religioso, -a, religious, devout.  
 reliquia, *f.*, relic.  
 reloj, *m.*, clock, watch; — de agua, water-clock; — de bolsillo, watch; — de pared, (wall-) clock; — de sol, sun-dial.  
 relucir, to shine.  
 remediar, to help, remedy.  
 remedio, *m.*, remedy; no hay —, there is no help.  
 remendar, to repair, mend, patch.  
 remiso, -a, remiss, slow.  
 remitir, to send, forward, transmit.  
 remojado, -a (*adj. pp. of remojar*), soaked.  
 remolón, *adj.*, indolent, backwards.  
 rejuvenar, to rejuvenate, impart youth (to).  
 rencoroso, -a, rancorous.  
 rendir, to render, subdue, vanquish, wear out.  
 renovar, to renew.  
 reñir, to scold, reproach.  
 repartir, to distribute.  
 repente; de —, *adv.*, suddenly.  
 repertorio, *m.*, repertory.  
 repetición, *f.*, repetition.  
 repetir, to repeat.  
 replicar, to reply, respond, answer.  
 reponer, to replace, recover, reply.  
 representación, *f.*, representation, performance.  
 representar, to represent, present, play, perform.  
 reproducir, to reproduce.  
 república, *f.*, republic.  
 repuesto, -a (*adj. pp. of reponer*), recovered.  
 repugnancia, *f.*, loathing, reluctance.  
 repugnante, *adj.*, repugnant.  
 requerir, to require, notify, investigate.

requiem (*see* *misa*).  
 requisitoria, *f.*, request, requisitory.  
 rescate, *m.*, ransom.  
 resentimiento, *m.*, resentment.  
 residir, to reside, exist, lie.  
 resistencia, *f.*, resistance.  
 resistir, to resist, oppose.  
 resolución, *f.*, resolution.  
 resolver (*se*), to resolve.  
 resoplar, to sniff, blow, breathe.  
 respectivo, -a, respective.  
 respetable, *adj.*, respectable.  
 respetar, to respect.  
 respetuoso, -a, respectful.  
 respiración, *f.*, respiration, breathing, breath.  
 respirar, to breathe.  
 responder, to respond, reply, answer.  
 respuesta, *f.*, response, reply.  
 restablecerse, to get well, be cured.  
 restante, *adj.*, remaining; *subst.*, remainder.  
 restar, to remain, be left.  
 resueltamente, *adj.*, resolutely.  
 resuelto, -a (*adj. pp. of resolver*), resolved, resolute.  
 resulta, *f.*, result, consequence.  
 resultado, *m.*, result.  
 resurrección, *f.*, resurrection.  
 retablo, *m.*, altar-piece.  
 retardar, to delay.  
 retemblido, *m.*, start.  
 retirarse, to withdraw, retire.  
 retorcer, to twist; —se, to writhe, twist about, twist and turn.  
 retribuir, to remunerate, pay.  
 retroceder, to step back, fall back, yield, retreat.  
 reunión, *f.*, gathering.  
 reunir, to join, bring together; —se, to gather (together).  
 rever, to see again.  
 reverendo, -a, reverend.  
 revista, *f.*, review, magazine.  
 revolcarse, to roll, wallow, writhe.  
 revolotear, to flutter, flit.  
 rey, *m.*, king, monarch; Reyes (Magos), Magi, Wise Men; el Día de los —, Epiphany (Jan. 6).  
 rezar, to pray.

riachuelo, *m.*, stream, brook.  
 rico, *-a*, rich.  
 ridículo, *m.*, ridicule.  
 rígido, *-a*, rigid.  
 rima, *f.*, rhyme; *pl.*, rhymes, poetry.  
 rincón, *m.*, corner.  
 riña, *f.*, fight, quarrel; — *de gallos*, cock-fight.  
 río, *m.*, river.  
 risa, *f.*, laugh, laughter.  
 robar, to rob.  
 Roberto, *m.*, Robert.  
 Rocinante, *m.*, Rocinante (*Don Quixote's* horse).  
 rocío, *m.*, dew.  
 rodar, to roll, whirl, wander.  
 rodear (*a*), to surround, encircle.  
 rodilla, *f.*, knee; *de* — *s*, on one's knees, kneeling.  
 roer, to gnaw.  
 rogar, to ask (*a favor*), request, beseech.  
 rojo, *-a*, red.  
 rollar, to roll, wrap.  
 Roma, Rome.  
 romano, *-a*, Roman.  
 romanza, *f.*, romance, ballad, song.  
 romería, *f.*, pilgrimage.  
 romper, to break, break out (*or forth*), tear.  
 ropa, *f.*, dress, clothing, clothes; — *exterior*, outer clothing; — *interior*, underclothing.  
 rosa, *f.*, rose.  
 rostro, *m.*, face.  
 roto, *-a* (*adj. pp. of romper*), broken, worn out.  
 rubio, *-a*, fair, golden, blonde.  
 rudo, *-a*, sturdy, unpolished.  
 ruego, *m.*, prayer, entreaty.  
 ruido, *m.*, noise, empty sound (*or show*), clamor.  
 ruina, *f.*, ruin.  
 ruinoso, *-a*, ruinous.  
 rumbo, *m.*, course, way.  
 rumor, *m.*, sound, noise.  
 rural, *adj.*, rural.  
 rústico, *-a*, rustic; *subst. m.*, rustic, countryman.  
 Ruy, *m.*, Roderic.

## S

sábado, *m.*, Saturday.  
 sábana, *f.*, sheet.  
 saber, to know, know how, learn.  
 sabio, *-a*, wise, learned; *subst. m.*, sage, wise man.  
 sacar, to draw out, bring forth, extract, produce.  
 sacramento, *m.*, sacrament.  
 sacrificar, to sacrifice.  
 sagrado, *-a*, holy, sacred; *Sagrada Forma*, (*la*), *f.*, the Host.  
 sal, *f.*, salt.  
 sala, *f.*, hall, large room; — *de espera*, waiting room; — *de recibo*, reception room; *Sala*, court.  
 salado, *-a*, witty, clever.  
 Salamanca, Salamanca (*a city of some 25,000 inhabitants, situated on the Tormes, capital of the province of Salamanca, Spain*).  
 salero, *m.*, gracefulness (*lit. 'salt-cellar'*).  
 salir, to go out, come out, leave.  
 salón, *m.*, drawing-room, reception-room.  
 salpicar, to sprinkle.  
 salsa, *f.*, sauce, gravy, dressing.  
 salto, *m.*, leap.  
 salud, *f.*, health.  
 saludable, *adj.*, wholesome.  
 saludar, to greet, bow, give (one's) regards to, salute.  
 saludo, *m.*, greeting, bow, salutation.  
 salvaje, *adj.*, savage, wild.  
 salvo, *prep.*, except, save.  
 San (*see santo*).  
 Sancho, *m.*, Sancho; — *Panza*, *m.*, Sancho Panza (*Don Quixote's squire*).  
 San Fernando, la Puerta de, the Gate of St. Ferdinand (*ancient gate of Seville, to the north of the city*).  
 San Francisco el Grande, St. Francis the Grand (*a handsome church in the southwestern part of Madrid*).  
 sangre, *f.*, blood.



**sanguinario**, -a, bloody, sanguinary, bloodthirsty.

**San Ildefonso**, *m.*, St. Alphonsus.

**San Isidro**, *m.*, Saint Isidore (*the patron saint of Madrid*).

**San Jerónimo**, *m.*, St. Jerome.

**San Joaquín**, *m.*, St. Joachim.

**San Sebastián**, San Sebastián (*a city of about 92,000 inhabitants, a seaport on the Bay of Biscay, and capital of the Basque province of Guipuzcoa. It is the summer resort of the Spanish court*).

**San Sulpicio**, *m.*, St. Sulpice.

**Santa Cruz**, *f.*, Santa Cruz (*a tower in Madrid*).

**Santander**, Santander (*a city of some 64,000 inhabitants, situated on a harbor of the Bay of Biscay, capital of the province of Santander*).

**Santiago**, *m.*, Santiago.

**Santiago (de Compostela)**, Santiago [de Compostela] (*a city of some 24,000 inhabitants, in the province of Corunna, northwestern Spain*).

**santiguarse**, to cross one's self.

**santo**, -a, saintly, holy; **Jueves**

**Santo**, *m.*, Maundy Thursday;

**Semana Santa**, *f.*, Holy Week;

**Tierra Santa**, *f.*, Holy Land;

*subst. m. or f.*, saint; **Día de Todos los Santos**, All Saints' Day.

**santuario**, *m.*, sanctuary, shrine.

**San Vicente, la Puerta de**, the Gate of St. Vincent (*formerly situated on the paseo of that name; removed to the Park of Madrid*).

**sargento**, *m.*, sergeant.

**sastre**, *m.*, tailor.

**sastrería**, *f.* tailor's shop.

**sátira**, *f.*, satire.

**satisfactorio**, -a, satisfactory.

**sazón**, *f.*, season, time; **a la** —, at that time.

**se**, *pers. pron.*, himself, herself, itself, yourself; to himself, herself, itself, yourself.

**sea . . . sea**, *conj.*, whether . . . or; — **que**, *conj.*, if, whether; no — **que**, *conj.*, lest.

**Sebastián**, *m.*, Sebastian.

**secar**, to dry.

**sección**, *f.*, section.

**seco**, -a, dry.

**secretario**, *m.*, secretary.

**secreto**, *m.*, secret.

**sed**, *f.*, thirst; **tener** —, to be thirsty.

**seda**, *f.*, silk.

**sedería**, *f.*, silk fabric, silks.

**sediento**, -a, thirsty.

**segador**, reaper, harvester.

**segar**, to reap, mow.

**seguida; en** —, *adv.*, at once, immediately.

**seguidilla**, *f.*, seguidilla (*a merry Spanish dance tune*).

**seguir**, to follow, continue, go on, take.

**según**, *prep.*, according to, as; — (**que**), *conj.*, according as.

**segundo**, -a, second; *subst. m.*, second lieutenant.

**seguramente**, *adv.*, surely, certainly.

**seguro**, -a, sure, certain, faithful; **a buen** —, *adv.*, certainly, indubitably.

**seis**, *adj.*, six, sixth.

**sellar**, to stamp.

**semana**, *f.*, week; **Semana Santa**, Holy Week.

**sembrado**, *m.*, planted field.

**sembrar**, to sow.

**semejante**, *adj.*, similar, like, such (*a*).

**seminario**, *m.*, seminary, school.

**sencillo**, -a, simple.

**senda**, *f.*, path.

**sendos**, -as, one for each, each one, as many.

**sensibilidad**, *f.*, sensibility, feeling.

**sentar**, to seat, become, suit; — **se**, to sit down.

**sentencia**, *f.*, sentence, decree.

**sentido**, *m.*, sense, meaning.

**sentimiento**, *m.*, sentiment, regret.

**sentir**, to feel, be sorry for; **lo**

**siento mucho**, I am very sorry;

**lo mucho que siento**, how sorry I am.

**seña**, *f.*, sign, signal; *pl.*, address, description, signs.

**señal**, *m.*, sign, signal.

**señalar**, to point out, indicate.

**señor**, *m.*, gentleman, lord, master; (*as term of address*) sir, Mr.

**señora**, *f.*, lady, wife; (*as term of address*) madam, Mrs.

**señorita**, *f.*, young (unmarried) lady; (*as term of address*) miss.

**señorito**, *m.*, young man, young gentleman; (*as term of address*) master, sir.

**separar**, to separate.

**septiembre**, *m.*, September.

**séptimo**, *-a*, seventh.

**septingentésimo**, *-a*, seven hundredth.

**septuagenario**, *-a*, septuagenarian (70 years old).

**septuagésimo**, *-a*, seventieth.

**sequedad**, *f.*, dryness, indifference.

**ser**, to be, exist; **a no** — **por**, *prep.*, had it not been for; **a no** — **que**, *conj.*, unless.

**serenarse**, to grow calm.

**serenidad**, *f.*, serenity.

**sereno**, *-a*, serene, calm, placid; *subst. m.*, night-watchman.

**serie**, *f.*, series.

**serio**, *-a*, serious.

**sermón**, *m.*, sermon.

**serrar**, to saw.

**servicio**, *m.*, service, duty; **de** —, on duty.

**servidor**, *m.*, servant.

**servilleta**, *f.*, napkin.

**servir**, to serve; — **se**, to please (or be pleased) to . . .; to kindly . . .; — **se de**, to make use of.

**sesenta**, *adj.*, sixty, sixtieth.

**seso**, *m.*, brain; **la tapa de los** — **s**, skull.

**sesto**, *-a* (*see sexto*).

**setecientos**, *-as*, *adj.*, seven hundred, seven hundredth.

**setenta**, *adj.*, seventy, seventieth.

**sétimo**, *-a* (*see séptimo*).

**Sevilla**, Seville (*a city of about 155,000 inhabitants, the capital of Andalusia and of the province of Seville, southern Spain*).

**sexagésimo**, *-a*, sixtieth.

**sexcentésimo**, *-a*, six hundredth.

**sexto**, *-a*, sixth.

**sí**, *pers. pron.*, himself, herself, itself, yourself, themselves, yourselves; *adv.*, yes.

**si**, *conj.*, if, whether.

**siega**, *f.*, reaping, mowing.

**siempre**, *adv.*, always, ever, still, continually; — **que**, *conj.*, whenever, provided that.

**sierra**, *f.*, saw, mountain, mountain range.

**siesta**, *f.*, siesta, afternoon nap; **dormir la** —, to take the afternoon nap.

**siete**, *adj.*, seven, seventh.

**sifón**, *m.*, underground conduit, siphon.

**siglo**, *m.*, century.

**significación**, *f.*, meaning.

**significar**, to mean, denote, designate.

**siguiente**, *adj.*, following, next.

**sílaba**, *f.*, syllable.

**silabeo**, *m.*, syllabication.

**silbar**, to whistle.

**silbido**, *m.*, whistle, whistling.

**silencio**, *m.*, silence.

**silencioso**, *-a*, silent.

**silla**, *f.*, chair, seat.

**simpático**, *-a*, likeable, attractive.

**simple**, *adj.*, single, simple.

**sin**, *prep.*, without; — **embargo**, *adv.*, however, nevertheless; — **embargo de que**, *conj.*, notwithstanding that; — **que**, *conj.*, without.

**sinceramente**, *adv.*, sincerely.

**sincero**, *-a*, sincere.

**singular**, *m.*, singular.

**sino**, *conj.*, but, but rather, until;

**no** { **sólo**  
 **solamente** } . . . —, *conj.*, not only . . . but.

**siquier(a)**, *adv.* (*usually used with neg.*), even.

**sistema**, *m.*, system.

**sitio**, *m.*, place, seat, siege.

**situación**, *f.*, situation.

**smoking**, *m.*, dinner-coat, tuxedo.

**¡so!** *int.*, whoa! stand still!

sobre, *m.*, envelope.  
 sobre, *prep.*, over, upon, above; —  
 todo, *adv.*, above all, especially.  
 sobrehumano, *-a*, superhuman.  
 sobremanera, *adv.*, beyond measure, excessively.  
 sobrenombre, *m.*, surname, nickname.  
 sobrentender, to understand.  
 sobreponerse (*a*), to overcome, get the better (of).  
 sobretodo, *m.*, overcoat.  
 sobrina, *f.*, niece.  
 sobrino, *m.*, nephew.  
 sociedad, *f.*, society.  
 socio, *m.*, member, partner.  
 socorro, *m.*, aid, help; casa de —, emergency hospital; ¡—! *int.*, help!  
 sogá, *f.*, rope.  
 sol, *m.*, sun; haber —, to be sunny; hacer —, to be sunny.  
 solamente, *adv.*, only; no — ... sino, *conj.*, not only ... but.  
 soldado, *m.*, soldier.  
 soledad, *f.*, solitude.  
 solemne, *adj.*, solemn.  
 solemnidad, *f.*, solemnity, impressiveness.  
 soler, to be wont, accustomed.  
 solitario, *-a*, solitary, lonely.  
 solo, *-a*, alone, only, single, solitary.  
 sólo, *adv.*, only; no — ... sino, *conj.*, not only ... but.  
 soltar, to free, untie, loosen, utter; — la carcajada, to burst out laughing.  
 solver, to solve, loosen.  
 sollozar, to sob.  
 sollozo, *m.*, sob.  
 sombra, *f.*, shadow.  
 sombrero, *m.*, hat; — de copa, silk hat.  
 son, *m.*, sound.  
 sonar, to ring, sound, be heard.  
 soneto, *m.*, sonnet.  
 sonido, *m.*, sound.  
 sonreír, to smile.  
 sonrisa, *f.*, smile.  
 sonrosar, to color rose, blush.

sonsonete, *m.*, drone, rattle.  
 soñar (*con*), to dream (of).  
 sopa, *f.*, soup.  
 soportal, *m.*, portico; arco de —, arcade.  
 soportar, to bear, endure.  
 sordo, *-a*, deaf.  
 sordomudo, *-a*, deaf and dumb; *subst. m. or f.*, deaf-mute.  
 sorprender, to surprise.  
 sorpresa, *f.*, surprise.  
 sosegar, to appease, calm; —se, to compose one's self.  
 sosiego, *m.*, repose, calm.  
 sospechar, to suspect.  
 sostén, *m.*, support.  
 sostener, to support, maintain, carry.  
 su, *poss. adj.*, his, her, its, your; *pl.*, their, your.  
 subida, *f.*, ascent.  
 subir, to ascend, mount, amount to, bring up.  
 subjuntivo, *m.*, subjunctive.  
 suceder, to succeed, happen, follow.  
 sucesión, *f.*, sequence.  
 sucesivamente, *adv.*, successively, one after the other.  
 suceso, *m.*, event, incident.  
 sucio, *-a*, dirty, soiled.  
 sudor, *m.*, sweat, perspiration.  
 sudoroso, *-a*, sweaty.  
 suelo, *m.*, floor, ground, soil.  
 sueño, *m.*, dream, sleep; tener —, to be sleepy.  
 suerte, *f.*, fate, sort, way, skilful manœuvre (of a bull-fighter).  
 sufrido, *-a*, patient.  
 sufrimiento, *m.*, suffering.  
 sufrir, to suffer, undergo, endure.  
 sugerir, to suggest.  
 sujetar, to hold fast, subject, subdue, fasten, keep to.  
 sujeto, *m.*, subject, person.  
 Sulpicio, *m.*, Sulpice.  
 suma, *f.*, sum, amount.  
 sumamente, *adv.*, exceedingly.  
 sumaria, *f.*, investigation, trial.  
 sumo, *-a*, highest, utmost.  
 superior, *adj.*, superior, upper.  
 superioridad, *f.*, superiority.

**superlativo**, *m.*, superlative.  
**súplica**, *f.*, entreaty.  
**suplicante**, *adj.*, supplicating.  
**suplicar**, to beg, beseech.  
**suponer**, to suppose.  
**supóngase que**, *conj.*, supposing that.  
**suponiendo que**, *conj.*, supposing that.  
**supremacía**, *f.*, supremacy.  
**supremo**, *-a*, supreme, final.  
**suprimir**, to suppress.  
**supuesto**, *m.*, supposition.  
**supuesto que**, *conj.*, supposing that.  
**sur**, *m.*, south.  
**suscribir**, to subscribe.  
**suscrito**, *-a* (*adj. pp. of suscribir*), subscribed, subscribing.  
**suspender**, to suspend.  
**suspirar**, to sigh.  
**suspiro**, *m.*, sigh.  
**sustancial**, *adj.*, substantial.  
**sustantivo**, *-a*, substantive; *subst.*, *m.*, noun, substantive.  
**sustentar**, to support, sustain, nourish.  
**susto**, *m.*, fright, scare; **dar un —**, to frighten, startle.  
**suyo**, *-a*, *poss. adj. and pron.*, his, her (hers), your (yours), their (theirs) (*the def. art. usually precedes in the pronominal form*).

## T

**tabaco**, *m.*, tobacco.  
**taberno**, *m.*, tavern.  
**tacto**, *m.*, touch, sense of touch.  
**tafetán**, *m.*, taffeta, thin silk.  
**tal**, *adj. and pron.*, such, such a; **¿qué —?** how? (*used instead of ¿cómo?* to inquire after the quality or condition of a person or thing), how goes it? (*fam.*); — **vez**, *adv.*, perhaps; — **que**, *conj.*, such that; **con — (de) que**, *conj.*, provided that.  
**talento**, *m.*, talent, ability.  
**talón**, *m.*, heel.  
**tallo**, *m.*, stem.  
**tamaño**, *-a*, as (*or so*) great, as (*or so*) large.

**también**, *adv.*, also, too.  
**tampoco**, *adv.*, not either, neither.  
**tan**, *adv.*, as, so; — **... que**, *conj.*, so ... that.  
**tanto**, *-a*, as much, so much; *pl.*, as (*or so*) many; **un —**, somewhat; — **y —**, so many a; — **... que**, *conj.*, so much ... that; **en — que**, *conj.*, while, in case that; **entre —**, *adv.*, meanwhile; **entre — que**, *conj.*, while.  
**tapa**, *f.*, top, cover; — **de los sesos**, skull.  
**tapar**, to protect, cover, obstruct.  
**tapia**, *f.*, wall, adobe wall.  
**tapujo**, *m.*, ambushade.  
**tardar**, to delay, take long, consume (*of time*).  
**tarde**, *f.*, afternoon; ¡**buenas —s!** good afternoon! **hasta la —**, until this afternoon; *adv.*, late; — **que temprano**, sooner or later.  
**tarea**, *f.*, task.  
**tartamudear**, to stammer, mutter.  
**taza**, *f.*, cup.  
**te**, *pers. pron.*, thee, to thee.  
**teatral**, *adj.*, theatrical.  
**teatro**, *m.*, theater.  
**tecla**, *m.*, key (*of a piano or other musical instrument*).  
**teclado**, *m.*, keyboard.  
**techo**, *m.*, ceiling.  
**tema**, *m.*, composition, theme.  
**temblar**, to tremble.  
**tembloroso**, *-a*, tremulous, trembling.  
**temer**, to fear.  
**temperatura**, *f.*, temperature.  
**temporada**, *f.*, period of time, while.  
**temprano**, *adv.*, early; **tarde que —**, sooner or later.  
**tenaz**, *adj.*, tenacious.  
**tender**, to stretch out, extend, tend.  
**tendero**, *m.*, storekeeper.  
**tenebroso**, *-a*, gloomy, dark.  
**tenedor**, *m.*, fork.  
**tener**, to have, hold, possess, keep, be the matter with; —

- a honra**, to have the honor;  
 — **la bondad de**, to be so kind as to; — **calor**, to be warm (*of animate beings*); — **celos**, to be jealous; — **frío**, to be cold (*of animate beings*); — **ganas**, to be desirous, inclined; — **hambre**, to be hungry; — **lugar**, to take place; — **miedo**, to be afraid; — **razón**, to be right; **no — razón**, to be wrong; — **sed**, to be thirsty; — **sueño**, to be sleepy; — **vergüenza**, to be ashamed; — **se**, to hold, stop.  
**tenor**, *m.*, tenor.  
**tentar**, to touch, try, tempt.  
**tenue**, *adj.*, faint.  
**teñir**, to dye.  
**tercer** (*see* **tercero**).  
**tercero**, —a, third.  
**terceto**, *m.*, tercet.  
**terciar**, to sling (sidewise) over one's shoulder.  
**tercio**, —a, third.  
**terciopelo**, *m.*, velvet.  
**Teresa**, *f.*, Theresa.  
**terminación**, *f.*, ending, end, termination.  
**terminado**, —a (*adj. pp. of terminar*), ending, ended.  
**terminar**, to end, finish.  
**término**, *m.*, term, form.  
**ternera**, *f.*, veal.  
**terrible**, *adj.*, terrible.  
**terror**, *m.*, terror.  
**tertulia**, *f.*, party, soirée; **hacer la —**, to spend the evening with.  
**tertulio**, *m.*, guest (*at a tertulia*).  
**tesoro**, *m.*, treasure.  
**testamento**, *m.*, will, testament.  
**ti**, *pers. pron.*, thee, to thee.  
**tía**, *f.*, aunt.  
**tiempo**, *m.*, time, tense, weather, period; **a un —**, *adv.*, at the same time; **al poco —**, *adv.*, in a little while; **hacer buen —**, to be good weather; **hacer mal —**, to be bad weather; **hacer (un) — agradable**, to be pleasant.  
**tienda**, *f.*, shop, store, camp; **levantar —s**, to break up camp, go home.  
**tierno**, —a, tender.  
**tierra**, *f.*, earth, land.  
**tigre**, *m.*, tiger.  
**tímido**, —a, timid.  
**tinieblas**, *f. pl.*, darkness, night.  
**tío**, *m.*, uncle, old man.  
**tiple**, *f.*, soprano.  
**tirar**, to throw, throw away; — **por**, to draw, pull.  
**tiro**, *m.*, shot.  
**tirón**, *m.*, pull.  
**titular**, to entitle.  
**título**, *m.*, title.  
**tiza**, *f.*, chalk.  
**toalla**, *f.*, towel.  
**tocar**, to play, ring, touch, fall to the lot of.  
**todavía**, *adv.*, still, yet.  
**todo**, —a, *adj. and pron.*, all, whole, each, every; *pl. with def. art.*, all, every; — (**-a**) **cuanto** (**-a**), all that; **de —s modos**, *adv.*, anyway; **sobre —**, *adv.*, especially, above all; **por —as partes**, *adv.*, everywhere; — **el mundo**, everybody.  
**toitico**, —a, *for toditico* (*diminutive of todito, which is itself a diminutive of todo*), every bit of, the whole.  
**tole**; **tomar el —**, to hasten off.  
**tolerancia**, *f.*, tolerance.  
**¡toma!** *int.*, well, well! there! really!  
**tomar**, to take; — **parte**, to take part.  
**Tomás**, *m.*, Thomas.  
**tomate**, *m.*, tomato.  
**tono**, *m.*, tone.  
**tontería**, *f.*, folly, foolish action.  
**torcer**, to twist.  
**torero**, *m.*, bull-fighter.  
**tornar**, to turn, return; — **a**, to again . . .  
**torno**, *m.*, turn; **en — suyo**, about him (her, etc.); **en — de**, *prep.*, about.  
**toro**, *m.*, bull; **corrida de —s**, bull-fight; **los —s**, the bull-fight.  
**torpe**, *adj.*, dull, stupid.  
**torre**, *f.*, tower.  
**tortilla**, *f.*, omelet.  
**tosco**, —a, rough.

trabajar, to work.  
 trabajo, *m.*, work.  
 trabajosamente, *adv.*, painfully, laboriously.  
 trabuco, *m.*, blunderbuss, gun.  
 traducción, *f.*, translation.  
 traducir, to translate.  
 traer, to bring, carry.  
 traficar, to trade.  
 tragedia, *f.*, tragedy.  
 trágico, *-a*, tragical.  
 trago, *m.*, drink, swallow.  
 traidoramente, *adv.*, treacherously.  
 traje, *m.*, costume, suit of clothes, gown.  
 tramar, to plot, weave, arrange.  
 trance, *m.*, difficulty, peril, risk.  
 tranquilidad, *f.*, tranquillity, calmness.  
 tranquilizar, to calm, appease.  
 tranquilo, *-a*, calm, tranquil.  
 transcurrir, to pass by, elapse.  
 transeúnte, *m.*, passer-by.  
 transferir, to transfer, transport, move.  
 transformación, *f.*, transformation, change.  
 transformar, to transform, change.  
 transportar, to transport, convey, carry.  
 trapo; a todo —, with all his might.  
 tras, *prep.*, after.  
 trasegar, to decant, rack, draw off (wine from the lees).  
 trasladar, to move, remove.  
 trastear, to worry, excite (*the bull with a red flag or sword*).  
 tratamiento, *m.*, address.  
 tratar, to treat, try, discuss.  
 través, *m.*, inclination, bias; a — de, *prep.*, across, through; de —, *adv.*, sideways.  
 trazar, to trace, mark, lay out.  
 trece, *adj.*, thirteen, thirteenth.  
 treinta, *adj.*, thirty, thirtieth.  
 treintena, *f.*, thirty, group of thirty.  
 trémulo, *-a*, trembling.  
 tren, *m.*, train.  
 tres, *adj.*, three, third.  
 tresillo, *m.*, ombre (*card game played by three*).

treta, *f.*, trick, wile.  
 tricentésimo, *-a*, three hundredth.  
 trigal, *m.*, wheat-field.  
 trigésimo, *-a*, thirtieth.  
 trigo, *m.*, wheat.  
 triple, *adj.*, triple, threefold.  
 triplicado, *-a* (*adj. pp. of triplicar*), triple, threefold.  
 triplicar, to triple.  
 triptongo, *m.*, triphthong.  
 triste, *adj.*, sad.  
 tristeza, *f.*, sadness, melancholy.  
 triunfo, *m.*, triumph, victory.  
 trocar, to change, exchange.  
 tronar, to thunder.  
 tronco, *m.*, trunk (*of body or tree*).  
 trono, *m.*, throne.  
 tropa, *f.*, troops.  
 tropezar (*con*), to stumble (*against*), meet, find.  
 trozo, *m.*, selection, extract, piece.  
 tu, *poss. adj.*, thy, your.  
 tú, *pers. pron.*, thou, you.  
 tubo, *m.*, tube, can, tin box.  
 tumba, *f.*, tomb.  
 tunante, *m.*, rascal, rogue.  
 tupido, *-a* (*adj. pp. of tupir*), packed, dense, thick.  
 turbar, to disturb.  
 Turco, *m.*, Turk.  
 turrón, *m.*, nougat.  
 ¡tus tus! *int.* (*to dogs*), here, here! come here!  
 tuyo, *-a*, *poss. adj. and pron.*, thy, thine (*the def. art. usually precedes in the pronominal form*).

## U

¡uf! *int.* (*expressing weariness*), oh! ah!  
 ufano, *-a*, proud, happy.  
 último, *-a*, last, final; por —, *adv.*, finally.  
 un, *adj.* (*see uno*).  
 undécimo, *-a*, eleventh.  
 único, *-a*, *adj. and pron.*, only, sole, single, unique.  
 unidad, *f.*, unit, unity.  
 unión, *f.*, union; en — de, *prep.*, together with.  
 universidad, *f.*, university.

**universitario**, -a, university.  
**uno**, -a, *indef. art.*, a, an; — (-a), *adj. and pron.*, one, sole, only, uniform, some; (*in mathematics, the radical or root of a number*) one; **cada** —, *pron.*, each one, every one; —s (-as) **cuantos** (-as), *adj. and pron.*, a few, some; — **a otro**, one another, each other.  
**usar**, to use.  
**uso**, *m.*, use, employment.  
**usted** (V., Vd., U., Ud.), *pers. pron.*, you.  
**útil**, *adj.*, useful.

## V

**vaca**, *f.*, cow.  
**vacaciones**, *f. pl.*, vacation.  
**vacilación**, *f.*, hesitation.  
**vacío**, -a, empty.  
**vadear**, to ford, wade.  
**vagabundo**, -a, vagabond.  
**vago**, -a, vague, confused.  
**vajilla**, *f.*, table-service.  
**Valencia**, Valencia (*a city of about 233,000 inhabitants, capital of the province of Valencia, eastern Spain*).  
**valer**, to be worth; — **más**, to be better, worth more; —se, to avail one's self (of); ¡**Dios me valga!** (*or* ¡**válgame Dios!**), God help me! bless me! bless my soul!  
**valeroso**, -a, brave, bold.  
**valor**, *m.*, value.  
**valle**, *m.*, valley.  
**¡vamos!** *int.* (*expressing impatience or encouragement*), come, come! (*expressing surprise*) well!; — **a ver**, let us see.  
**vanidad**, *f.*, vanity.  
**vano**, -a, vain; **en** —, *adv.*, in vain.  
**vapor**, *m.*, steamer, steamship.  
**vaporoso**, -a, vaporous.  
**vara**, *f.*, yard, rod.  
**variable**, *adj.*, variable.  
**vario**, -a, *adj. and pron.*, various, several, a good many.  
**varonil**, *adj.*, manly, virile, masculine, vigorous.

**vasallo**, *m.*, vassal.  
**vascongado**, -a, Basque.  
**vaso**, *m.*, glass.  
**vaticinio**, *m.*, prophecy, prediction.  
**¡vaya!** *int.*, well, I declare! really! come now!  
**vecino**, *m.*, neighbor.  
**vecina**, *f.*, neighbor.  
**veinte**, *adj.*, twenty, twentieth.  
**veintena**, *f.*, twenty, group of twenty, score.  
**vejez**, *f.*, old age.  
**vela**, *f.* (**de armas**), vigil (at arms).  
**velar sus armas**, to watch one's arms, keep a vigil.  
**Velázquez, Diego Rodríguez de Silva**, Diego Rodríguez de Velázquez ([1599–1660]. *A celebrated Spanish painter*).  
**velo**, *m.*, veil.  
**velozmente**, *adv.*, rapidly, swiftly.  
**vencedor**, *m.*, conqueror.  
**vencer**, to conquer, overcome, outdo, surpass.  
**vendedor**, *m.*, seller, vender; — **de billetes**, ticket agent.  
**vender**, to sell.  
**vendimia**, *f.*, vintage.  
**venerable**, *adj.*, venerable.  
**venir**, to come.  
**venta**, *f.*, sale, roadside inn; — (**al por menor**, retail).  
**ventana**, *f.*, window.  
**ventanilla**, *f.*, ticket window.  
**ventear**, to blow (*of the wind*).  
**ventiscar**, to snow and blow.  
**ventura**, *f.*, luck, fortune.  
**ver**, to see; — **mundo**, to travel.  
**veranear**, to spend (*or* pass) the summer.  
**verano**, *m.*, summer.  
**veras**, *f. pl.*, sincerity, truth; **de** —, truly, really.  
**verbo**, *m.*, verb.  
**verdad**, *f.*, truth; ¿—? *or* ¿no es —? isn't it true?; **es** —, it is true.  
**verdadero**, -a, true, real, regular.  
**verde**, *adj.*, green.  
**vergüenza**, *f.*, shame; **tener** —, to be ashamed.

**verja**, *f.*, railing, grating, iron fence.  
**versado**, *-a*, versed, experienced.  
**verso**, *m.*, verse.  
**verter**, to shed, pour, spill.  
**vertiginoso**, *-a*, dizzying, giddy.  
**vestido**, *m.*, clothing, suit of clothes, clothes, dress.  
**vestir**, to clothe, dress, don, put on; **prendas de** —, articles of dress, garments, clothes.  
**vez**, *f.*, time (*recurrence*); **a la** —, *adv.*, at once, at the same time; **de — en cuando**, *adv.*, from time to time; **otra** —, *adv.*, again; **rara** —, *adv.*, rarely, seldom; **tal** —, *adv.*, perhaps; **algunas veces**, *adv.*, sometimes; **en — de**, *prep.*, instead of; **en — de que**, *conj.*, instead of.  
**vía**, *f.*, way, route, line, mode.  
**viajar**, to travel; *subst. m.*, traveling.  
**viaje**, *m.*, trip, journey, voyage; **ir de** —, to travel.  
**viajero**, *m.*, traveler.  
**vianda**, *f.*, viand, food.  
**víbora**, *f.*, viper, snake.  
**vibrante**, *adj.*, vibrating, resonant.  
**vibrar**, to vibrate, sound, be heard.  
**vicario**, *m.*, vicar.  
**Vicente**, *m.*, Vincent.  
**Vicentico** (*dim. of Vicente*), *m.*, little Vincent.  
**víctima**, *f.*, victim.  
**Victor**, *m.*, Victor.  
**vida**, *f.*, life.  
**viejo**, *-a*, old.  
**viento**, *m.*, wind; **haber** —, to be windy; **hacer** —, to be windy.  
**vientre**, *m.*, belly.  
**viernes**, *m.*, Friday.  
**vigésimo**, *-a*, twentieth.  
**vigoroso**, *-a*, vigorous, strong.  
**villano**, *m.*, serf, villain.  
**vinagre**, *m.*, vinegar.  
**vino**, *m.*, wine.  
**viña**, *f.*, vineyard.  
**Violante**, *f.*, Violanta.  
**violeta**, *f.*, violet.  
**violín**, *m.*, violin.  
**virgen**, *f.*, virgin; ¡— **santísima!** *int.*, for Heaven's sake! bless me!

**viruela**, *f.*, pock, smallpox; **picado** (*-a*) **de** —*s*, pock-marked.  
**visión**, *f.*, vision, sight.  
**visita**, *f.*, visit.  
**visitar**, to visit.  
**visiteo**, *m.*, visiting, making visits.  
**vista**, *f.*, view, sight, sense of sight; **a la** —, within sight; **hasta la** —, until we meet again, au revoir.  
**vistoso**, *-a*, brilliant, showy.  
**vital**, *adj.*, vital, of life.  
**viuda**, *f.*, widow.  
**viudo**, *m.*, widower.  
**vivamente**, *adv.*, quickly.  
**viveza**, *f.*, liveliness, gaiety.  
**vivificar**, to vivify, refresh.  
**vivir**, to live.  
**vivo**, *-a*, alive, lively.  
**vocación**, *f.*, vocation.  
**vocal**, *f.*, vowel.  
**vociferar**, to vociferate, shout.  
**volandas**; **en** —, in the air, as if flying.  
**volar**, to fly, soar.  
**volcar**, to upset, capsize.  
**voluntad**, *f.*, will.  
**volver**, to turn, return, come back (*or again*); —*a*, to again . . .; — **pies atrás**, to retrace one's steps.  
**vos**, *pers. pron.*, you, ye.  
**vosotros**, *pers. pron.*, you, ye.  
**voto**, *m.*, vow, desire, wish.  
**voz**, *f.*, voice, word; **dar voces**, to cry, call out.  
**vuelo**, *m.*, flight.  
**vuelta**, *f.*, turn, return; **a —s de**, *prep.*, in addition to, besides; **billete de ida y —**, round-trip ticket; **dar —a**, to go around; **dar media —**, to go half-way round; **ir de —**, to return.  
**vuestro**, *-a*, *adj. and pron.*, your (*the def. art. usually precedes in the pronominal form*).  
**vulgarmente**, *adv.*, commonly.  
**vulgo**, *m.*, public, general public.

## X

**Ximena**, *f.*, Ximena (*the wife of The Cid*).



## Y

**y**, *conj.* (becomes **e** before initial **i** or **hi** [not **hie**]), and.

**ya**, *adv.*, now, already; — . . . —, *conj.*, whether . . . or, sometimes . . . sometimes; — **que**, *conj.*, since.

**yacer**, to lie.

**yegua**, *f.*, mare, horse.

**yema**, *f.*, yolk (of an egg).

**yerba**, *f.*, herb, grass.

**yerno**, *m.*, son-in-law.

**yo**, *pers. pron.*, I.

## Z

**zaga**, *f.*, rear part (of anything);  
a la — **de**, *prep.*, behind.

**zahurda**, *f.*, hovel.

**zalamería**, *f.*, flattery.

**Zamora**, *f.*, Zamora (a town of some 16,500 inhabitants, situated on the Duero, capital of the province of Zamora, Spain).

**zapato**, *m.*, shoe.

**¡zape!** *int.*, scat!

**Zaragoza**, Saragossa (a city of some 111,000 inhabitants, situated on the Ebro, capital of the province of Saragossa, northern Spain).

**zarzuela**, *f.*, zarzuela, musical comedy.

**zorra**, *f.*, fox.

**zutano**, —a, *indef. pron.*, such a one, so and so.

# VOCABULARIO INGLÉS-ESPAÑOL

(English-Spanish Vocabulary)

## A

*a*, *indef. art.*, uno (un), -a.  
**abandon**, abandono, *m.*; **to** —, abandonar.  
**abandonment**, abandono, *m.*  
**abbreviation**, abreviatura, *f.*  
**able**; **be** —, poder.  
**about**, *prep.*, acerca (de), cerca (de), de, por, sobre; — **the beginning**, a principios; — **the end**, a fines; — **to**, *prep.*, para.  
**above**, *adv.*, arriba; *prep.*, ante, encima de, por cima de, sobre; — **all**, sobre todo; — **mentioned**, referido, -a.  
**absolute**, absoluto, -a.  
**absolve**, absolver.  
**absorb**, absorber.  
**absorbed**, absorto, -a.  
**academic**, académico, -a.  
**accent**, acento, *m.*; **to** —, acentuar.  
**accented**, acentuado, -a.  
**access**, acceso, *m.*  
**accompaniment**, acompañamiento, *m.*  
**accompany**, acompañar.  
**accomplish**, cumplir, poder.  
**according**; — **as**, *conj.*, a medida que, según (que); — **to**, *prep.*, conforme a, según.  
**account**, cuenta, *f.*, relato, *m.*; **on** — **of**, a causa de.  
**accusation**, acusación, *f.*  
**accusative**, acusativo, *m.*  
**accuse**, acusar.  
**accustom**, acostumbrar.  
**accustomed**; **be** —, soler.  
**ache**, doler.  
**acquaintance**, conocimiento, *m.*  
**acquire**, adquirir.  
**across**, *prep.*, a través de.  
**act**, acto, *m.*  
**action**, acción, *f.*

**actor**, actor, *m.*  
**actually**, *adv.*, efectivamente.  
**adage**, refrán, *m.*  
**addition**; **in** — **to**, *prep.*, además de.  
**address**, discurso, *m.*, señas, *f. pl.*, tratamiento, *m.*; **to** —, dirigirse (a).  
**adjectival**, adjetivo, -a.  
**adjective**, adjetivo, -a; *subst.*, adjetivo, *m.*  
**adjust**, ajustar.  
**admire**, admirar.  
**admirer**, aficionado, *m.*  
**admit**, admitir.  
**adoration**, adoración, *f.*  
**adore**, adorar.  
**adorn**, adornar, engalanar.  
**advance**, adelantar, avanzar.  
**adventure**, aventura, *f.*  
**adverb**, adverbio, *m.*  
**adverbial**, *adj.*, adverbial.  
**advise**, aconsejar.  
**affair**, negocio, *m.*  
**affection**, afición, *f.*  
**affectionate**, afecto, -a, afectuoso, -a, cariñoso, -a; **most** —, afectísimo, -a.  
**aforesaid**, dicho, -a.  
**afraid**; **be** —, tener miedo.  
**after**, *prep.*, desde, después de, detrás (de), tras; *conj.*, después (de) que.  
**afternoon**, tarde, *f.*; — **nap**, siesta, *f.*; **take the** — **nap**, dormir la siesta; **good** —! ¡buenas tardes!;  
**until this** —! ¡hasta la tarde!  
**afterward(s)**, *adv.*, después.  
**again**, *adv.*, de nuevo, otra vez;  
**to** . . . — (*with verb*), volver a . . . ; **see** —, rever.  
**against**, *prep.*, contra.  
**age**, edad, *f.*; **Middle Ages**, Edad Media.

**agent; ticket** —, vendedor (*m.*) de billetes.

**aggregate**, conjunto, *m.*

**ago**, *adv.*, atrás, ha, hace; **of long** —, de antaño.

**agree**, concertar, concordar, convenir.

**agreeable**, *adj.*, agradable.

**agreement**, concordancia, *f.*

**ah!** *int.*, ¡hola! (*written also* ¡ola!); (*expressing weariness*) ¡uf!

**ahead**, *adv.*, delante.

**aid**, ayudar.

**aim**, dirigir.

**air**, aire, *m.*

**alas!** *int.*, ¡ay!

**Albaicín**, (*The*), El Albaicín, *m.*

**Alcala Street**, Calle de Alcalá, *f.*

**alert**, alerta, *-a*; *adv.*, alerta.

**Algiers**, Árgel.

**alguazil**, alguacil, *m.*

**Alhambra**, (*The*), La Alhambra, *f.*

**alive; man** —, *int.*, ¡hombre!

**all**, *adj.*, entero, *-a*, todo, *-a*, todos

(*-as*) los (*-as*); *pron.*, todo, *-a*;

todos, *-as*; — **of a sudden**, *adv.*,

de pronto; — **right!** *int.*, ¡bueno!

**All Souls' Day**, Día de Difuntos;

— **that**, *rel. pron.*, cuanto, todo

cuanto; **above** —, *adv.*, sobre to-

do; **not at** —, *adv.*, nada.

**allow**, dejar, permitir.

**allusion**, alusión, *f.*

**almost**, *adv.*, casi.

**alms**, limosna, *f.*

**alone**, solo, *-a*.

**along**, *prep.*, por.

**aloud**, *adv.*, alto.

**alphabet**, alfabeto, *m.*

**Alphonso**, Alfonso, *m.*

**already**, *adv.*, ya.

**also**, *adv.*, también.

**altar**, altar, *m.*; — **-piece**, retablo, *m.*

**alternately**, *adv.*, alternativamente.

**although**, *conj.*, aunque, bien que.

**always**, *adv.*, siempre.

**amateur**, aficionado, *m.*

**amen!** *int.*, ¡amén!

**America**, América, *f.*

**American**, americano, *-a*.

**among**, *prep.*, entre.

**amuse**, distraer, divertir, entretener.

**amusement**, diversión, *f.*, entretenimiento, *m.*

**amusing**, divertido, *-a*.

**an**, *indef. art.*, uno (*un*), *-a*.

**ancient**, antiguo, *-a*.

**and**, *conj.*, y (*becomes e before initial i or hi, but not hie*); — **so forth**, etcétera, *f.*

**Andalusia**, Andalucía, *f.*

**Andalusian woman**, Andaluza, *f.*

**anger**, ira, *f.*

**animal**, animal, *m.*

**animate**, animar.

**animated**, *adj.*, alegre.

**animation**, animación, *f.*

**announce**, anunciar.

**another**, *adj. and pron.*, otro, *-a*;

—'s, ajeno, *-a*; **of** —, ajeno, *-a*;

**one after** —, de corrido.

**answer**, contestación, *f.*; **to** —,

contestar, responder.

**anterior**, anterior, *-a*.

**antiquity**, antigüedad, *f.*

**anxiety**, ansiedad, *f.*, ansia, *f.*

**anxious**, *adj.*, anhelante, ansioso, *-a*.

**any**, *adj. and pron.*, alguno (algún)

*-a*; — (**whatever**), *adj. and*

*pron.*, cualquiera, *pl.*, cuales-

quiera; — (**you please**), *adj.*

*and pron.*, cualquiera, *pl.*, cuales-

quiera; — **one**, *pron.*, alguien.

**anybody**, *pron.*, alguien.

**anything**, *pron.*, algo.

**anyway**, *adv.*, de todos modos.

**apocopation**, apócope, *f.*

**apogee**, apogeo, *m.*

**appear**, aparecer(se), asomar(se), parecer.

**appellation**, advocación, *f.*

**appertain**, atañer.

**appetite**, gana, *f.* (*more commonly*

*used in plural*), apetito, *m.*

**applause**, aplauso, *m.*

**apple**, manzana, *f.*

**approach**, acercar(se) de (*or a*).

**approbation**, aprobación, *f.*

**approval**, aprobación, *f.*

**April**, abril, *m.*

apron, delantal, *m.*  
 apropos, *adv.*, a propósito.  
 aqueduct, acueducto, *m.*  
 are; there —, hay.  
 arena, plaza, *f.*  
 argue, argüir.  
 arise, levantarse.  
 arm, arma, *f.*, brazo, *m.*; in (one's) —s, en brazos.  
 armada, armada, *f.*  
 army, ejército, *m.*  
 aroma, aroma, *m.*  
 arrange, colocar, poner.  
 arranged, puesto, —a.  
 arrest, detener, prender.  
 arrival, llegada, *f.*  
 arrive, llegar; — at dawn, amanecer; — at night, anochecer.  
 article, artículo, *m.*; —s of dress, prendas de vestir, *f. pl.*  
 as, *adv.*, tan; *prep.*, por, según; *conj.*, así que, como, mientras (que); — far —, *conj.*, a medida que, en cuanto; — (or so) great, tamaño, —a; — it were, como; — many, sendos, —as; — many —, tantos (—as) . . . cuantos (—as); — much —, tanto (—a) . . . cuanto (—a); — soon —, *prep.*, desde; — soon —, *conj.*, apenas, así como, así que, desde que, luego que; — well —, *conj.*, así que; — yet, *adv.*, aún; so —, *conj.*, de modo que.  
 ascend, ascender, subir.  
 ascension, ascensión, *f.*  
 ascent, subida, *f.*  
 ascertain, averiguar.  
 ash, ceniza, *f.*; Ash Wednesday, Miércoles de Ceniza.  
 ashamed; be —, tener vergüenza.  
 ashes, ceniza(s), *f.*  
 ask, (*as a question*) preguntar, (*as a favor*) pedir, rogar.  
 ass, borrico, *m.*, burro, *m.*  
 assail, arremeter, embestir.  
 assist, asistir.  
 assuage, acallar.  
 assumption, asunción, *f.*  
 assure, asegurar.  
 astronomy, astronomía, *f.*  
 at, *prep.*, a, en; — first, al princi-

pio; — last, al fin y al cabo, en fin; — least, a lo menos, por lo menos; — once, a la vez, en seguida; — that time, a la sazón, en aquel entonces; — the same time, a la vez.  
 athletic, atlético, —a.  
 attack, acometer, arremeter, atacar, embestir.  
 attain, alcanzar, lograr.  
 attend, asistir a, atender.  
 attention, atención, *f.*  
 attentively, *adv.*, atentamente.  
 attitude, actitud, *f.*  
 attract, atraer.  
 attractive, atractivo, —a, simpático, —a.  
 augmentative, aumentativo, *m.*  
 August, agosto, *m.*  
 aunt, tía, *f.*  
 au revoir, hasta la vista.  
 author, autor, *m.*, escritor, *m.*  
 authority, notabilidad, *f.*  
 automobile, automóvil, *m.*  
 autumn, otoño, *m.*  
 auxiliary, *adj.*, auxiliar.  
 avenue, avenida, *f.*  
 avoid, evitar.  
 awaken, despertar.  
 away from, *prep.*, fuera de; go —, marcharse de.

## B

back, espalda, *f.*  
 backward, remolón, *adj.*; —(s), *adv.*, atrás, hacia atrás; go (or ride) —, ir de espaldas.  
 bad, malo (mal), —a.  
 badly, *adv.*, mal.  
 balcony, balcón, *m.*  
 ball, baile, *m.*; (hand)—, pelota, *f.*  
 ballad, canción, *f.*  
 band, música, *f.*, faja, *f.*  
 banderilla, banderilla, *f.* (*small decorated dart*).  
 banderillero, (*he who sticks banderillas into the top of the bull's shoulders*) banderillero, *m.*  
 bank, orilla, *f.*, banco, *m.*; — note, billete, *m.*  
 barber, barbero, *m.*, peluquero, *m.*

**Barcelona**, Barcelona.

**bare**, pelado, -a.

**bargain**, regatear.

**base**, base, *f.*

**basket**, cesta, *f.*

**Basque**, vascongado, -a.

**bath**, baño, *m.*, lavadero, *m.*

**battle**, batalla, *f.*, pelea, *f.*

**bay**, bahía, *f.*

**be**, ser, estar, hallarse; — **able**, poder; — **accustomed**, soler; —

**afraid**, tener miedo; — **ashamed**,

tener vergüenza; — **bad weather**,

hacer mal tiempo; — **better**,

valer más; — **born**, nacer; —

**careful!** *int.*, ¡cuidado!; — **cast**,

proyectarse; — **clear**, constar;

— **cold**, (*of weather*) hacer frío,

(*of beings*) tener frío, (*of objects*)

ser (*or estar*) frío; — **composed**

(*of*), constar; — **contained**,

caber; — **cool**, hacer fresco; —

**cured**, restablecerse; — **dark**,

ser (*or estar*) obscuro; — **de-**

**linquent**, delinquir; — **desirous**,

tener ganas; — **directed**, diri-

girar; — **dusty**, haber polvo; —

**enough**, bastar; — **evident**,

constar; — **fast**, (*of timepieces*)

adelantar; — **fitting**, convenir;

— **foggy**, haber neblina; — **fond**

**of**, gustar a; — **good weather**,

hacer buen tiempo; — **grate-**

**ful for**, agradecer; — **hot**, (*of*

*weather*) hacer calor, (*of be-*

*ings*) tener calor, (*of objects*) ser

(*or estar*) caliente; — **hungry**,

tener hambre; — **ignorant of**,

desconocer; — **important**, im-

portar; — **in fashion**, ser de

moda; — **in style**, ser de moda;

— **inclined**, tener ganas; —

**jealous**, tener celos; — **misty**,

haber neblina; — **moonlight**,

haber luna; — **muddy**, haber

lodo; — **necessary**, ser de

esencia, ser preciso; — **placed**,

ponerse; — **pleasant**, hacer

(un) tiempo agradable; —

**pleased**, alegrarse; — **present**

**at**, asistir a, presenciar; — **put**,

ponerse; — **right**, tener razón;

— **set**, ponerse; — **silent!** *int.*,

¡calla! ¡calle!; — **sleepy**, tener

sueño; — **slow**, (*of timepieces*)

atrasar; — **so kind as to**, tener

la bondad de; — **sorry for**, sen-

tir; — **sparing**, andar escaso; —

**sunny**, haber sol, hacer sol; —

**thirsty**, tener sed; — **thrown**,

proyectarse; — **warm**, (*of weath-*

*er*) hacer calor, (*of beings*) tener

calor, (*of objects*) ser (*or estar*)

caliente; — **windy**, haber viento,

hacer viento; — **wont**, soler; —

**worth**, valer; — **worthy of**, me-

recer; — **wrong**, no tener razón.

**beadle**, bedel, *m.*

**beam**, rayo, *m.*

**bean**, judía, *f.*

**bear**, llevar, portar.

**beard**, barba, *f.*

**beast**, bestia, *f.*

**beat**; **double** —, redoble, *m.*

**beautiful**, bello, -a, hermoso, -a,

pulcro, -a.

**beauty**, hermosura, *f.*

**because**, *conj.*, porque, pues.

**become**, hacerse, hallarse, llegar

a ser, ponerse, sentar; — **quiet**,

callar; — **silent**, callar.

**bed**, cama, *f.*; **put to** —, acostar;

**go to** —, acostarse.

**bedroom**, alcoba, *f.*

**beefsteak**, biftec, *m.*

**beer**, cerveza, *f.*

**before**, anterior, -a; *adv.*, antes,

delante; *prep.*, ante, antes de,

delante (de); *conj.*, antes (de)

que.

**beg**, pedir, suplicar.

**beggar**, mendigo, *m.*

**begin**, comenzar, empezar, em-

prender, principiar.

**beginning**, comienzo, *m.*, prin-

cipio, *m.*; **about the** —, a prin-

cipios.

**behalf**; **in** — **of**, por.

**behind**, *adv.*, detrás; *prep.*, a la

zaga de, detrás (de).

**believe**, creer.

**bell**, campana, *f.*

**beloved**, querido, -a.

**below**, *prep.*, bajo.

- belt, faja, *f.*  
 bench, banco, *m.*  
 bend, curva, *f.*; to —, inclinar.  
 benefit, aprovechar.  
 beseech, rogar, suplicar.  
 besides, *adv.*, además; *prep.*, además de.  
 best, el (la) mejor.  
 better, *adj.*, mejor (*comp. of* bueno); *adv.*, mejor (*comp. of* bien); be —, valer más.  
 between, *prep.*, entre.  
 big, gordo, —a.  
 bill, cuenta, *f.*; — of fare, lista, *f.*  
 billion, billón, *m.*  
 bind, ceñir.  
 bird, pájaro, *m.*  
 birth, nacimiento, *m.*, natividad, *f.*; of noble —, *adj.*, noble.  
 black, negro, —a, (*of coffee*) puro, —a.  
 blackboard, encerado, *m.*, pizarra, *f.*  
 blame, culpa, *f.*; be to —, tener culpa.  
 bless, bendecir; — me! *int.*, ¡Dios me valga! ¡válgame Dios! ¡virgen santísima!; — my soul! *int.*, ¡Dios me valga! ¡válgame Dios!  
 blessed, bendito, —a.  
 blind, ciego, —a.  
 blonde, rubio, —a.  
 blood, sangre, *f.*  
 blow, golpe, *m.*; to —, resoplar, (*of the wind*) ventear, ventiscar.  
 blue, *adj.*, azul.  
 boarding-house, casa de huéspedes, *f.*  
 boat, buque, *m.*, lancha, *f.*  
 body, cadáver, *m.*, cuerpo, *m.*  
 boil, bullir, hervir.  
 boiled dish, cocido, *m.*  
 bold, atrevido, —a, valeroso, —a.  
 bone, hueso, *m.*; to —, desosar.  
 book, libro, *m.*  
 border, faja, *f.*, orilla, *f.*; — on, rayar.  
 bored; be —, aburrirse.  
 born; be —, nacer.  
 both, *adj. and pron.*, ambos, —as, entrambos, —as, uno (—a) y otro (—a), los (—as) dos; — . . . and, *conj.*, así . . . como.
- bother, molestar.  
 bottle, botella, *f.*  
 bottom, fondo, *m.*  
 bouillon, caldo, *m.*  
 bouquet, ramo, *m.*  
 bow, inclinar, saludar.  
 box, caja, *f.*, palco, *m.*; tin —, tubo, *m.*  
 boy, muchacho, *m.*, niño, *m.*; little —, chiquillo, *m.*  
 branch, rama, *f.*, género, *m.*  
 brave, valeroso, —a.  
 bravery, proeza, *f.*  
 bravo! *int.*, ¡bravo! ¡ole!  
 bread, pan, *m.*  
 break, quebrar, romper, (*of horses*) adestrar.  
 breakfast, almuerzo, *m.*, desayuno, *m.*; to —, almorzar.  
 breast, pecho, *m.*  
 breath, respiración, *f.*  
 breathless, *adj.*, anhelante.  
 brick, ladrillo, *m.*  
 bridge, puente, *m.*  
 brief, *adj.*, breve.  
 brilliant, vistoso, —a.  
 bring, traer; — forth, echar al mundo, sacar; — into the world, echar al mundo; — out, estreñar; — together, reunir; — up, educar.  
 broken, roto, —a.  
 bronze, bronce, *m.*  
 brook, arroyo, *m.*, riachuelo, *m.*  
 broth, caldo, *m.*  
 brother, hermano, *m.*; Brother, Fray, *m.*  
 brotherhood, hermandad, *f.*  
 brow, frente, *f.*  
 brown, pardo, —a.  
 brunette, moreno, —a.  
 brush, cepillo, *m.*; to —, acepillarse.  
 bud, brotar.  
 bugle, clarín, *m.*  
 build, construir.  
 building, edificio, *m.*  
 bull, toro, *m.*; — -fight, corrida de toros, *f.*, los toros, *m. pl.*; — -fighter, torero, *m.*; — -ring, plaza, *f.*  
 bunch, ramo, *m.*  
 Burgos, Burgos.

**burn**, arder.  
**burst**; — **of laughter**, carcajada, *f.*;  
 — **out laughing**, soltar la carca-  
 jada.  
**bury**, enterrar.  
**business**, negocio, *m.*  
**bustle**, bullicio, *m.*  
**but**, *conj.*, pero, mas, sino; — **ra-  
 ther**, *conj.*, sino; **not only** . . . —,  
*conj.*, no sólo (*or* solamente) . . .  
 sino.  
**butter**, manteca, *f.*, mantequilla, *f.*  
**buy**, comprar.  
**by**, *prep.*, de, por; — **Jove!** *int.*  
 ¡canastos! ¡caracoles! ¡carái!  
 ¡caramba! ¡cáspita! ¡córcholis!  
**by and by**; **until** —, hasta luego.

## C

**cabin**, barraca, *f.*  
**café**, café, *m.*  
**cake**, pastel, *m.*  
**calculation**, cálculo, *m.*  
**call**, clamar, gritar, llamar.  
**calm**, tranquilo, —a; *subst.* calma,  
*f.*; **to** —, sosegar, tranquilizar.  
**calmness**, calma, *f.*  
**camp**, acampar.  
**campaign**, campaña, *f.*  
**can**, tubo, *m.*; *v.*, poder.  
**canal**, acequia, *f.*  
**candy**, dulce, *m.*  
**cane**, caña, *f.*  
**cap**, birrete, *m.*, monterilla, *f.*  
**cape**, capa, *f.*  
**capital**, corte, *f.*; — **letter**, mayús-  
 cula, *f.*  
**captain**, jefe, *m.*  
**captivate**, captar.  
**captive**, cautivo, *m.*  
**captivity**, cautiverio, *m.*  
**car**, coche, *m.*  
**card**, carta, *f.*, naipes, *m.*, tarjeta, *f.*  
**cardinal**, cardenal, *m.*; *adj.*, car-  
 dinal.  
**care**, cuidado, *m.*; **to** —, curar (*se*);  
**take** — (*of*) (*for*), cuidar (*de*);  
**take** — **not to**, guardarse (*de*).  
**career**, carrera, *f.*  
**careful**, cuidadoso, —a; **be** —! *int.*,  
 ¡cuidado!

**caress**, caricia, *f.*  
**Carnival**, Carnaval, *m.*  
**carpenter**, carpintero, *m.*  
**carry**, llevar, portar, traer.  
**case**, caso, *m.*, (*of watch or clock*)  
 caja, *f.*; **in** — **that**, *conj.*, dado  
 que, en caso de que, en tanto  
 que.  
**casino**, casino, *m.*  
**cast**, arrojar, despedir, echar; **be**  
 —, proyectarse.  
**castanets**, castañuelas, *f. pl.*, pa-  
 lillos, *m. pl.*  
**Castile**, Castilla, *f.*  
**Castilian**, castellano, —a.  
**castle**, castillo, *m.*  
**cat**, gato, *m.*  
**Catalonia**, Cataluña, *f.*  
**catch**, coger, prender.  
**catechism**, catecismo, *m.*  
**cathedral**, catedral, *f.*  
**Catholic**, católico, —a.  
**cause**, causa, *f.*; **to** —, causar,  
 hacer.  
**cave**, cueva, *f.*  
**cease**, cesar, dejar de.  
**ceiling**, techo, *m.*  
**celebrate**, celebrar.  
**celebrated**, *adj.*, célebre.  
**cemetery**, cementerio, *m.*  
**cent**, perro chico, *m.*  
**center**, centro, *m.*  
**centime**, céntimo, *m.*  
**century**, siglo, *m.*  
**ceremony**, acto, *m.*, ceremonia, *f.*  
**certain**, cierto, —a, seguro, —a.  
**certainly**, *adv.*, ciertamente, segu-  
 ramente, a buen seguro.  
**certainty**, certeza, *f.*  
**certitude**, certeza, *f.*  
**chair**, silla, *f.*  
**chalk**, tiza, *f.*  
**challenge**, desafío, *m.*  
**chamberlain**, camarero, *m.*  
**chance**; **by** —, *adv.*, acaso.  
**change**, cambio, *m.*; **to** —, cam-  
 biar, trocar; — **to**, cambiar(*se*)  
 en.  
**chapel**, capilla, *f.*  
**character**, carácter, *m.*, letra, *f.*  
**charge**, acusación, *f.*, encargo, *m.*  
**charity**; **sister of** —, hermana, *f.*

- charm**, encanto, *m.*; **to** —, embelesar.  
**charming**, *adj.*, encantador.  
**chasm**, abismo, *m.*  
**chat**, charlar.  
**check** (*baggage*), facturar.  
**checkers**, damas, *f. pl.*  
**cheek**, mejilla, *f.*  
**cheerful**, *adj.*, alegre.  
**cheese**, queso, *m.*  
**chess**, ajedrez, *m.*  
**chew**, mascar.  
**chicken**, gallina, *f.*, pollo, *m.*  
**chief**, jefe, *m.*  
**child**, chico, *m.*, chica, *f.*, niño, *m.*, niña, *f.*  
**childish**, *adj.*, pueril.  
**chimney**, chimenea, *f.*; — **place**, chimenea, *f.*  
**chin**, barba, *f.*  
**China**, China, *f.*  
**chivalry**, caballería, *f.*  
**chocolate**, chocolate, *m.*  
**choice**, preferencia, *f.*  
**choir**, coro, *m.*  
**choose**, antojarse, elegir, escoger.  
**chore**, quehacer, *m.*  
**chorus**, coro, *m.*  
**Christ**; **Jesus** —, Jesucristo, *m.*  
**Christian**, cristiano, —a.  
**Christmas**, Navidad, *f.*; — **Eve**, Noche Buena, *f.*; **midnight mass** on — **Eve**, Misa del Gallo.  
**chronicle**, crónica, *f.*  
**chulo**, (*bull-fighter's assistant*) chulo, *m.*  
**church**, iglesia, *f.*  
**Cid**, (**The**), El Cid, *m.*  
**cigar**, cigarro (puro), *m.*, (*as distinguished from cigarette*) puro, *m.*; — **maker**, cigarrera, *f.*  
**cigarette**, cigarrillo, *m.*; — **maker**, cigarrera, *f.*  
**cipher**, cero, *m.*  
**circle**, arco, *m.*, círculo, *m.*  
**circulation**, circulación, *f.*  
**city**, ciudad, *f.*, población, *f.*  
**clack**, chasquear.  
**clamor**, clamor, *m.*, estruendo, *m.*  
**clarion**, clarín, *m.*  
**class**, clase, *f.*; — **room**, aula, *f.*, clase, *f.*, sala de clase, *f.*  
**classic**, clásico, —a.  
**classical**, clásico, —a.  
**clause**, cláusula, *f.*  
**clean**, limpiar.  
**cleanliness**, aseo, *m.*  
**clear**, claro, —a.; — **soup**, caldo, *m.*; — **up**, (*of weather*) escampar; **be** —, constar.  
**clearing**, despejo, *m.*  
**clearly**, *adv.*, claramente, claro.  
**clerk**, dependiente, *m.*  
**clever**, *adj.*, hábil, salado, —a.  
**cleverness**, gracia, *f.*, maña, *f.*  
**click**, chasquear.  
**cloak**, manto, *m.*  
**clock**, reloj, *m.*; **wall** —, reloj de pared, *m.*  
**cloister**, claustro, *m.*  
**close**, cerrar; — **to**, *prep.*, cerca (de), junto a.  
**clothe**, vestir.  
**clothes**, prendas de vestir, *f. pl.*, ropa, *f.*, vestido, *m.*; **suit of** —, traje, *m.*, vestido, *m.*; — **press**, armario, *m.*  
**clothing**, ropa, *f.*, vestidos, *m. pl.*  
**cloud**, nube, *f.*  
**cloudy**, nublado, —a.  
**club**, casino, *m.*  
**coach**, coche, *m.*  
**coachman**, cochero, *m.*  
**coarse**, grosero, —a.  
**coat**, chaqueta, *f.*; **dinner**—, smoking, *m.*; **dress**—, frac, *m.*; **frock**—, levita, *f.*; **sack**—, americana, *f.*; — **of arms**, escudo, *m.*  
**Cock**; **Mass of the** —, Misa del Gallo.  
**code**, código, *m.*  
**coffee**, café, *m.*  
**coin**, moneda, *f.*  
**cold**, frío, *m.*; **be** —, (*of weather*) hacer frío, (*of beings*) tener frío, (*of objects*) ser (or estar) frío.  
**collar**, cuello, *m.*  
**collective**, colectivo, —a.  
**college**, colegio, *m.*; — **professor**, catedrático, *m.*  
**color**, color, *m.*  
**Columbus**, Colón, *m.*  
**column**, columna, *f.*



**comb**, peine, *m.*; **to** —, peinar.  
**combat**, combatir.  
**combination**, combinación, *f.*  
**come**, venir, acudir, llegar; —! *int.*, ¡ea!; —, —! *int.* (*expressing impatience*), ¡vamos!; — **here!** (*to dogs*) *int.*, ¡tus tus!; —, **kitty!** *int.*, ¡miz miz!; — **forth**, destacarse; — **out**, salir; — **together**, acudir.  
**comedy**, comedia, *f.*; **musical** —, zarzuela, *f.*  
**comfort**, comodidad, *f.*; **to** —, consolar.  
**comfortable**, cómodo, —a.  
**command**, orden, *f.*; **to** —, imperar, mandar.  
**commemoration**, conmemoración, *f.*  
**commence**, comenzar, empezar, principiar.  
**Commencement Hall**, Paraninfo, *m.*  
**commend**, encomendar.  
**commit**, encomendar.  
**common**, *adj.*, común, corriente.  
**communicative**, comunicativo, —a.  
**companion**, compañero, *m.*  
**company**, compañía, *f.*  
**comparative**, comparativo, —a; *subst.*, comparativo, *m.*  
**compare**, comparar.  
**comparison**; **in** — **with**, *prep.*, con relación a.  
**compartment**, compartimiento, *m.*, departamento, *m.*  
**compel**, obligar.  
**complain**, quejarse (de).  
**complaint**, queja, *f.*  
**complete**, completo, —a.  
**completely**, *adv.*, por completo.  
**compliment**; **pay** —s **to**, echar flores.  
**comport**, portar(se).  
**compose**, componer.  
**composed**, compuesto, —a; **be** — (of), constar (de).  
**composition**, composición, *f.*, tema, *m.*  
**compound**, compuesto, —a.  
**comprehend**, comprender.  
**compulsory**, obligado, —a.

**computation**, cálculo, *m.*  
**comrade**, compañero, *m.*  
**conceal**, esconder, ocultar.  
**conception**, concepción, *f.*; **Immaculate Conception**, Inmaculada Concepción, *f.*  
**concern**, concernir.  
**concerning**, *adj.*, concerniente; *prep.*, acerca (de).  
**conclude**, concluir, dar fin.  
**condition**, condición, *f.*, estado, *m.*; **on** — **that**, *conj.*, a condición que.  
**conditional**, *adj.*, condicional; *subst.*, condicional, *m.*  
**conduct**, conducir.  
**conduit**, sifón, *m.*  
**confess**, confesar.  
**confine**, encerrar.  
**confirm**, confirmar.  
**confuse**, confundir.  
**confusion**, bullicio, *m.*, monserga, *f.*  
**conjugate**, conjugar.  
**conjugation**, conjugación, *f.*  
**conjunction**, conjunción, *f.*  
**conquer**, vencer.  
**conqueror**, vencedor, *m.*  
**consciousness**, conocimiento, *m.*  
**consequence**, resulta, *f.*  
**consequently**, *adv.*, por consiguiente.  
**consider**, considerar.  
**consist**, constar; — (of or in), consistir (en), constar (de).  
**consolation**, consolación, *f.*  
**console**, consolar.  
**consonant**, consonante, *f.*  
**conspiracy**, conspiración, *f.*  
**constant**, continuo, —a.  
**constrain**, forzar.  
**construct**, construir.  
**construction**, construcción, *f.*  
**contained**; **be** —, caber.  
**content**, contento, —a.  
**continental**, *adj.*, continental.  
**continual**, continuo, —a.  
**continuation**, continuación, *f.*  
**continue**, continuar, prolongar, seguir.  
**continuous**, continuo, —a.  
**contraction**, contracción, *f.*  
**contradict**, contradecir.

**contrary**, contrario, -a; **on the —**, al contrario.  
**contribute**, contribuir.  
**convenience**, comodidad, *f.*  
**convenient**, cómodo, -a.  
**convent**, convento, *m.*  
**conversation**, conversación, *f.*  
**converse**, charlar.  
**convert**, convertir.  
**convince**, convencer.  
**convulsed**, convulso, -a.  
**cook**, cocer.  
**cooking**, cocina, *f.*  
**cool**, fresco, -a; **be —**, (*of the weather*) hacer fresco.  
**copper**, cobre, *m.*  
**coquetry**, coquetería, *f.*  
**cordially**, *adv.*, cordialmente.  
**Cordova**, Córdoba.  
**corner**, esquina, *f.*, rincón, *m.*  
**corpse**, cadáver, *m.*  
**Corpus Christi**, Corpus Christi, *m.*  
**correct**, correcto, -a; **to —**, corregir, enmendar.  
**correction**, corrección, *f.*  
**correctness**, corrección, *f.*  
**corrode**, corroer.  
**corrupt**, corromper.  
**cost**, costar.  
**costume**, traje, *m.*  
**cottage**, casucha, *f.*  
**counsel**, aconsejar.  
**count**, conde, *m.*; **to —**, contar.  
**countess**, condesa, *f.*  
**country**, campo, *m.*, país, *m.*, patria, *f.*; **home —**, patria, *f.*  
**couple**, par, *m.*, pareja, *f.*  
**couplet**, copla, *f.*  
**course**, carrera, *f.*, curso, *m.*; **of — not!** *int.*, ¡ca! ¡quí! ¡a!  
**court**, corte, *f.*; **inner —**, patio, *m.*  
**courtesy**, finura, *f.*  
**courtyard**, patio, *m.*  
**cousin**, primo, *m.*, prima, *f.*  
**cover**, cubrir, cuajar.  
**covered**, cubierto, -a, lleno, -a.  
**cow**, vaca, *f.*  
**crack**, chasquear.  
**cravat**, corbata, *f.*  
**crave**, pedir.  
**creek**, riachuelo, *m.*  
**crimson**, *adj.*, carmesí.

**cross**, cruz, *f.*; **in the form of a —**, en cruz; **like a —**, en cruz; **to —**, atravesar, cruzar, cruzarse con; **— one's self**, santiguarse.  
**crowd**, gentío, *m.*, muchedumbre, *f.*  
**crown**, corona, *f.*  
**cry**, grito, *m.*; **to —**, llorar; **— out**, clamar, dar voces, gritar.  
**cudgeling**, paliza, *f.*  
**cuff**, puño, *m.*  
**cultivate**, cultivar.  
**cultivation**, cultura, *f.*  
**culture**, cultura, *f.*  
**cup**, taza, *f.*  
**cupola**, cúpula, *f.*  
**curious**, curioso, -a.  
**current**, *adj.*, corriente.  
**curse**, maldecir.  
**curve**, curva, *f.*  
**custom**, costumbre, *f.*  
**cut**, cortar.  
**cutting**, *adj.*, cortante.

## D

**daily**, diario, -a; *adv.*, de diario.  
**dampness**, humedad, *f.*  
**dance**, baile, *m.*; **to —**, bailar.  
**dancer**, bailadora, *f.*  
**dangerous**, peligroso, -a.  
**dare**, atreverse, osar.  
**daring**, atrevido, -a.  
**dark**, moreno, -a, obscuro, -a; **be —**, ser (*or* estar) obscuro; **grow —**, anochecer.  
**darkness**, obscuridad, *f.*  
**Darro**, (The), El Darro.  
**date**, fecha, *f.*  
**dative**, dativo, *m.*  
**daughter**, hija, *f.*  
**dawn**, aurora, *f.*; **to —**, alborear, amanecer; **arrive at —**, amanecer.  
**day**, día, *m.*; **— after to-morrow**, *adv.*, pasado mañana; **— before yesterday**, *adv.*, anteayer, antes de ayer; **All Saints' Day**, Día de Todos los Santos; **All Souls' Day**, Día de Difuntos; **good —!** *int.*, ¡buenos días!; **in the — time**, de día.  
**dead**, difunto, -a, muerto, -a.

- deaf**, sordo, -a; — **and dumb**, sordomudo, -a; — **-mute**, sordomudo, *m.*, sordomuda, *f.*  
**deal**; **a great (or good)** —, *adj. and pron.*, mucho, -a.  
**dean**, decano, *m.*  
**dear** querido, -a; — **me!** *int.*, ¡Dios mío!  
**death**, muerte, *f.*  
**debt**, deber, *m.*, deuda, *f.*  
**decay**, podrir.  
**deceive**, engañar.  
**December**, diciembre, *m.*  
**decide**, decidir.  
**declaim**, declamar.  
**declare**, declarar; **well I —!** *int.*, ¡Jesús! ¡vaya!  
**decorate**, adornar, engalanar.  
**dedicate**, dedicar.  
**deduce**, deducir, inferir.  
**deed**, acción, *f.*, hazaña, *f.*, hecho, *m.*  
**deep-rooted**, arraigado, -a.  
**defective**, defectivo, -a.  
**defend**, defender.  
**defender**, defensor, *m.*  
**defense**, defensa, *f.*  
**defer**, deferir, diferir.  
**definite**, determinado, -a.  
**deformed**, *adj.*, deforme.  
**defunct**, difunto, -a.  
**deign**, dignarse.  
**delay**, atrasar, diferir.  
**deliberately**, *adv.*, pausadamente.  
**delicious**, delicioso, -a.  
**delightful**, ameno, -a, delicioso, -a.  
**delinquent**; **be —**, delinquir.  
**deliver**, pronunciar.  
**demand**, pedir.  
**demonstrate**, demostrar.  
**demonstrative**, demostrativo, -a.  
**denote**, significar.  
**deny**, negar.  
**dependent**, *adj.*, dependiente.  
**depict**, pintar.  
**depth**, abismo, *m.*, fondo, *m.*  
**descend**, bajar, descender.  
**descent**, bajada, *f.*  
**describe**, describir, explicar.  
**description**, descripción, *f.*, señas, *f. pl.*  
**deserted**, desierto, -a.  
**deserve**, merecer.  
**design**, propósito, *m.*  
**designate**, indicar, significar.  
**desire**, anhelo, *m.*, gana, *f.* (*more commonly used in plural*); **to —**, desear, querer; — **earnestly**, antojarse.  
**desirous**; **be —**, tener ganas.  
**desk**, mesa, *f.*  
**desolation**, desolación, *f.*  
**dessert**, postre, *m.*, postres, *m. pl.*  
**destination**, destinación, *f.*, destino, *m.*  
**detail**, detalle, *m.*  
**detain**, detener.  
**determination**, determinación, *f.*  
**determine**, determinar.  
**deuce**; **the —!** *int.*, ¡canastos! ¡caracoles! ¡carái! ¡caramba! ¡cáspita! ¡córcholis! ¡demonio! ¡diantre!  
**devil**; **the —!** *int.*, ¡demonio!  
**devote**, dedicar.  
**devotion**, devoción, *f.*  
**devout**, beato, -a, religioso, -a.  
**dictate**, dictar.  
**die**, expirar, morir.  
**died**, muerto, -a.  
**difference**, diferencia, *f.*  
**different**, *adj.*, diferente, diverso, -a.  
**difficult**, *adj.*, difícil.  
**difficulty**, dificultad, *f.*, trance, *m.*  
**digest**, digerir.  
**diminutive**, diminutivo, *m.*  
**dine**, comer.  
**dining-room**, comedor, *m.*  
**dinner**, comida, *f.*; — **coat**, smoking, *m.*  
**dint**; **by — of**, a fuerza de.  
**diphthong**, diptongo, *m.*  
**diploma**, diploma, *m.*  
**direct**, directo, -a; **to —**, dirigir; — **one's self**, dirigirse.  
**directed**; **be —**, dirigirse.  
**direction**, dirección, *f.*; **in the — of**, *prep.*, camino de.  
**directly**, *adv.*, directamente.  
**director**, decano, *m.*  
**dirty**, sucio, -a.  
**disappear**, desaparecer.  
**disaster**, desastre, *m.*

disciple, discípulo, *m.*  
 discomfort, malestar, *m.*  
 discover, descubrir.  
 discreet, discreto, -a.  
 discuss, discutir, tratar.  
 dish, plato, *m.*; boiled —, cocido, *m.*; special —, plato del día.  
 dishonor, deshonor, *m.*  
 disorder, desorden, *m.*  
 display, exponer, extender.  
 displease, desplacer.  
 disposed to, *prep.*, por.  
 dissolve, derretir, disolver.  
 distance, lejanía, *f.*  
 distant, lejano, -a; *adv.*, lejos.  
 distinct, distinto, -a.  
 distinguish, distinguir.  
 distinguished, distinguido, -a.  
 distract, distraer.  
 distribute, repartir.  
 disturb, alborotar, molestar.  
 diverse, diverso, -a.  
 diversion, diversión, *f.*  
 divert, divertir.  
 divide, dividir, partir.  
 divided, dividido, -a.  
 divinely, *adv.*, divinamente.  
 division, división, *f.*, parte, *f.*  
 do, hacer; — (one) the favor (to), hacer el favor (de).  
 doctor, doctor, *m.*, médico, *m.*; old —, medicuzarra, *m.*  
 dog, perro, *m.*  
 dollar, duro, *m.*, peso, *m.*  
 dome, cúpula, *f.*  
 domino, dominó, *m.*  
 Don, Don, *m.*  
 don, poner, vestir.  
 donkey, burro, *m.*  
 door, puerta, *f.*  
 double, *adj.*, doble, duplicado, -a.  
 doubt, duda, *f.*  
 doubtful, dudoso, -a.  
 dove, paloma, *f.*  
 down; go —, bajar.  
 dozen, docena, *f.*  
 drag, arrastrar.  
 drama, drama, *m.*  
 dramatical, dramático, -a.  
 draw, sacar; — out, sacar; — near, acercar(se) de (or a); — off (*wine from the lees*), trasegar.

drawing-room, salón, *m.*  
 dreadful, *adj.*, horrible.  
 dream, sueño, *m.*; — (of), soñar (con).  
 dress, ropa, *f.*, vestido, *m.*; articles of —, prendas de vestir, *f. pl.*; —-coat, frac, *m.*; to —, vestir.  
 dressing, salsa, *f.*  
 drink; cold —, refresco, *m.*  
 drizzle, lloviznar, molliznar, molliznear.  
 drone, sonsonete, *m.*  
 drop leaves, deshojarse.  
 dry, seco, -a; to —, secar.  
 dubious, dudoso, -a.  
 dumb, mudo, -a; deaf and —, sordomudo, -a.  
 dunce, bestia, *m.*  
 during, *prep.*, durante.  
 dust, polvo, *m.*  
 dusty, polvoroso, -a; be —, haber polvo.  
 duty, deber, *m.*, faena, *f.*, que-hacer, *m.*, servicio, *m.*  
 dwell, habitar.  
 dye, teñir.

## E

each, *adj.*, cada, todo, -a; *pron.*, todo, -a; — one, *pron.*, cada cual, cada uno, -a, sendos, -as; one for —, sendos, -as.  
 eagerness, anhelo, *m.*, ansia, *f.*, ansiedad, *f.*  
 ear, *m.* (*inner ear, hearing*) oído, (*outer ear*) oreja, *f.*  
 eared; large —, orejudo, -a.  
 early, *adv.*, temprano.  
 earth, tierra, *f.*  
 ease, comodidad, *f.*, holganza, *f.*  
 east, este, *m.*  
 Easter, Pascua (florida), *f.*  
 easy, *adj.*, fácil.  
 eat, comer.  
 edifice, edificio, *m.*, fábrica, *f.*  
 educate, educar, instruir.  
 education, educación, *f.*, instrucción, *f.*  
 educe, educir.  
 effect, efecto, *m.*  
 effort, esfuerzo, *m.*

egg, huevo, *m*.  
 eh! *int.*, ¡ha! ¡hé!  
 eight, *adj.*, ocho; — **hundredth**,  
*adj.*, ochocientos, -as, octingén-  
 tésimos, -a.  
 eighteen, *adj.*, diez y ocho.  
 eighteenth, *adj.*, diez y ocho, dé-  
 cimo (-a) octavo (-a).  
 eightfold, óctuplo, -a.  
 eighth, *adj.*, ocho, octavo, -a.  
 eightieth, *adj.*, ochenta, octogé-  
 simo, -a.  
 eighty, *adj.*, ochenta; (group of) —,  
 ochentena, *f*.  
 either . . . or, *conj.*, o . . . o; not —  
*adv.*, tampoco.  
 elbow, codo, *m*.  
 elder, *adj.*, mayor.  
 eldest, *adj.*, mayor.  
 elect, elegir.  
 elegance, donaire, *m*.  
 elegant, *adj.*, elegante.  
 elevate, elevar.  
 eleven, *adj.*, once.  
 eleventh, *adj.*, once, undécimo,  
 -a.  
 else, *adv.*, bien.  
 embark, embarcarse.  
 embrace, abrazo, *m*.; to —,  
 abrazar.  
 embroider, bordar.  
 eminence, eminencia, *f*.  
 eminent, *adj.*, eminente; — per-  
 son, notabilidad, *f*.  
 emperor, emperador, *m*.  
 employ, emplear.  
 employment, empleo, *m*., uso, *m*.  
 encounter, encontrar.  
 end, cabo, *m*., fin, *m*., termina-  
 ción, *f*.; about the —, a fines;  
 to —, acabar, concluir, ter-  
 minar.  
 ended (or ending), terminado, -a.  
 ending, terminación, *f*.  
 endless, *adj.*, interminable.  
 endure, sufrir.  
 enemy, enemigo, *m*., enemiga, *f*.  
 energetically, *adv.*, enérgicamente.  
 engagement, empeño, *m*.  
 engineer, ingeniero, *m*.  
 England, Inglaterra, *f*.  
 English, inglés, -a.

enjoy, gozar.  
 enjoyment, gozo, *m*., gusto, *m*.  
 enliven, alegrar, animar.  
 ennui, fastidio, *m*.  
 enormous, *adj.*, enorme, gigan-  
 tesco, -a.  
 enough, *adj.*, bastante; *adv.*, bas-  
 tante, harto; be —, bastar.  
 ensemble, conjunto, *m*.  
 enter, entrar (en), penetrar.  
 entertain, divertir.  
 entertaining, divertido, -a.  
 entertainment, entretenimiento,  
*m*., fiesta, *f*.  
 enthusiastic, entusiasmado, -a.  
 entire, completo, -a, entero, -a.  
 entrance, entrada, *f*., ingreso, *m*.;  
 give —, dejar paso.  
 environs, alrededores, *m. pl*.  
 Epiphany, Día de los Reyes, *m*.,  
 Epifanía, *f*.  
 epoch, época, *f*.  
 equal, equivaler.  
 equality, igualdad, *f*.  
 equally, *adv.*, igualmente.  
 erase, borrar, raer, rayar.  
 eraser, cepillo (de encerado), *m*.  
 erect, elevar, erguir.  
 err, errar.  
 escape, escapar.  
 especially, *adv.*, sobre todo.  
 essential, *adj.*, esencial.  
 establish, establecer.  
 estate, hacienda, *f*.  
 esteem, aprecio, *m*.  
 estimate, estimar.  
 et cetera, etcétera, *f*.  
 Eugene, Eugenio, *m*.  
 Europe, Europa, *f*.  
 European, europeo, -a.  
 Eve; Christmas —, Noche Buena,  
*f*.; midnight mass on Christmas  
 —, Misa del Gallo.  
 even, *adj. and pron.*, mismo, -a;  
*adv.*, aun; *prep.*, hasta; — though,  
*conj.*, aun cuando; (not) —, *conj.*,  
 ni, ni aun, no . . . ni.  
 evening, nocturno, -a; *subst.*, noche,  
*f*.; good —! *int.*, ¡buenas noches!  
 ever, *adv.*, siempre, jamás, nunca.  
 every, *adj.*, cada, todo, -a, todos  
 (-as) los (-as); — body, *pron.*

todo el mundo; — *one*, *pron.*, cada cual, cada uno, —a; —*thing*, todo; *from* —*where*, de todas partes.  
*evil*, malo (mal), —a.  
*exactitude*, precisión, *f.*  
*exactly*, *adv.*, en punto, exactamente.  
*examination*, examen, *m.*, interrogatorio, *m.*  
*examine*, examinar, inspeccionar, interrogar.  
*example*, ejemplo, *m.*  
*exceedingly*, *adv.*, sumamente.  
*excellent*, *adj.*, excelente; *int.*, ¡bravo!  
*except*, *prep.*, excepto, menos, salvo; — *that*, *conj.*, excepto que.  
*exception*, excepción, *f.*  
*excessive*, excesivo, —a.  
*excessively*, *adv.*, sobremanera.  
*exchange*, trocar.  
*excite*, provocar, trastear.  
*excitement*, alborozo, *m.*, estremecimiento, *m.*  
*exclaim*, exclamar, gritar.  
*exclamation*, exclamación, *f.*  
*excursion*, excursión, *f.*  
*excuse*, dispensar.  
*exercise*, ejercicio, *m.*; *to* —, ejercitar.  
*exert (one's self)*, esforzarse.  
*exile*, desterrar.  
*exist*, existir, residir, ser.  
*expect*, esperar.  
*expel*, arrojar.  
*experienced*, versado, —a.  
*expert*, *adj.*, hábil.  
*expire*, espirar, morir.  
*explain*, explicar.  
*exploit*, hazaña, *f.*, hecho, *m.*  
*express; fast — -train*, rápido, *m.*  
*expressive*, expresivo, —a.  
*extend*, alargar, extender, tender.  
*extent*, extensión, *f.*  
*exterior*, *adj.*, exterior.  
*extinguish*, apagar.  
*extract*, trozo, *m.*; *to* —, sacar.  
*extraordinary*, extraordinario, —a.  
*extravagance*, lujo, *m.*  
*extremity*, extremidad, *f.*  
*eye*, ojo, *m.*

## F

*fabrication*, fabricación, *f.*  
*façade*, fachada, *f.*  
*face*, cara, *f.*, (*of watch or clock*) esfera, *f.*  
*factory*, fábrica, *f.*  
*faculty*, facultad, *f.*  
*fail*, dejar de, faltar.  
*fair*, rubio, —a; *subst.*, feria, *f.*  
*fairly well*, *adv.*, regular.  
*faith*, fe, *f.*  
*fall*, otoño, *m.*; *to* —, caer.  
*falsehood*; *tell a* —, mentir.  
*fame*, gloria, *f.*  
*family*, familia, *f.*  
*famous*, *adj.*, célebre, famoso, —a.  
*Fannie*, Frasquita, *f.*  
*far*, *adv.*, lejos; — *away*, lejano, —a; — *off*, *adv.*, lejos; — *from*, *prep.*, lejos de; *so — from*, *conj.*, lejos de que.  
*farewell*, despedida, *f.*  
*farm*, heredad, *f.*  
*farmer*, aperador, *m.*, labrador, *m.*  
*farmhouse*, cortijo, *m.*  
*farther (on)*, *adv.*, más allá.  
*fascinate*, embelesar.  
*fashion*, moda, *f.*; *be in* —, ser de moda.  
*fast; be* —, (*of timepieces*) adelantar; — *express-train*, rápido, *m.*  
*fasten*, sujetar.  
*fat*, gordo, —a.  
*fate*, suerte, *f.*  
*father*, padre, *m.*  
*fatherland*, patria, *f.*  
*fault*, culpa, *f.*, falta, *f.*  
*favor*, favor, *m.*; *to* —, distinguir, favorecer, regalar; *do (one) the — (to)*, hacer el favor (de).  
*favorite*, favorito, —a.  
*fear*, miedo, *m.*; *for — that*, *conj.*, de miedo que, por miedo que; *to* —, temer.  
*feat*, hazaña, *f.*, hecho, *m.*  
*feather*, pluma, *f.*  
*February*, febrero, *m.*  
*feel*, sentir.  
*feeling*, pasión, *f.*, sensación, *f.*  
*fellow*, hombre, *m.*; *little* —, chi-

quillo, *m.*; — **student**, condiscípulo, *m.*, condiscípula, *f.*  
**feminine**, *adj.*, femenil, femenino, — *a.*  
**Ferdinand**, Fernando, *m.*  
**festival**, fiesta, *f.*  
**fête**, fiesta, *f.*  
**few**, *adj. and pron.*, pocos, — *as*; *a* —, *adj. and pron.*, unos (— *as*) cuantos (— *as*).  
**field**, campo, *m.*, llanura, *f.*; **tiled** —, labor, *f.*, sembrado, *m.*  
**fifteen**, *adj.*, quince; (**group of**) —, quincena, *f.*  
**fifteenth**, *adj.*, quince, décimo (— *a*) quinto (— *a*).  
**fifth**, *adj.*, cinco, quinto, — *a.*  
**fiftieth**, *adj.*, cincuenta, quincuagésimo, — *a.*  
**fifty**, *adj.*, cincuenta.  
**fight**, pelea, *f.*, riña, *f.*; **to** —, combatir.  
**figure**, figura, *f.*  
**fill**, henchir, llenar.  
**final**, *adj.*, final, último, — *a.*  
**finally**, *adv.*, por último.  
**find**, encontrar; — **one's self**, hallarse; — **out**, averiguar.  
**fine!** *int.*, ¡bravo!  
**fineness**, finura, *f.*  
**finger**, dedo, *m.*  
**finish**, acabar, terminar.  
**fire**, fuego, *m.*; —! *int.*, ¡fuego!; **to** —, encender.  
**fireplace**, chimenea, *f.*  
**first**, primero (primer), — *a*, primo, — *a*; *adv.*, antes; **at** —, *adv.*, al principio.  
**fish**, pescado, *m.*; **to** —, pescar.  
**fist**, puño, *m.*  
**fit**, ajustar, caber, sentar; — **for**, *prep.*, a propósito para.  
**fitting**; **be** —, convenir.  
**five**, *adj.*, cinco, — **hundred**, *adj.*, quinientos, — *as*; — **hundredth**, *adj.*, quinientos, — *as*, quingentésimo, — *a.*  
**fivefold**, quintuplicado, — *a*, quíntuplo, — *a.*  
**fix**, clavar, fijar.  
**fixed**, fijo, — *a.*  
**flatter**, halagar.  
**flee**, huir.

**fleet**, armada, *f.*  
**flesh**, carne, *f.*  
**floor**, piso, *m.*, suelo, *m.*; **ground** —, piso bajo, *m.*, planta baja, *f.*  
**flow**, correr.  
**flower**, flor, *f.*  
**fluent**, *adj.*, corriente.  
**fly**, volar.  
**fog**, neblina, *f.*  
**foggy**; **be** —, haber neblina.  
**fold**, plegar.  
**foliage**, frondosidad, *f.*  
**follow**, seguir, suceder.  
**following**, *adj.*, siguiente.  
**fond**; **be** — **of**, gustar *a.*  
**fondness**, afición, *f.*  
**foot**, pie, *m.*; **on** —, *a* pie.  
**for**, *prep.*, para, por; *conj.*, que, porque, pues, puesto que; — **the sake of**, *prep.*, a fin de, por; — **fear that**, *conj.*, de miedo que, por miedo que; — **Heaven's sake!** *int.*, ¡por Dios! ¡Virgen santísima!  
**force**, brío, *m.*, fuerza, *f.*; **to** —, forzar.  
**ford**, vadear.  
**forehead**, frente, *f.*  
**foreign**, ajeno, — *a.*  
**foreigner**, extranjero, *m.*, forastero, *m.*  
**foresee**, prever.  
**forest**, bosque, *m.*  
**forget**, olvidar.  
**fork**, tenedor, *m.*  
**form**, forma, *f.*; **in the** — **of a cross**, en cruz; **to** —, formar; — **part**, formar parte.  
**formation**, formación, *f.*  
**former**, anterior, — *a*, antiguo, — *a*; — **times**, antaño, *m.*  
**formerly**, *adv.*, antiguamente.  
**forth**; **and so** —, etcétera, *f.*; **bring** —, echar al mundo; **come** —, destacarse; **give** —, despedir; **spring** —, brotar; **stretch** —, extender.  
**fortieth**, *adj.*, cuarenta, cuadragésimo, — *a.*  
**fortunate**, dichoso, — *a.*  
**fortune**, ventura, *f.*; — **teller**, adivino, *m.*

**forty**, *adj.*, cuarenta; (group of) —, cuarentena, *f.*  
**forward**, *adv.*, adelante, delante; —! *int.*, ¡adelante!  
**found**, fundar.  
**foundation**, fundación, *f.*, pedestal, *m.*  
**founder**, fundador, *m.*  
**fountain**, fuente, *f.*  
**four**, *adj.*, cuatro; — **hundredth**, *adj.*, cuatrocientos, —as, cuadringentésimo, —a; — **score**, ochentena, *f.*  
**fourfold**, cuadruplicado, —a, cuádruplo, —a.  
**fourteen**, *adj.*, catorce.  
**fourteenth**, *adj.*, catorce, décimo (—a) cuarto (—a).  
**fourth**, *adj.*, cuatro, cuarto, —a.  
**fraction**, fracción, *f.*, número quebrado, *m.*  
**fragment**, fragmento, *m.*  
**fragrance**, aroma, *m.*  
**fragrant**, *adj.*, fragante, oloroso, —a.  
**framework**, esqueleto, *m.*  
**France**, Francia, *f.*  
**fraternity**, fraternidad, *f.*, hermandad, *f.*  
**free**, librar, soltar.  
**freeze**, escarchar, helar.  
**French**, *adj.*, francés.  
**Frenchman**, francés, *m.*  
**frequency**, frecuencia, *f.*  
**Friday**, viernes, *m.*  
**fried**, frito, —a.  
**friend**, amigo, *m.*, amiga, *f.*  
**frighten**, espantar.  
**frock-coat**, levita, *f.*  
**frolicsome**, alborotador, —a.  
**from**, *prep.*, de, desde, a, por; — **everywhere**, de todas partes; — **time to time**, de vez en cuando, de cuando en cuando; **far** —, *prep.*, lejos de.  
**front**, frente, *m.* or *f.*, frontispicio, *m.*; **in** —, *adv.*, delante; **in** — **of**, *prep.*, delante de, en frente de, frente a, por delante de.  
**frost**, escarchar.  
**fruit**, fruta, *f.*; — **-garden**, huerta, *f.*

**fry**, freír.  
**full**, cargado, —a, lleno, —a.  
**fun**; **make** — (of), burlarse (de).  
**function**, función, *f.*  
**furious**, furioso, —a.  
**furniture**, mueblaje, *m.*  
**fury**, furia, *f.*  
**future**, futuro, —a; *subst.*, futuro, *m.*; — **tense**, futuro, *m.*

## G

**gain**, ganar.  
**gainsay**, desdecir.  
**Galician**, gallego, *m.*  
**gallery**, galería, *f.*  
**gallop**, galope, *m.*  
**game**, juego, *m.*; — **of checkers**, damas, *f. pl.*; — **of chess**, ajedrez, *m.*; — **of dominoes**, dominó, *m.*  
**garbanzo**, (*a kind of pea*) garbanzo, *m.*  
**garden**, jardín, *m.*; **fruit- (or kitchen-)** —, huerta, *f.*  
**garments**, prendas de vestir, *f. pl.*  
**gate**, puerta, *f.*  
**gather**, acudir, coger, reunirse.  
**gay**, *adj.*, alegre.  
**gazpacho**, (*a kind of cold soup*) gazpacho, *m.*  
**gee!** *int.*, ¡caramba!  
**gem**, alhaja, *f.*  
**gender**, género, *m.*  
**general**, *adj.*, general; *subst.*, general, *m.*  
**generally**, *adv.*, generalmente.  
**genius**, ingenio, *m.*  
**gentle**, *adj.*, dulce, blando, —a, meloso, —a.  
**gentleman**, caballero, *m.*, hidalgo, *m.*, señor, *m.*; **young** —, señorito, *m.*  
**gentleness**, dulzura, *f.*  
**geography**, geografía, *f.*  
**germinate**, brotar.  
**gesture**, gesto, *m.*  
**get**, buscar; — **out!** *int.*, ¡quita! ¡quítese V.!.; — **up**, levantarse; — **up!** *int.*, ¡arrel!; — **well**, res-tablecerse.  
**giant**, gigante, *m.*



**gift**, merced, *f.*, regalo, *m.*  
**gild**, dorar.  
**gipsy**, gitano, *m.*, gitana, *f.*  
**gird**, ceñir.  
**girl**, muchacha, *f.*, niña, *f.*  
**give**, dar; — **entrance**, dejar paso; — **forth**, despedir; — **notice**, avisar; — **way**, dejar paso.  
**glad**, contento, *-a*; **be** —, alegrarse.  
**glance**, mirada, *f.*; **to** —, mirar; — **over**, leer por cima.  
**glass**, vaso, *m.*  
**glorify**, glorificar.  
**glory**, gloria, *f.*  
**glove**, guante, *m.*  
**gnaw**, roer.  
**go**, andar, ir, encaminarse, marcharse; — **away**, alejarse, marcharse; — **backwards**, ir de espaldas; — **down**, bajar; — **for**, buscar; — **half-way round**, dar media vuelta; — **on**, continuar; — **on!** *int.*, ¡adelante! ¡alza! ¡anda!; — **out**, salir; — **through**, andar (por); — **to bed**, acostarse; **how** — **es it?** ¿qué tal?  
**God**, Dios, *m.*; — **grant!** *int.*, ¡ojalá!; — **help me!** *int.*, ¡válgame Dios! ¡Dios me valga!  
**gold**, oro, *m.*  
**golden**, amarillento, *-a*.  
**good**, bueno (buen), *-a*; — **afternoon!** ¡buenas tardes!; — **-by!** ¡adiós!; — **day!** ¡buenos días!; — **evening!** ¡buenas noches!; — **heavens!** *int.*, ¡canastos! ¡caracoles! ¡carái! ¡caramba! ¡cáspita! ¡córcholis!; — **looking**, guapo, *-a*; **a** — **many**, *adj. and pron.*, muchos, *-as*, varios, *-as*; — **morning!** ¡buenos días!; — **night!** ¡buenas noches!  
**goodness!** *int.*, ¡canastos! ¡caracoles! ¡carái! ¡caramba! ¡cáspita! ¡córcholis! ¡Dios!  
**govern**, gobernar, regir.  
**gown**, traje, *m.*  
**grace**, donaire, *m.*, gracia, *f.*, merced, *f.*

**graceful**, airoso, *-a*, pulcro, *-a*.  
**gracefulness**, salero, *m.*  
**gracious!** *int.*, ¡Dios!  
**gradually**, *adv.*, poco a poco.  
**grain**, mies, *f.*  
**grammar**, gramática, *f.*  
**Granada**, Granada.  
**grandfather**, abuelo, *m.*  
**grandmother**, abuela, *f.*  
**grant**; **God** —! *int.*, ¡ojalá!  
**grasp**, asir.  
**grass**, hierba, *f.*  
**grateful**; **be** — **for**, agradecer.  
**grave**, *adj.*, grave.  
**gravy**, salsa, *f.*  
**graze**, pacer.  
**great**, *adj.*, grande (*gran*), gordo, *-a*; **a** — **deal**, *adj. and pron.*, mucho, *-a*; **as** (*or so*) —, tamaño, *-a*.  
**greater**, mayor (*comp. of grande*); — **part**, la mayor parte.  
**Greek**, griego, *-a*.  
**green**, *adj.*, verde.  
**greet**, saludar.  
**greeting**, saludo, *m.*  
**grief**, dolor, *m.*  
**grind**, moler.  
**grinding**, molienda, *f.*  
**groan**, gemir.  
**groom**, peinar.  
**gross**, grosero, *-a*.  
**ground**, suelo, *m.*  
**group**, grupo, *m.*, círculo, *m.*; — **of a hundred**, centena, *f.*, centenar, *m.*; — **of a thousand**, millar, *m.* (*generally used in the plural*); — **of eighty**, ochentena, *f.*; — **of fifteen**, quincena, *f.*; — **of forty**, cuarentena, *f.*; — **of ten**, decena, *f.*; — **of thirty**, treintena, *f.*; — **of twelve**, docena, *f.*; — **of twenty**, veintena, *f.*  
**grove**, bosque, *m.*  
**grow**, crecer; — **dark**, anochecer.  
**Guadalquivir**, (*The*), El Guadalquivir, *m.*  
**guard**, guardia, *f.*  
**guide**, guía, *m. or f.*, norte, *m.*; **to** —, guiar.  
**guitar**, guitarra, *f.*  
**gutter**, arroyo, *m.*

## H

ha! *int.*, ¡ha!

haberdashery, camisería *f.*

haggle, regatear.

hail, granizar.

hair, cabello, *m.* (*also used in the plural*), pelo, *m.* (*of head, or in general*).

half, medio, *-a*; *subst.*, mitad, *f.*; — an hour's journey, media hora de camino; — open, entreabrir; go —-way round, dar media vuelta.

hall, aula, *f.*, sala, *f.*; reception —, sala (*f.*) de recibo; Commencement Hall, Paraninfo, *m.*

halt! *int.*, ¡alto!

hammer, martillo, *m.*

hammering, martilleo, *m.*

hand, mano, *f.*, (*of watch or clock*) manecilla, *f.*; — ball, pelota, *f.*, — organ, organillo, *m.*; holding —s, cogidos de la mano; on the other —, al contrario, en cambio.

handed; one —, manco, *-a*.

handkerchief, pañuelo, *m.*

handsome, guapo, *-a*, hermoso, *-a*.

hang, colgar; — up, colgar.

hanging, *adj.*, pendiente.

happen, acaecer, acontecer, pasar, suceder, acertar.

happiness, dicha, *f.*, felicidad, *f.*

happy, dichoso, *-a*.

hard, *adj.*, difícil, fuerte; rain —, diluviar.

hardly, *adv.*, apenas.

harvest, cosecha, *f.*, recolección, *f.*

haste; in —, *adv.*, apriesa, aprisa.

hasten (to help), acudir.

hat, sombrero, *m.*

hate, odio, *m.*; to —, odiar.

hatred, odio, *m.*

haughty, altivo, *-a*.

have, tener; — a glimpse of, entrever; — made, mandar hacer; — recourse to, recurrir.

he, *pers. pron.*, él, *m.*

head, cabeza, *f.*, (*of a coin*) cara, *f.*

headache, dolor de cabeza, *m.*

health, salud, *f.*

hear, entender, oír.

hearing, oído, *m.*

heart, corazón, *m.*, alma, *f.*

heat, calor, *m.*

heaven, cielo, *m.*; for Heaven's sake! *int.*, ¡por Dios! ¡Virgen santísima!

heavens! *int.*, ¡cielos! ¡Dios!; good —! *int.*, ¡canastos! ¡caracoles! ¡carái! ¡caramba! ¡cáspita! ¡cór-cholis!; oh —! *int.*, ¡Jesús!

heavily, *adv.*, pesadamente.

heavy, *adj.*, pesado, *-a*, grave.

heed, atender.

heel, talón, *m.*

height, altura, *f.*, colmo, *m.*

hello! *int.*, ¡hola! (*written also* ¡ola! ¡oiga! ¡oye!

help, ayudar; —! *int.*, ¡socorro!; God — me! *int.*, ¡Dios me valga! ¡válgame Dios!

hen, gallina, *f.*

henceforth, *adv.*, de aquí (*or de allí*) en adelante.

her, *pers. pron.*, ella, *la*, *f.*; to —, *pers. pron.*, le, *f.*; *poss. adj.*, su.

here, *adv.*, acá, aquí; —, —! (*to dogs*), *int.*, ¡tus tus!; come —! (*to dogs*), *int.*, ¡tus tus!

hero, héroe, *m.*

herself, *pers. pron.*, se, sí, *f.*; with —, *pers. pron.*, consigo, *f.*

hidden, oculto, *-a*.

hide, esconder, ocultar.

high, alto, *-a*.

hill, cerro, *m.*, cuesta, *f.*

hillock, loma, *f.*

him, *pers. pron.*, él, le, *m.*; to —, *pers. pron.*, le, *m.*

himself, *pers. pron.*, se, sí, *m.*; with —, *pers. pron.*, consigo, *m.*

hinder, impedir.

hip, cadera, *f.*

his, *poss. adj.*, su.

historical, histórico, *-a*.

history, historia, *f.*

hit, dar en.

hither and thither, de un lado a otro.

ho! *int.*, ¡hola! (*written also* ¡ola!).

hold, tener, coger; -ing hands, cogidos de la mano.

holiday, fiesta, *f.*

**holy**, sagrado, -a, santo (san), -a;  
**Holy Land**, Tierra Santa, *f.*  
**homage**, homenaje, *m.*  
**home**, casa, *f.*; *adv.*, a casa; —  
**country**, patria, *f.*  
**honor**, honor, *m.*, merced, *f.*  
**hope**, esperanza, *f.*; **to** —, esperar.  
**horizon**, horizonte, *m.*  
**horrible**, *adj.*, horrible.  
**horrid**, *adj.*, horrible.  
**horror**, horror, *m.*  
**horse**, caballo, *m.*, caballería, *f.*  
**hospitable**, hospitalario, -a.  
**host**, patrón, *m.*  
**hostile**, enemigo, -a.  
**hot**; **be** —, (*of weather*) hacer calor; (*of beings*) tener calor; (*of objects*) ser (*or estar*) caliente.  
**hotel**, fonda, *f.*, hotel, *m.*, posada, *f.*  
**hour**, hora, *f.*; **half an** —'s journey, media hora de camino; —**hand**, horario, *m.*  
**house**, casa, *f.*; **manor** —, casa solar; **out of the** —, *adv.*, afuera.  
**how**, *adv.*, (*used to inquire regarding way, means, or manner*) ¿cómo?; (*used instead of ¿cómo? to inquire after the quality or condition of a person or thing*) ¿qué tal?; — **goes it?** ¿qué tal?; — **much**, *pl.*, — **many**, *inter. pron. and adj.*, ¿cuánto, -a? ¿cuántos, -as?; — **sorry I am**, lo mucho que siento.  
**however**, *adv.*, sin embargo; *conj.*, como quiera que; por . . . que.  
**huge**, desahogado, -a.  
**human**, humano, -a.  
**humor**, humor, *m.*; **to** —, complacer.  
**hundred**, *adj.*, ciento (cien), -a; (*group of a*) —, centena, *f.*, centenar, *m.*; —**fold**, céntuplo, -a; **five** —, *adj.*, quinientos, -as; **nine** —, *adj.*, novecientos, -as; **seven** —, *adj.*, setecientos, -as.  
**hundredth**, *adj.*, ciento, centésimo, -a; **eight** —, *adj.*, ochocientos, -as, octingentésimo, -a; **five** —, *adj.*, quinientos, -as, quingentésimo, -a; **four** —, *adj.*, cuatrocientos, -as, cuatringentésimo,

-a; **nine** —, *adj.*, novecientos, -as, noningentésimo, -a, **seven** —, *adj.*, setecientos, -as, septingentésimo, -a; **six** —, *adj.*, seiscientos, -as, sexcentésimo, -a; **three** —, *adj.*, trescientos, -as, tricentésimo, -a; **two** —, *adj.*, doscientos, -as, ducentésimo, -a.  
**hunger**, hambre, *f.*  
**hungry**, hambriento, -a; **be** —, tener hambre.  
**hunt**, cazar.  
**hurl**, lanzar.  
**hurry**, prisa, *f.*; **be in a** —, tener prisa.  
**hurt**, maltrecho, -a.  
**husband**, esposo, *m.*, marido, *m.*  
**hut**, barraca, *f.*, caserío, *m.*, choza, *f.*; **miserable** —, casucha, *f.*

## I

**I**, *pers. pron.*, yo.  
**idea**, idea, *f.*, noción, *f.*  
**idiom**, modismo, *m.*  
**idleness**, holganza, *f.*  
**if**, *conj.*, si, sea que.  
**ignorant**; **be** — **of**, desconocer.  
**ill**, enfermo, -a, malo (mal), -a; *adv.*, mal, a mal, — **treated**, maltrecho, -a; — **treatment**, maltratamiento, *m.*  
**illusion**, ilusión, *f.*  
**image**, imagen, *f.*  
**imagination**, imaginación, *f.*  
**imagine**, figurarse.  
**imitate**, imitar.  
**Immaculate Conception**, Inmaculada Concepción, *f.*  
**immediately**, *adv.*, de pronto, en seguida, inmediatamente.  
**immense**, inmenso, -a.  
**impatience**, impaciencia, *f.*  
**impede**, impedir.  
**imperative**, imperativo, *m.*  
**imperfect**, imperfecto, -a; *subst.*, (pretérito) imperfecto, *m.*  
**imperious**, imperioso, -a.  
**impersonally**, *adv.*, impersonalmente.  
**importance**, importancia, *f.*

- important**, *adj.*, importante.  
**impose upon**, imponer, embaír.  
**imposed**, impuesto, -a.  
**imposing**, *adj.*, imponente.  
**impossible**, *adj.*, imposible.  
**impression**, impresión, *f.*  
**improper**, impropio, -a.  
**in**, *prep.*, a, en, por; — **behalf of**, *prep.*, por; — **case that**, *conj.*, dado que, en tanto que; — **comparison with**, *prep.*, con relación a; — **front**, *adv.*, delante; — **front of**, *prep.*, delante (de), en frente de, frente a, por delante de; — **haste**, *adv.*, apriesa, apriisa; — **love**, enamorado, -a; — **measure**, *adv.*, a compás; — **order to**, *prep.*, para; — **order that**, *conj.*, a fin que, para que, por que, que; — **proportion as**, *conj.*, como; — **short**, en fin; — **spite of**, *prep.*, a pesar de; — **spite of**, *conj.*, a pesar de que; — **the direction of**, *prep.*, camino de; — **time**, *adv.*, (*of music*) a compás.  
**inclination**, gana, *f.* (*more commonly used in plural*), través, *m.*  
**incline**, inclinar.  
**inclined**; **be** —, tener ganas.  
**inconvenient**, incómodo, -a, inoportuno, -a.  
**increase**, acrecentar, crecer.  
**indefinite**, indeterminado, -a.  
**indefinitely**, *adv.*, indefinidamente.  
**indelicate**, grosero, -a.  
**independence**, independencia, *f.*  
**independent**, *adj.*, independiente.  
**indicate**, indicar, marcar, señalar.  
**indicative**, indicativo, *m.*  
**Indies**; **West** —, las Indias occidentales, *f. pl.*  
**indifferent**, *adj.*, indiferente.  
**indignant**, indignado, -a.  
**indignity**, afrenta, *f.*  
**indisposed**, indispuerto, -a.  
**indisposition**, indisposición, *f.*  
**indolent**, *adj.*, remolón.  
**induce**, inducir.  
**industrial**, *adj.*, industrial.  
**industry**, industria, *f.*  
**inequality**, desigualdad, *f.*  
**infer**, colegir, inferir.  
**inferior**, *adj.*, inferior.  
**inferiority**, inferioridad, *f.*  
**infinitive**, infinitivo, *m.*  
**inflection**, inflexión, *f.*  
**inform**, avisar; — **of**, indicar.  
**inhabit**, habitar.  
**inhabitant**, natural, *m. and f.*  
**inimical**, enemigo, -a.  
**inn**, fonda, *f.*, posada, *f.*  
**inner**, *adj.*, interior; — **court**, patio, *m.*  
**inopportune**, inoportuno, -a.  
**inquire**, inquirir.  
**inquiry**, pregunta, *f.*  
**inscribe**, dedicar, inscribir.  
**inside**, *adv.*, adentro, dentro; **on the** —, por dentro.  
**insolent**, *adj.*, insolente.  
**inspiration**, inspiración, *f.*  
**inspire**, inspirar.  
**instant**, instante, *m.*  
**instead of**, *prep.*, en vez de; *conj.*, en vez de que.  
**instinct**, instinto, *m.*  
**institute**, instituir.  
**instruct**, instruir.  
**instruction**, instrucción, *f.*  
**intend**, pensar, tener la intención.  
**intention**, intención, *f.*, propósito, *m.*  
**interest**, interés, *m.*; **to** —, interesar.  
**interesting**, *adj.*, interesante.  
**interior**, *adj.*, interior; *subst.*, interior, *m.*  
**interjection**, interjección, *f.*  
**interminable**, *adj.*, interminable.  
**interrogative**, interrogativo, -a.  
**interrupt**, interrumpir.  
**intersect**, cortar.  
**intimate**, íntimo, -a.  
**into**, *prep.*, en.  
**introduce**, introducir, presentar.  
**introduction**, introducción, *f.*, presentación, *f.*  
**invariable**, *adj.*, invariable.  
**invent**, inventar.  
**invert**, invertir.  
**invitation**, invitación, *f.*  
**invite**, atraer, invitar.  
**involve**, enzarzar.

**iron**, hierro, *m.*, to — (*linen*), planchar.

**ironworker**, herrero, *m.*

**irregular**, *adj.*, irregular.

**is**; there —, hay; — it not true? ¿verdad? ¿no es verdad?

**Isabel**, Isabel, *f.*

**it**, *pers. pron.*, él, *m.*, ella, *f.*, ello, *n.*, lo, *m.* or *n.*, le, *m.*, la, *f.*; to —, *pers. pron.*, le, *m.* or *f.*

**Italian**, italiano, *-a*.

**Italy**, Italia, *f.*

**itching**, hormigueo, *m.*

**its**, *poss. adj.*, su.

**itself**, *pers. pron.*, se, sí.

## J

**James**, Diego, *m.*, Jaime, *m.*

**January**, enero, *m.*

**jealous**; be —, tener celos.

**jealousy**, celos, *m. pl.*

**jest**, burla, *f.*

**Jesus**, Jesús, *m.*; — **Christ**, Jesucristo, *m.*

**jewel**, alhaja, *f.*

**jeweler**, joyero, *m.*

**John**, Juan, *m.*

**join**, juntar, reunir.

**Joseph**, José, *m.*

**journey**, viaje, *m.*, jornada, *f.*;

half an hour's —, media hora de camino.

**Jove**; by —! *int.*, ¡canastos! ¡caracoles! ¡carái! ¡caramba! ¡cáspita! ¡córcholis!

**joy**, alegría, *f.*, gozo, *m.*

**judge**, juez, *m.*

**Julia**, Julia, *f.*

**July**, julio, *m.*

**June**, junio, *m.*

**just**, justo, *-a*; — **so**, *adv.*, justo; — **as** . . . **so** (too), *conj.*, así como . . . así (también); **to have** — . . ., acabar de . . .

**justice**, justicia, *f.*

## K

**keep**, conservar, detener, guardar, quedar(se) con; — **it up**! *int.*, ¡alza! ¡anda!; — **in**, guardar; — **from**, guardarse de.

**kerchief**, pañuelo, *m.*

**kidney bean**, judía, *f.*

**kill**, matar.

**killed**, muerto, *-a*.

**kind**, género, *m.*; *adj.*, amable, bondadoso, *-a*, cariñoso, *-a*; **be so** — **as**, tener la bondad de.

**kindle**, encender.

**kindness**, amabilidad, *f.*

**king**, rey, *m.*

**kinsman**, pariente, *m.*

**kiss**, besar.

**kitchen**, cocina, *f.*; — **garden**, huerta, *f.*

**kitty**; **come**, —! *int.*, ¡miz miz!; —, —! *int.*, ¡miz miz!

**knavish**, picaresco, *-a*.

**knee**, rodilla, *f.*

**knife**, cuchillo, *m.*

**knight**, caballero, *m.*; **dub** —, armar caballero; — **errantry**, caballería andantesca.

**knock**, llamar.

**know**, conocer, saber; — **how**, saber; **not** —, desconocer.

**knowledge**, conocimiento, *m.*

**known**, conocido. *-a*.

## L

**laboratory**, laboratorio, *m.*

**lace**, encaje, *m.*

**lack**, falta, *f.*; **to** —, faltar.

**lady**, señora, *f.*, dama, *f.*, doña, *f.*; **young** (*unmarried*) —, señorita, *f.*; — **love**, dama, *f.*

**lake**, lago, *m.*

**lamb**, corderillo, *m.*

**lame**, cojo, *-a*.

**lamp**, lámpara, *f.*, quinqué, *m.*

**lance**, lanza, *f.*; **blow with a** —, lanzada, *f.*

**land**, tierra, *f.*; **Holy Land**, Tierra Santa, *f.*; **native** —, patria, *f.*

**landlord**, patrón, *m.*

**lane**, callejuela, *f.*

**language**, idioma, *m.*, lengua, *f.*

**lap**, falda, *f.*

**large**, *adj.*, grande (gran), numeroso, *-a*; — **eared**, orejudo, *-a*; — **nosed**, *adj.*, narigón; —

room, sala, *f.*; as (*or so*) —, tamaño, -a.  
 last, *adj.*, final, postrero (postrer), -a, último, -a, pasado, -a; — night, *adv.*, anoche; at —, al fin y al cabo, en fin; next to the —, penúltimo, -a; to —, durar.  
 late, difunto, -a; *adv.*, tarde.  
 later; I'll see you —, hasta luego.  
 laugh, risa, *f.*; to — (at), burlarse (de), reír(se) (de).  
 laughing; burst out —, soltar la carcajada.  
 laughter, carcajada, *f.*, risa, *f.*; burst of —, carcajada, *f.*  
 laundress, lavandera, *f.*  
 lawyer, abogado, *m.*  
 lay, poner.  
 lazy, perezoso, -a.  
 lead, dirigir.  
 leader, jefe, *m.*  
 leaf, hoja, *f.*  
 leafy, frondoso, -a.  
 league, legua, *f.*  
 lean, inclinar.  
 leap year, año bisiesto, *m.*  
 learn, aprender, saber.  
 least, *adj.*, el (*or la*) menor; *adv.*, menos; at —, al menos, a lo menos, por lo menos.  
 leave, dejar, quitar, salir; take —, despedirse; — taking, despedida, *f.*  
 lecture, conferencia, *f.*  
 left, izquierdo, -a.  
 leg, pierna, *f.*  
 legend, leyenda, *f.*  
 lemon, limón, *m.*  
 lend, prestar.  
 lengthen, alargar.  
 Lent, Cuaresma, *f.*  
 Lepanto, Lepanto.  
 less, *adj.*, menor; *adv.*, menos; the — ... the —, cuanto menos ... (tanto) menos.  
 lesson, lección, *f.*  
 lest, *conj.*, no sea que.  
 let, dejar, permitir; — us see, vamos a ver.  
 letter, carta, *f.*, letra, *f.*; capital —, mayúscula, *f.*; small —, minúscula, *f.*

liberate, librar.  
 liberty, libertad, *f.*  
 library, biblioteca, *f.*  
 lie, mentir, residir, yacer; — down, acostarse.  
 life, vida, *f.*; of —, *adj.*, vital.  
 lift (up), alzar, erguir, levantar.  
 light, luz, *f.*; *adj.*, ligero, -a; to —, iluminar, encender.  
 lighten, relampaguear.  
 like, *adj.*, semejante, parecido, -a; *conj.*, como; — a cross, en cruz; to —, desear, gustar, querer.  
 likeable, simpático, -a.  
 likely to, *prep.*, a propósito para.  
 likewise, *adv.*, igualmente.  
 limb, ramo, *m.*  
 lime, cal, *f.*  
 limit, colmo, *m.*; to —, limitar.  
 line, línea, *f.*  
 link, ensartar.  
 lion, león, *m.*  
 lip, labio, *m.*  
 list, lista, *f.*  
 listen, escuchar; — ! *int.*, ¡oiga! ¡oye!  
 literary, literario, -a.  
 literature, literatura, *f.*  
 little, *adj.*, chico, -a, menudo, -a, pequeño, -a, poco, -a, poquito, -a; *pron.*, pocos, -as; *adv.*, poco; — boy, chiquillo, *m.*; — by —, poco a poco; — fellow, chiquillo, *m.*; — square, plazoleta, *f.*; very —, poquito, -a.  
 live, vivir.  
 liveliness, viveza, *f.*  
 lively, brioso, -a, bullicioso -a, vivo, -a; — ! *int.*, ¡alza! ¡anda!  
 load, cargar, cuajar.  
 loaded, cargado, -a.  
 lobster, langosta, *f.*  
 local, *adj.*, local.  
 lock; — up, encerrar.  
 locution, locución, *f.*  
 lodge, alojar.  
 lodging, alojamiento, *m.*  
 lofty, altivo, -a, alto, -a.  
 loge, palco, *m.*  
 long, largo, -a; — ago, antaño, *m.*; (a) — while, mucho rato; so — ! (*fam.*) ¡hasta luego!; — for, antojarse.

**look**, mirar; — **after**, cuidar (de);  
— **at**, mirar; — **for**, buscar; —  
**like**, parecer, parecerse a; —  
**out!** *int.*, ¡cuidado!  
**loosen**, soltar, solver.  
**lord**, señor, *m.*  
**lordship**, (*appellation of honor given  
to bishops and other persons of a  
certain dignity*) ilustrísimo, -a.  
**lose**, perder.  
**loud**, alto, -a, estrepitoso, -a; *adv.*,  
alto, fuerte.  
**loudly**, *adv.*, alto, fuerte.  
**Louis**, Luis, *m.*  
**love**, amor, *m.*; **in** —, enamorado,  
-a; **to** —, amar, querer; **inspire**  
—, enamorar.  
**loving**, amoroso, -a.  
**low**, *adj.*, bajo; *adv.*, bajo.  
**lower**, *adj.*, inferior; **to** —, bajar.  
**luck**, ventura, *f.*  
**Luke**, Lucas, *m.*  
**lunch**, almuerzo, *m.*; **to** —, meren-  
dar.  
**lungs**, pulmones, *m. pl.*  
**luxuriant**, frondoso, -a.  
**luxury**, lujo, *m.*

## M

**machine**, máquina, *f.*  
**mad**, loco, -a.  
**madam**, (*as term of address*) seño-  
ra, *f.*  
**made**; **have** —, mandar hacer.  
**Madrid**, Madrid.  
**Magi**, Reyes (Magos), *m. pl.*  
**magnificent**, magnífico, -a.  
**maimed**, manco, -a.  
**maintain**, mantener, sostener.  
**make**, hacer; — **fun** (of), burlarse  
(de); — **one's self understood**,  
hacerse entender; — **use of**,  
emplear.  
**maker**; **cigar** (*or cigarette*) —, ci-  
garrera, *f.*; — of wafers, barqui-  
llero, *m.*  
**Malaga**, Málaga; **man from** —,  
malagueño, *m.*  
**man**, hombre, *m.*, caballero, *m.*,  
señor, *m.*; — **alive!** *int.*, ¡hom-  
bre!; — **from Malaga**, mala-

gueño, *m.*; **old** —, viejo, *m.*, tío,  
*m.*; **young** —, joven, *m.*, señorito,  
*m.*  
**management**, dirección, *f.*  
**manager**, administrador, *m.*  
**manifest**, manifestar.  
**manly**, *adj.*, varonil.  
**manner**, manera, *f.*, modo, *m.*;  
**pleasing** —, gracia, *f.*  
**mantilla**, mantilla, *f.*  
**mantle**, manto, *m.*  
**manufactory**, fábrica, *f.*  
**manufacture**, fabricación, *f.*; **to** —,  
fabricar.  
**manufacturing**, fabricación, *f.*  
**many**, *adj. and pron.*, muchos, -as;  
**a good (or great)** —, *adj. and  
pron.*, varios, -as, muchos, -as;  
**as** —, *adj. and pron.*, sendos,  
-as; **as** —as, *adj. and pron.*,  
cuantos, -as, tantos (-as) . . .  
cuantos (-as); **how** —? *inter. adj.  
and pron.*, ¿cuántos, -as?; **so** —,  
*adj. and pron.*, tantos, -as; **too**  
—, *adj. and pron.*, demasiados,  
-as; — **colored**, *adj.*, multi-  
color; — **hued**, *adj.*, multi-  
color.  
**map**, mapa, *m.*  
**marble**, mármol, *m.*  
**march**, marcha, *f.*  
**March**, marzo, *m.*  
**mark**, indicar, marcar, trazar.  
**marry**, casar.  
**martyr**, mártir, *m.*  
**marvel**, admirar.  
**marvelous**, maravilloso, -a.  
**Mary**, María, *f.*  
**masculine**, *adj.*, varonil, mascu-  
lino, -a.  
**mason**, albañil, *m.*  
**mass**, amasijo, *m.*, mole, *f.*, misa,  
*f.*; **Mass of the Cock**, Misa del  
Gallo; **midnight** — **on Christ-**  
**mas Eve**, Misa del Gallo.  
**master**, amo, *m.*, dueño, *m.*,  
maestro, *m.*, señor, *m.*; (*term  
of address applied to a young  
gentleman*) señorito, *m.*  
**masterpiece**, obra maestra, *f.*  
**matador**, (*he who slays the bull by  
a sword-thrust downward between*

- the shoulders*) espada, *m.*, matador, *m.*  
**match**, fósforo, *m.*  
**material**, material, *m.*  
**matter**, importar.  
**Maundy Thursday**, Jueves Santo, *m.*  
**May**, mayo, *m.*  
**me**, *pers. pron.*, me, mí; **to** —, *pers. pron.*, me; **with** —, *pers. pron.*, conmigo; **dear** —! *int.*, ¡Dios mío!  
**meal**, comida, *f.*  
**mean**, querer decir, significar.  
**meaning**, sentido, *m.*, significación, *f.*  
**means**, medio, *m.*; **by** — **of**, por medio de, *prep.*  
**meanwhile**, *adv.*, entre tanto.  
**measure**, compás, *m.*, medida, *f.*; **beyond** —, *adv.*, sobremanera; **to** —, medir.  
**meat**, carne, *f.*  
**meekness**, mansedumbre, *f.*  
**meet**, encontrar, cruzarse con; **until we** — **again**, hasta la vista.  
**melancholy**, melancolía, *f.*, tristeza, *f.*  
**melt**, derretir.  
**member**, miembro, *m.*, socio, *m.*  
**memorable**, *adj.*, memorable.  
**memory**, memoria, *f.*  
**Men**, (Wise), Reyes (Magos), *m. pl.*  
**mention**, mención, *f.*; **to** —, mencionar, nombrar.  
**menu**, lista, *f.*  
**mercy**, misericordia, *f.*  
**mere**, mero, —a.  
**merit**, mérito, *m.*  
**merriment**, alegría, *f.*  
**method**, método, *m.*  
**Michael**, Miguel, *m.*  
**middle**, medio, *m.*  
**midnight**, media noche, *f.*; — **mass on Christmas Eve**, Misa del Gallo.  
**mild**, blando, —a.  
**milk**, leche, *f.*  
**mill**, molino, *m.*; — **-dam**, presa, *f.*  
**miller**, molinero, *m.*  
**million**, (a), *adj.*, millón.  
**millionth**, *adj.*, millón, millonésimo, —a.  
**mind**, mente, *f.*; **to** —, atender.  
**mineral**, mineral, *m.*  
**minute**, minuto, *m.*; — **-hand**, minutero, *m.*  
**miraculous**, milagroso, —a.  
**mirror**, espejo, *m.*  
**mischievous**, malicioso, —a.  
**misery**, miseria, *f.*  
**miss**, señorita, *f.*; **to** —, echar de menos.  
**mist**, neblina, *f.*  
**mistaken**; **be** —, equivocarse.  
**mister**, señor, *m.*  
**mistress**, dueña, *f.*  
**misty**; **be** —, haber neblina.  
**misused**, maltrato, —a.  
**moan**, quejarse.  
**mode**, modo, *m.*  
**model**, forma, *f.*  
**moderate**, módico, —a.  
**modern**, moderno, —a.  
**modestly**, *adv.*, modestamente.  
**modify**, calificar.  
**molest**, molestar.  
**moment**, instante, *m.*; **at this** —, en este acto.  
**Monday**, lunes, *m.*  
**money**, dinero, *m.*, moneda, *f.*  
**monopoly**, monopolio, *m.*  
**monotonous**, monótono, —a.  
**monster**, monstruo, *m.*  
**monte**, (a game of cards) monte, *m.*  
**month**, mes, *m.*  
**monument**, monumento, *m.*  
**mood**, modo, *m.*  
**moon**, luna, *f.*  
**moonlight**; **be** —, haber luna.  
**Moor**, moro, *m.*  
**Moorish**, morisco, —a, moro, —a, moruno, —a.  
**more**, *adv.*, más; **the** — . . . **the** —, cuanto más, . . . (tanto) más, mientras más . . . más; **the** — **since**, *conj.*, cuanto más que.  
**moreover**, *adv.*, además.  
**morning**, mañana, *f.*; **good** —! *int.*, ¡buenos días!  
**morrow**, mañana, *f.*  
**mosque**, mezquita, *f.*



**most**, *adv.*, más; (*before nouns*) la mayor parte de.  
**mother**, madre, *f.*  
**motionless**, *adj.*, inmóvil.  
**motive**, motivo, *m.*  
**motley**, abigarrado, -a.  
**mount**, subir, ascender, montar.  
**mountain**, montaña, *f.*, monte, *m.*  
**mounted police officer**, alguacil, *m.*  
**mouth**, boca, *f.*  
**move**, mover, agitar, trasladar.  
**movement**, movimiento, *m.*  
**Mrs.** señora, *f.*  
**much**, *adj. and pron.*, mucho, -a; *adv.*, mucho; **too** —, *adv.*, demasiado; **as** — **as**, *adj. and pron.*, tanto (-a) . . . cuanto (-a); **how** —? *inter. adj. and pron.*, ¿cuánto, -a?; **so** —, *adj. and pron.*, tanto, -a; **so** — **that**, *conj.*, tanto (-a) . . . que; **too** —, *adj. and pron.*, demasiado, -a.  
**mud**, lodo, *m.*  
**muddy**; **be** —, haber lodo.  
**mule**, mula, *f.*  
**multiple**, múltiplo, -a, multiplicativo, -a.  
**multitude**, gentío, *m.*  
**murder**! *int.*, ¡al asesino!  
**murderer**, asesino, *m.*  
**murmur**, murmullo, *m.*  
**museum**, museo, *m.*  
**music**, música, *f.*  
**musical**, *adj.*, musical; — **comedy**, zarzuela, *f.*  
**musician**, músico, *m.*  
**mute**, mudo, -a.  
**my**, *poss. adj.*, mi.  
**mysterious**, misterioso, -a.  
**mystery**, misterio, *m.*

## N

**nag**, jaco, *m.*  
**nail**, clavar.  
**name**, nombre, *m.*; **to** —, llamar, nombrar.  
**nap**; **afternoon** —, siesta; **take the afternoon** —, dormir la siesta.  
**nape** (*of the neck*), nuca, *f.*  
**napkin**, servilleta, *f.*  
**Naples**, Nápoles.

**narrate**, narrar.  
**narration**, relación, *f.*, narración, *f.*  
**narrow**, angosto, -a, estrecho, -a.  
**nation**, nación, *f.*  
**national**, *adj.*, nacional.  
**native**, natural, *m. and f.*; — **land**, patria, *f.*; — **of Murcia**, murciano, -a; — **of Navarre**, navarro, -a.  
**nativity**, natividad, *f.*  
**natural**, *adj.*, natural.  
**naturally**, *adv.*, naturalmente.  
**near**, *adv.*, cerca; *prep.*, cerca (de), junto a; — **by**, cercano, -a; **draw** —, acercar(se) de (*or a*).  
**nearest**, inmediato, -a, próximo, -a.  
**nearly**, *adv.*, casi.  
**nearness**, proximidad, *f.*  
**neat**, pulcro, -a.  
**neatness**, aseó, *m.*  
**necessary**, *adj.*, esencial, necesario, -a, obligado, -a, preciso, -a; **be** —, ser preciso, ser de esencia.  
**neck**, cuello, *m.*  
**necktie**, corbata, *f.*  
**need**, haber menester, necesitar.  
**needle**, aguja, *f.*  
**negation**, negación, *f.*  
**negative**, negativo, -a.  
**neighbor**, vecino, *m.*, vecina, *f.*  
**neighboring**, cercano, -a.  
**neither**, *adv.*, tampoco; *conj.*, ni; — . . . **nor**, no (ni) . . . ni.  
**nest**, nido, *m.*  
**neuter**, neutro, -a.  
**never**, *adv.*, nunca, jamás.  
**nevertheless**, *adv.*, aun (aún), sin embargo.  
**new**, nuevo, -a; **New Year**, Año Nuevo, *m.*  
**New York**, Nueva York.  
**news**, noticia, *f.*  
**newspaper**, periódico, *m.*  
**next**, próximo, -a, siguiente, inmediato, -a; *adv.*, luego; — **to the last**, penúltimo, -a.  
**nice**, lindo, -a.  
**nickname**, sobrenombre, *m.*  
**night**, noche, *f.*; **last** —, *adv.*, anoche, — **before last**, *adv.*,

anteanoche; arrive at —, anochecer.  
**nightly**, nocturno, -a.  
**nine**, *adj.*, nueve; — **hundred**, *adj.*, novecientos, -as; — **hundredth**, *adj.*, novecientos, -as, noningentésimo, -a.  
**nineteenth**, *adj.*, diez y nueve, décimo (-a) nono (-a).  
**ninetieth**, *adj.*, noventa, nonagésimo, -a.  
**ninety**, *adj.*, noventa.  
**ninth**, *adj.*, nueve, nono, -a, noveno, -a.  
**no**, *adv.*, no; *adj. and pron.*, ninguno (ningún), -a; — **one**, *ad. and pron.*, ninguno (ningún), -a; — **sooner**, apenas; **why** —! *int.*, ¡ca! ¡quíá!  
**noble**, *adj.*, noble; of — **birth**, *adj.*, noble.  
**nobleman**, hidalgo, *m.*  
**nobody**, *pron.*, nadie, ninguno, -a.  
**nocturnal**, nocturno, -a.  
**noise**, bullicio, *m.*, estruendo, *m.*, ruido, *m.*  
**noisy**, alborotador, -a, bullicioso, -a, estrepitoso, -a.  
**nomadic**, *adj.*, nómada.  
**none**, *adj. and pron.*, ninguno (ningún), -a.  
**nonsense**! *int.*, ¡calla! ¡calle!  
**noon**, mediodía, *m.*  
**noonday**, mediodía, *m.*  
**nor**, *conj.*, ni; **neither** . . . —, no (ni) . . . ni.  
**north**, norte, *m.*  
**nose**, nariz, *f.*  
**not**, *adv.*, no; — **at all**, *adv.*, nada; — **either**, *adv.*, tampoco; — **even**, *conj.*, ni, ni aun, no . . . ni; — **only** . . . **but**, *conj.*, no sólo (o solamente) . . . sino; — **know**, desconocer.  
**notability**, notabilidad, *f.*  
**notable**, *adj.*, notable.  
**nothing**, *pron. and adv.*, nada.  
**notice**, noticia, *f.*; to —, fijar; give —, avisar.  
**notify**, advertir, requerir.  
**notion**, noción, *f.*  
**notwithstanding that**, *conj.*, no

obstante que, sin embargo de que.  
**noun**, nombre, *m.*, sustantivo, *m.*  
**novel**, novela, *f.*  
**novelist**, novelista, *m.*  
**November**, noviembre, *m.*  
**now**, *adv.*, ahora, ya; — . . . —, *conj.*, ora . . . ora; — **that**, *conj.*, ahora que.  
**nowadays**, *adv.*, hoy día.  
**numb**; **become** —, arrecirse, atorrirse.  
**number**, número, *m.*  
**numeral**, *adj.*, numeral; *subst.*, numeral, *m.*  
**numerous**, numeroso, -a.

## O

**object**, complemento, *m.*, objeto, *m.*, régimen, *m.*; **direct** —, acusativo, *m.*; **indirect** —, dativo, *m.*  
**objective**, complemento, -a.  
**obligation**, empeño, *m.*  
**obligatory**, forzoso, -a.  
**oblige**, obligar.  
**obscure**, obscuro, -a.  
**obscurity**, obscuridad, *f.*  
**observation**, observación, *f.*  
**observe**, fijar, observar.  
**obstacle**, obstáculo, *m.*  
**obtain**, lograr, obtener.  
**occasion**, ocasión, *f.*  
**Occident**, Occidente, *m.*  
**occupancy**, ocupación, *f.*  
**occupation**, ocupación, *f.*, negocio, *m.*,  
**occupy**, ocupar.  
**occur**, ocurrir.  
**October**, octubre, *m.*  
**octuple**, óctuplo, -a.  
**of**, *prep.*, de, a; — **course not**! *int.*, ¡ca! ¡quíá!  
**off**; **far** —, *adv.*, lejos.  
**offense**, atentado, *m.*, culpa, *f.*  
**offer**, ofrecer.  
**office**, despacho, *m.*  
**officer**; **mounted police** —, alguacil, *m.*; **presiding** —, presidente, *m.*; **of the presiding** —, *adj.*, presidencial.

**offspring**, hijo, *m.*

**often**, *adv.*, a menudo, con frecuencia, muchas veces.

**oh!** *int.*, ¡ah! ¡ay! ¡oh! (expressing weariness) ¡uff!; — **heavens!** *int.*, ¡Jesús!

**oil**, aceite, *m.*

**old**, antiguo, -a, viejo, -a; — **doctor**, medicuzarra, *m.*; — **man**, viejo, *m.*, tío, *m.*

**older**, *adj.*, mayor.

**olive**, aceituna, *f.*; — **grove**, olivar, *m.*; — **tree**, olivo, *m.*

**omelet**, tortilla, *f.*

**omit**, omitir.

**on**, *prep.*, en, encima de, sobre; — **account of**, *prep.*, a causa de; — **condition**, *conj.*, a condición que — **foot**, *adv.*, a pie; — **purpose**, *adv.*, de encargo; — **the contrary**, *adv.*, al contrario; — **the inside**, *adv.*, por dentro; — **the other hand**, *adv.*, al contrario, en cambio.

**once; at —**, *adv.*, a la vez, en seguida.

**one**, *adj. and pron.*, uno (un), -a, (*in math. the radical or root of a number*) uno (un), -a, se; — **after another**, *adv.*, de corrido; — **another**, *adj. and pron.*, uno (-a) a otro (-a); — **for each**, sendos, -as; — **handed**, manco, -a; **each —**, *pron.*, cada cual, sendos, -as; **every —**, *pron.*, cada cual; **no —**, *adj. and pron.*, ninguno (ningún), -a, (*pron.*) nadie; **such a —**, *pron.*, fulano, -a, mengano, -a, perengano, -a, zutano, -a; **this —**, *adj.*, este, esta, (*pron.*) éste, ésta; **what —**, *int. adj., and pron.*, ¿cuál?; **with —'s self**, *pers. pron.*, consigo.

**only**, *adj. and pron.*, solo, -a, único, -a, uno (un), -a; *adv.*, sólo; **not — . . . but**, *conj.*, no sólo (*or solamente*) . . . sino.

**onward!** *int.*, ¡adelante!

**open**, abierto, -a; **to —**, abrir, desplegar; **half —**, entreabrir.

**opening**, apertura, *f.*

**opera**, ópera, *f.*

**operation**, operación, *f.*

**opportune**, oportuno, -a.

**opportunity**, ocasión, *f.*

**oppose**, combatir, oponer.

**opposed**, opuesto, -a.

**opposite**, contrario, -a, opuesto, -a; *prep.*, en frente de, frente a.

**oppress**, oprimir.

**or**, *conj.*, o (*becomes u before initial o or ho*); **either . . . —**, *conj.*, o . . . o; **whether . . . —**, *conj.*, sea . . . sea, ya . . . ya.

**oral**, *adj.*, oral.

**orange**, naranja, *f.*

**orbit**, órbita, *f.*

**orchard**, huerta, *f.*

**order**, encargo, *m.*, orden, *m. or f.*; **in — to**, *prep.*, para; **in — that**, *conj.*, a fin que, para que, por que, que; **to —**, *adv.*, de encargo; **to —**, *v.* mandar, mandar hacer.

**ordinal**, *adj.*, ordinal.

**ordinary**, ordinario, -a.

**organ**, órgano, *m.*; **hand —**, organillo, *m.*

**organization**, orden, *f.*

**organize**, organizar.

**original**, *adj.*, original.

**orthographic**, ortográfico, -a.

**orthography**, ortografía, *f.*

**other**, *adj. and pron.*, otro, -a; — **part**, *adj. and pron.*, el (la, lo) demás; — **people's**, ajeno, -a; **each —**, *adj. and pron.*, uno (-a) a otro (-a); **on the — hand**, *adv.*, al contrario; — **s**, *adj. and pron.*, los (las) demás; — **s'**, ajeno, -a.

**ouch!** *int.*, ¡huy!

**ought**, deber.

**our**, nuestro, -a.

**out; stand —**, destacarse; — **of**, *prep.*, fuera de; — **of the house**, *adv.*, afuera.

**outburst**, estallido, *m.*, expansión, *f.*

**outcome**, éxito, *m.*

**outcry**, alarido, *m.*, clamor, *m.*

**outdo**, aventajar, vencer.

**outdoors**, *adv.*, afuera.

**outer**, *adj.*, exterior; — **ear**, oreja, *f.*

**outside**, *adv.*, afuera, fuera, por afuera; *prep.*, fuera de; **on the** —, *adv.*, por afuera.  
**over**, *adv.*, por cima; *prep.*, encima de, por cima de, sobre.  
**overcoat**, gabán, *m.*, sobretodo, *m.*  
**overflow**, rebosar.  
**overtake**, alcanzar.  
**overwhelm**, abrumar.  
**Oviedo**, Oviedo.  
**ow!** *int.*, ¡huy!  
**owe**, deber.  
**own**, propio, —a; **to** —, poseer.  
**owner**, dueño, *m.*, dueña, *f.*

## P

**pace**, paso, *m.*  
**page**, camarero, *m.*, escudero, *m.*, paje, *m.*, página, *f.*  
**pain**, dolor, *m.*  
**paint**, pintar.  
**painter**, pintor, *m.*  
**painting**, pintura, *f.*  
**pair**, par, *m.*, pareja, *f.*  
**palace**, palacio, *m.*  
**palate**, paladar, *m.*  
**pale**, pálido, —a.  
**palpitate**, agitar.  
**pampered**, regalado, —a.  
**paper**, papel, *m.*, periódico, *m.*  
**paradise**, paraíso, *m.*  
**paralyze**, paralizar.  
**Paranymph**, Parainfo, *m.*  
**Paris**, París.  
**park**, parque, *m.*  
**parrot**, loro, *m.*  
**part**, división, *f.*, parte, *f.*; **greater** —, la mayor parte; **other** —, el (la, lo) demás; **rear** — (*of anything*), zaga, *f.*; **to** —, entreabrir; **form** —, formar parte.  
**participle**, participio, *m.*; **past** —, participio pasivo, *m.*; **present** —, gerundio, *m.*, participio presente, *m.*  
**partner**, socio, *m.*  
**party**, tertulia, *f.*  
**pass**, pasar.  
**passenger**, pasajero, *m.*  
**passer**; —-by, transeúnte, *m.*  
**passion**, pasión, *f.*

**passive**, pasivo, —a.  
**past**, pasado, —a, pasivo, —a; —  
**participle**, participio pasivo, *m.*  
**pastime**, pasatiempo, *m.*  
**patch**, remendar.  
**path**, senda, *f.*  
**Paul**, Pablo, *m.*  
**pause**, pausa, *f.*  
**pavement**, piso, *m.*  
**pawn**, prenda, *f.*  
**pay** (*or pay for*), pagar; — **compliments to**, echar flores; — **deference** (*to another's opinion*), deferir.  
**peace**, paz, *f.*  
**peaceful**, pacífico, —a.  
**peck**, picotear.  
**peculiar**, *adj.*, particular, peculiar.  
**peculiarity**, particularidad, *f.*  
**pedestal**, pedestal, *m.*  
**peep**, asomar(se).  
**pelota** (*Basque game*), pelota, *f.*; — **court**, frontón, *m.*  
**pen**, pluma, *f.*  
**pencil**, lápiz, *m.*  
**penetrate**, penetrar.  
**penny**, perro grande, *m.*  
**penultimate**, penúltimo, —a.  
**people**, gente, *f.*, pueblo, *m.*; **of** —, humano, —a; **other** —'s, ajeno, —a.  
**per**, *prep.*, por.  
**perchance**, *adv.*, acaso.  
**perfect**, perfecto, —a; **to** —, perfeccionar.  
**perfection**, perfección, *f.*  
**perform**, representar.  
**performance**, función, *f.*  
**perhaps**, *adv.*, acaso, quizá(s), tal vez.  
**period**, tiempo, *m.*  
**permit**, permitir.  
**persecution**, persecución, *f.*  
**person**, persona, *f.*; **eminent** —, notabilidad, *f.*; **in** —, personalmente.  
**personal**, *adj.*, particular, personal.  
**personally**, *adv.*, personalmente.  
**persuasive**, persuasivo, —a.  
**Peru**, El Perú, *m.*  
**peseta**, (*Spanish silver coin worth about twenty cents*) peseta, *f.*

**Peter**, Pedro, *m.*  
**petting**, caricia, *f.*  
**Philip**, Felipe, *m.*  
**phonetic**, fonético, -a.  
**phrase**, frase, *f.*, locución, *f.*  
**physics**, física, *f.*  
**piano**, piano, *m.*; — **tuner**, afinador, *m.*  
**picaador**, (*he who on horseback baits the bull with a long staff armed with a pointed iron tip*) picaador, *m.*  
**pick up**, recoger.  
**picture**, cuadro, *m.*  
**picturesque**, pintoresco, -a.  
**piece**, pedazo, *m.*, pieza, *f.*, trozo, *m.*  
**pierce**, atravesar, picar.  
**pig**, cerdo, *m.*  
**pigeon**, paloma, *f.*  
**pious**, piadoso, -a.  
**pipe**, pipa, *f.*  
**pirate**, pirata, *m.*  
**pitiable**, lastimoso, -a.  
**pity**, lástima, *f.*; **what a** —! *int.*, ¡qué lástima!  
**Pius**, Pío, *m.*  
**place**, sitio, *m.*, lugar, *m.*, paraje, *m.*, puesto, *m.*, asiento, *m.*, — **of support**, punto de apoyo, *m.*; **to** —, asentar, meter, poner; **take** —, ocurrir, pasar, tener lugar.  
**placed**, puesto, -a; **be** —, ponerse.  
**placid**, *adj.*, apacible.  
**plain**, llanura, *f.*  
**plant**, planta, *f.*; **to** —, asentar, plantar.  
**plate**, plato, *m.*  
**platform**, andén, *m.*; — **ticket**, billete (*m.*) de andén.  
**play**, juego, *m.*, comedia, *f.*, drama, *m.*, espectáculo, *m.*; **to** —, jugar, representar, tocar.  
**player**, jugador, *m.*  
**playful**, alborotador, -a.  
**playing-card**, naípe, *m.*  
**pleasant**, *adj.*, agradable, ameno, -a, dulce, grato, -a; **be** — (*of the weather*), hacer (un) tiempo agradable.  
**please**, aplacer, gustar a, placer, preñar, hacer el favor (de).  
**pleased**; **be** —, alegrarse.

**pleasing**, *adj.*, agradable; — **manner(s)**, gracia, *f.*  
**pleasure**, gozo, *m.*, gusto, *m.*, placer, *m.*; **to** (*suit*) **one's** —, *adv.*, a placer.  
**plunder**, despojo, *m.*  
**plural**, plural, *m.*  
**pocket**, bolsillo, *m.*  
**poem**, poesía, *f.*, poema, *m.*  
**poet**, poeta, *m.*  
**poetry**, poesía, *f.*  
**point**, punto, *m.*; — **out**, indicar, señalar.  
**police**; **mounted** — **officer**, alguacil, *m.*  
**polish**, bruñir.  
**politics**, política, *f.*  
**poor**, pobre, malo (*mal*), -a.  
**pope**, papa, *m.*  
**poplar-tree**, álamo, *m.*  
**poppy**, amapola, *f.*  
**popular**, *adj.*, popular.  
**population**, población, *f.*  
**pore**, poro, *m.*  
**port**, puerto, *m.*  
**portico**, soportal, *m.*  
**Porto Rico**, Puerto Rico, *m.*  
**Portugal**, Portugal, *m.*  
**position**, posición, *f.*, puesto, *m.*, (*gram.*) construcción, *f.*, empleo, *m.*  
**possess**, poseer, tener.  
**possession**, posesión, *f.*  
**possessive**, posesivo, -a.  
**possible**, *adj.*, posible.  
**potato**, patata, *f.*  
**pour**, verter, diluviar.  
**poverty**, miseria, *f.*  
**power**, fuerza, *f.*  
**practice**, práctica, *f.*  
**praise**, celebrar.  
**precede**, preceder.  
**precious**, precioso, -a.  
**precisely**, *adv.*, en punto, precisamente.  
**precision**, precisión, *f.*  
**predict**, predecir.  
**prefer**, preferir.  
**preference**, preferencia, *f.*  
**preoccupy**, preocupar.  
**prepare**, preparar.  
**preposition**, preposición, *f.*

**presence; in the** — *of*, *prep.*, ante.  
**present**, presente, *m.*, regalo, *m.*,  
*(time or state of things)* actualidad, *f.*; *adj.*, actual; **to** —, pre-  
 sentar, regalar; — **one's self**,  
 asomar(se), presentarse; **be** —  
 at, asistir a, presenciar; — **parti-**  
**ciple**, gerundio, *m.*, participio  
 presente, *m.*

**preserve**, conservar, guardar.

**preside**, presidir.

**president**, presidente, *m.*, rector,  
*m.*

**presidential**, *adj.*, presidencial.

**presiding officer**, presidente, *m.*;

**of the** — —, *adj.*, presidencial.

**preterit**, pretérito (perfecto), *m.*

**pretty**, bonito, —a, lindo, —a.

**prevent**, impedir.

**prey**, presa, *f.*

**price**, precio, *m.*

**prick**, picar.

**priest**, cura, *m.*, capellán, *m.*

**primer**, cartilla, *f.*

**prince**, príncipe, *m.*

**princess**, princesa, *f.*

**principal**, *adj.*, principal.

**principally**, *adv.*, principalmente.

**principle**, principio, *m.*

**print**, imprimir.

**printed**, impreso, —a.

**private**, *adj.*, particular.

**prize**, premio, *m.*

**probably**, *adv.*, probablemente.

**proceed**, encaminarse.

**procession**, marcha, *f.*, procesión,  
*f.*, *(of bull-fighters)* cuadrilla, *f.*

**produce**, causar, producir, sacar.

**profane**, profano, —a.

**profession**, profesión, *f.*

**professional**, de profesión.

**professor**, profesor, *m.*, profesora,  
*f.*, catedrático, *m.*; **college** —,  
 catedrático, *m.*; **university** —,  
 catedrático, *m.*

**proffer**, proferir.

**profit** *(by a thing)*, aprovechar.

**program**, programa, *m.*

**prolong**, prolongar.

**promise**, promesa, *f.*; **to** —, pro-  
 meter.

**pronoun**, pronombre, *m.*

**pronounce**, pronunciar, proferir.

**pronunciation**, pronunciación, *f.*

**propagate**, propagar.

**proper**, *adj.*, propio, —a, corres-  
 pondiente.

**proportion; in** — as, *conj.*, como.

**proscribe**, proscribir.

**protect**, amparar, guardar.

**protection**, amparo, *m.*

**proud**, altivo, —a, orgulloso, —a.

**prove**, demostrar, probar.

**proverb**, refrán, *m.*

**provide**, proveer.

**provided that**, *conj.*, con tal (de)  
 que, siempre que.

**province**, provincia, *f.*

**provoke**, provocar.

**proweess**, proeza, *f.*

**proximity**, proximidad, *f.*

**prudent**, discreto, —a.

**pshaw!** *int.*, ¡bah!

**psychological**, psicológico, —a.

**public**, público, —a; *subst.*, público,  
*m.*, vulgo, *m.*

**publish**, publicar.

**puff**, chupar; — **up**, henchir.

**punctuation**, puntuación, *f.*

**pupil**, alumno, *m.*

**purchase**, compra, *f.*; **to** —, com-  
 prar.

**pure**, puro, —a.

**purify**, clarificar.

**purpose**, motivo, *m.*, propósito,  
*m.*; **on** —, de encargo.

**push**, empujón, *m.*

**put**, puesto, —a; **to** —, poner; **be** —,  
 ponerse; — **away**, guardar; — **in**,  
 meter; — **on**, vestir.

**putrefy**, podrir, pudrir.

## Q

**quadruple**, cuadruplicado, —a, cuá-  
 druplo, —a.

**qualify**, calificar.

**quality**, calidad, *f.*, cualidad, *f.*

**quarrel**, riña, *f.*

**quarter**, barrio, *m.*, cuarto, *m.*;  
 —s, cuarto, *m.*, **to** —, alojar.

**queen**, reina, *f.*

**question**, pregunta, *f.*

**quickly**, *adv.*, apriesa, aprisa.

**quiet**, *adj.*, apacible, callado, -a, quieto, -a; **to** —, acallar; **become** —, callar.  
**quintuple**, quintuplicado, -a, quíntuplo, -a.  
**quit!** *int.*, ¡quita! ¡quítese V.!  
**quite**, *adv.*, bastante, harto.  
**Quixote**, Quijote, *m.*

## R

**ragged**, haraposo, -a.  
**railroad**, ferrocarril, *m.*  
**railway**, ferrocarril, *m.*  
**rain** (*impersonal*), llover; — **hard**, diluviar.  
**raining**; **stop** —, escampar.  
**raise**, alzar, levantar.  
**ramble**, corretear.  
**rampart**, muralla, *f.*  
**rank**, calidad, *f.*  
**ransom**, rescate, *m.*  
**rapidly**, *adv.*, de corrido.  
**rare**, escaso, -a; raro, -a, (*of meat*) poco asado, -a.  
**rarely**, *adv.*, rara vez, raramente.  
**rascal**, pícaro, *m.*  
**rather**, *adv.*, algo, bastante, más bien; **but** —, *conj.*, sino.  
**rattle**, sonsonete, *m.*  
**ray**, rayo, *m.*  
**reach**, alcanzar, llegar.  
**read**, leer.  
**reader**, lector, *m.*  
**reading**, lectura, *f.*, leyenda, *f.*  
**ready**, listo, -a.  
**real**, verdadero, -a; *subst.*, (*an old Spanish silver coin worth about five cents*) real, *m.*  
**really!** *int.*, ¡toma! ¡vaya!  
**reaping**, cosecha, *f.*  
**reason**, motivo, *m.*, razón, *f.*  
**receive**, recibir.  
**recently**, *adv.*, recientemente (*recién*).  
**reception-room**, salón, *m.*  
**recite**, declamar, (*of lessons*) dar.  
**reckon**, hacer cálculos.  
**recollection**, recolección, *f.*  
**recommend**, recomendar.  
**rector**, rector, *m.*  
**recur**, recurrir.

**red**, colorado, -a, encarnado, -a, rojo, -a.  
**reduce**, reducir.  
**reed**, caña, *f.*  
**refer**, referir.  
**refine**, clarificar.  
**reflexive**, reflexivo, -a.  
**refresh**, refrescar, vivificar.  
**refreshment**, refresco, *m.*  
**regard**, aprecio, *m.*; **in** — **to**, acerca de.  
**regarding**, *prep.*, acerca de, por.  
**region**, región, *f.*  
**regular**, regular, verdadero, -a, clásico, -a.  
**regulate**, ajustar, regularizar.  
**reign**, reino, *m.*; **to** —, reinar.  
**rejoice**, alegrarse.  
**rejoicing**, regocijo, *m.*  
**relate**, contar, narrar, referir.  
**relation**, narración, *f.*, relación, *f.*, pariente, *m.*  
**relative**, relativo, -a.  
**relic**, reliquia, *f.*  
**relief**, alivio, *m.*  
**religion**, fe, *f.*  
**religious**, religioso, -a.  
**reluctantly**, *adv.*, de mala gana.  
**remain**, permanecer, quedar(se); — **in**, guardar.  
**remainder**, el (la, lo) demás (*or* restante)  
**remarkable**, *adj.*, notable.  
**remember**, acordarse (de), recordar.  
**remembrance**, recuerdo, *m.*  
**remind of**, recordar.  
**remiss**, remiso, -a.  
**removal**, despejo, *m.*  
**remove**, quitar, trasladar.  
**render**, rendir.  
**repair**, enmendar, remendar.  
**repeat**, repetir.  
**repeated**, repetido, -a.  
**repent**, arrepentirse.  
**repentance**, penitencia, *f.*  
**repertory**, repertorio, *m.*  
**repetition**, repetición, *f.*  
**replace**, reponer.  
**reply**, contestación, *f.*; **to** —, contestar, replicar, reponer, responder.

**represent**, representar.  
**representation**, representación, *f*.  
**reproach**, reñir.  
**request**, rogar.  
**require**, necesitar, requerir.  
**resemble**, parecerse a.  
**reside**, residir.  
**resist**, combatir, resistir.  
**resolutely**, *adv.*, resueltamente.  
**resolve**, resolver.  
**resonant**, *adj.*, vibrante.  
**respect**, respetar.  
**respective**, respectivo, -a.  
**respond**, responder.  
**rest; the —**, el (la, lo) demás; **to —**, descansar, holgar.  
**restaurant**, fonda, *f*.  
**restful**, descansado, -a.  
**restrict**, limitar.  
**result**; resulta, *f*., resultado, *m*.  
**resurrection**, resurrección, *f*.  
**retail**, venta (*f*.) (al) por menor.  
**retain**, guardar.  
**return**, regreso, *m*., vuelta, *f*.; **to —**, regresar, volver.  
**ribbon**, cinta, *f*.  
**rice**, arroz, *m*.  
**rich**, rico, -a; **grow —**, enriquecer.  
**ride**, montar; — **backwards**, ir de espaldas.  
**ridicule**, ridículo, *m*.  
**riding beast**, caballería, *f*.  
**right**, (*as opposed to left*) derecho, -a; *subst.*, razón, *f*.; **all —!** *int.*, ¡bueno!; **be —**, tener razón.  
**ring**, sonar, tocar.  
**ripple**, murmullo, *m*.  
**rise**, levantarse, erguirse, destacarse; — **early**, madrugar.  
**risk**, trance, *m*.  
**river**, río, *m*.  
**road**, camino, *m*.  
**roast**, asar.  
**Rocinante**, Rocinante, *m*.  
**rock**, mecer.  
**Roderic**, Rodrigo, *m*., Ruy, *m*.  
**roguish**, picaresco, -a.  
**role**, papel, *m*.; **play a —**, hacer un papel.  
**roll**, rodar.  
**Roman**, romano, -a.  
**Rome**, Roma.

**room**, cuarto, *m*., habitación, *f*., sala, *f*.; **class—**, aula, *f*., sala de clase; **drawing—**, salón, *m*.; **large —**, sala, *f*.; **waiting—**, sala (*f*.) de espera.  
**root**, raíz, *f*.  
**rot**, podrir.  
**rough**, áspero, -a.  
**round**, redondo, -a; **go half-way —**, dar media vuelta; — **shouldered**, cargado de espaldas.  
**rove**, corretear.  
**row**, fila, *f*.  
**royal**, *adj.*, real.  
**rub**, fregar, frotar.  
**rugged**, áspero, -a.  
**ruin**, ruina, *f*.  
**ruinous**, ruinoso, -a.  
**rule**, regla, *f*., norte, *m*.; **to —**, regir.  
**run**, correr; — **over**, rebosar; — **up to**, acudir.  
**rural**, *adj.*, rural.  
**rustic**, labrador, *m*.

## S

**sack-coat**, americana, *f*.  
**sacred**, sagrado, -a.  
**sad**, *adj.*, triste.  
**sadness**, tristeza, *f*.  
**said**, dicho, -a.  
**sailor**, marinero, *m*.  
**saint**, santo (san), -a, *m. or f*.  
**sake; for the — of**, a fin de, por.  
**salad**, ensalada, *f*.  
**Salamanca**, Salamanca.  
**sale**, venta, *f*.  
**salt**, sal, *f*.  
**salutation**, saludo, *m*.  
**salute**, saludar.  
**same**, mismo, -a, propio, -a; **at the — time**, a la vez.  
**Sancho**, Sancho, *m*.  
**sand**, arena, *f*.  
**sandy**, arenoso, -a.  
**satín**, raso, *m*.  
**satire**, sátira, *f*.  
**satisfactory**, satisfactorio, -a.  
**satisfied**, contento, -a.  
**Saturday**, sábado, *m*.  
**sauce**, salsa, *f*.



**save**, *prep.*, salvo.  
**saw**, sierra, *f.*  
**say**, decir; —! *int.*, ¡diga! ¡oiga! ¡oye!  
**saying**, refrán, *m.*  
**scarcely**, *adv.*, apenas; — . . .  
     **when**, *conj.*, apenas . . . cuando,  
     no bien . . . cuando.  
**scat!** *int.*, ¡zapel!  
**scatter**, esparcir.  
**scene**, escena, *f.*  
**school**, escuela, *f.*, colegio, *m.*,  
     seminario, *m.*; *adj.*, escolar; —  
     **year**, año escolar, *m.*  
**science**, ciencia, *f.*  
**scold**, reñir.  
**score**, veintena, *f.*; **four**—, ochenta,  
*f.*; **two**—, cuarentena, *f.*  
**scour**, fregar.  
**sea**, mar, *m. or f.*  
**search**, busca, *f.*  
**season**, estación, *f.*, sazón, *f.*  
**seasonable**, oportuno, —a.  
**seat**, asiento, *m.*, banco, *m.*, silla,  
*f.*, sitio, *m.*; **to** —, sentar, asen-  
     tar.  
**seated**, sentado, —a.  
**Sebastian**, Sebastián, *m.*  
**second**, *adj.*, dos, segundo, —a;  
     *subst.*, segundo, *m.*  
**section**, sección, *f.*  
**secular**, profano, —a.  
**see**, ver; — **again**, rever; **I'll** —  
     **you later**, hasta luego; **let us** —,  
     vamos a ver.  
**seek**, buscar, procurar.  
**seem**, parecer.  
**seguidilla**, (*a merry Spanish dance*  
     *tune*) seguidilla, *f.*  
**seize**, asir, prender.  
**seldom**, *adv.*, rara vez, raramente.  
**select**, elegir, escoger.  
**selection**, trozo, *m.*  
**self**, *adj. and pron.*, mismo, —a,  
     propio, —a.  
**sell**, vender.  
**seller**, vendedor, *m.*  
**seminary**, colegio, *m.*, seminario,  
     *m.*  
**send**, enviar, mandar.  
**sense**, sentido, *m.*; — **of sight**,  
     vista, *f.*; — **of smell**, olfato, *m.*;

— **of taste**, gusto, *m.*; — **of**  
**touch**, tacto, *m.*  
**sentence**, frase, *f.*, oración, *f.*  
**separate**, distinto, —a, separado,  
     —a; **to** —, disolver, separar.  
**September**, septiembre, *m.*  
**sequence**, sucesión, *f.*  
**serenity**, serenidad, *f.*  
**series**, serie, *f.*  
**serious**, serio, —a.  
**servant**, criado, *m.*, mozo, *m.*;  
     **army** —, criado de campaña.  
**serve**, servir; — **one's time**, cum-  
     plir.  
**service**, servicio, *m.*  
**set**, poner; **be** —, ponerse; — **of**  
**teeth**, dentadura, *f.*  
**seven**, *adj.*, siete; — **hundred**, *adj.*,  
     setecientos, —as; — **hundredth**,  
     *adj.*, setecientos, —as, septingen-  
     tésimo, —a.  
**seventeen**, *adj.*, diez y siete.  
**seventeenth**, *adj.*, diez y siete, dé-  
     cimo (—a) séptimo (—a).  
**seventh**, *adj.*, siete, séptimo, —a  
     (sétimo, —a).  
**seventieth**, *adj.*, setenta, septua-  
     gésimo, —a.  
**seventy**, *adj.*, setenta.  
**several**, *adj. and pron.*, varios, —as.  
**severe**, *adj.*, fuerte.  
**severity**, ceño, *m.*, severidad, *f.*  
**Seville**, Sevilla.  
**sew**, coser.  
**shadow**, sombra, *f.*  
**shake**, estremecerse.  
**shame**, vergüenza, *f.*; **to** —, aver-  
     gonzar.  
**shapeless**, *adj.*, deforme.  
**sharp**, *adj.*, cortante, agudo, —a;  
     *adv.*, en punto.  
**shave**, afeitar.  
**she**, *pers. pron.*, ella, *f.*  
**shed**, derramar, verter.  
**sheep**, oveja, *f.*  
**shelter**, amparo, *m.*; **to** —, amparar.  
**shepherd**, pastor, *m.*  
**shield**, escudo, *m.*  
**shine**, brillar, lucir, relucir.  
**ship**, buque, *m.*  
**shirt**, camisa, *f.*  
**shoe**, zapato, *m.*

shop, almacén, *m.*, tienda, *f.*  
 shore, orilla, *f.*  
 short, *adj.*, breve, corto, -a; **in** —, *adv.*, en fin.  
 shoulder, espalda, *f.*, hombro, *m.*  
 shout, grito, *m.*, alarido, *m.*; **to** —, gritar, vociferar.  
 shove, empujón, *m.*  
 show, enseñar, mostrar, manifestar; — **one's self**, asomar(se).  
 showy, vistoso, -a.  
 shut, cerrar; — **up!** *int.*, ¡calla! ¡calles!  
 sick, enfermo, -a.  
 side, lado, *m.*, partido, *m.*  
 sidewalk, acera, *f.*  
 siege, sitio, *m.*  
 siesta, siesta, *f.*  
 sift, cerner.  
 sigh, suspiro, *m.*; **to** —, suspirar.  
 sight, aspecto, *m.*, espectáculo, *m.*, vista, *f.*; **sense of** —, vista, *f.*; **within** —, a la vista.  
 sign, seña, *f.*, señal, *m.*  
 signal, seña, *f.*, señal, *m.*  
 silence, silencio, *m.*  
 silent, mudo, -a; **be** —! *int.*, ¡calla! ¡calles! ¡silencio!; **become** —, callar(se).  
 silk, seda, *f.*  
 silver, plata, *f.*  
 similar, *adj.*, semejante.  
 simple, *adj.*, simple, sencillo, -a, inocente.  
 since, *adv.*, después; *prep.*, desde, después de; *conj.*, desde que, pues, puesto que, ya que; **the more** —, cuanto más que.  
 sing, cantar.  
 singer, cantor, *m.*  
 singing, canto, *m.*  
 single, *adj.*, simple, solo, -a, único, -a.  
 singular, singular, *m.*  
 sink, hundir.  
 siphon, sifón, *m.*  
 sir, señor, *m.*, caballero, *m.*, señorito, *m.*  
 sister, hermana, *f.*; — **of charity**, hermana, *f.*  
 sit; — **down**, sentarse; — **up**, incorporarse.

site, sitio, *m.*  
 six, *adj.*, seis; — **hundredth**, *adj.*, seiscientos, -as, sexcentésimo, -a.  
 sixteen, *adj.*, diez y seis.  
 sixteenth, *adj.*, diez y seis, décimo (-a) sexto (-a).  
 sixth, *adj.*, seis, sexto, -a (sexto, -a).  
 sixtieth, *adj.*, sesenta, sexagésimo, -a.  
 sixty, *adj.*, sesenta.  
 skeleton, esqueleto, *m.*  
 skilful, *adj.*, hábil.  
 skill, maña, *f.*  
 skirt, falda, *f.*  
 sky, cielo, *m.*  
 slain, muerto, -a.  
 slay, matar.  
 sleep, sueño, *m.*; **to** —, dormir; **go to** —, dormirse.  
 sleepy; **be** —, tener sueño.  
 slender, menudo, -a.  
 slightly, *adv.*, (un) poco.  
 slope, loma, *f.*  
 slow, lento, -a, remiso, -a; *adv.*, despacio; **be** —, (*of timepieces*) atrasar.  
 slowly, *adv.*, despacio, lentamente, lento, pausadamente.  
 small, pequeño, -a, chico, -a, escaso, -a, menudo, -a; — **street**, callejuela, *f.*; **very** —, pequeñito, -a.  
 smell, olfato, *m.*; **sense of** —, olfato, *m.*; **to** —, oler.  
 smile, sonreír.  
 smith, herrero, *m.*  
 smoke, fumar.  
 smoker, fumador, *m.*  
 snap, chasquear.  
 sniff, resoplar.  
 snow, nevar, ventiscar.  
 so, *adv.*, así, tan; *conj.*, con que; — **as**, *conj.*, de manera que, de modo que; — **far from**, *conj.*, lejos de que; — **long!** *int.*, (*fam.*) ¡hasta luego!; — **many**, tantos, -as; — **much**, tanto, -a; — **much . . . that**, *conj.*, tanto (-a) . . . que; — **that**, *conj.*, con motivo que, de manera que, de

- modo que, que; — . . . *that*, *conj.*,  
tan . . . que; — *then*, *conj.*, con  
que; *just* —, *adv.*, justo; —  
*and* —, *pron.*, fulano, -a, men-  
gano, -a, perengano, -a, zutano,  
-a.
- soap*, jabón, *m.*  
*soar*, volar.  
*society*, sociedad, *f.*  
*soft*, blando, -a.  
*softly*, *adv.*, bajo.  
*soil*, suelo, *m.*  
*soiled*, sucio, -a.  
*soirée*, tertulia, *f.*  
*soldier*, soldado, *m.*  
*sole*, único, -a, uno (un), -a.  
*solemn*, *adj.*, grave, solemne.  
*solitary*, solo, -a.  
*solitude*, soledad, *f.*  
*solve*, solver.  
*some*, *adj. and pron.*, alguno (al-  
gún), -a, uno (un), -a, unos  
(-as) cuantos (-as); — *one*,  
*pron.*, alguien.  
*somebody*, *pron.*, alguien.  
*something*, *pron.*, algo.  
*sometimes*, algunas veces; — . . .  
—, *conj.*, ora . . . ora, ya . . . ya.  
*somewhat*, *adv.*, algo.  
*son*, hijo, *m.*  
*song*, canción, *f.*, canto, *m.*  
*sonnet*, soneto, *m.*  
*soon*, *adv.*, luego, pronto; *as* —  
*as*, apenas, así que, luego que,  
desde.  
*sooner*; *no* —, apenas.  
*sorry*; *be* — *for*, sentir; *I am very*  
—, lo siento mucho.  
*sort*, clase, *f.*, estilo, *m.*, suerte, *f.*;  
*of the same* —, por el estilo.  
*soul*, alma, *f.*; *bless my* —! *int.*,  
¡Dios me valga! ¡válgame Dios!  
*sound*, ruido, *m.*, son, *m.*, sonido,  
*m.*; *to* —, sonar.  
*soup*, sopa, *f.*; *clear* —, caldo, *m.*;  
*kind of cold* —, gazpacho, *m.*  
*south*, sur, *m.*  
*sow*, sembrar.  
*space of time*, rato, *m.*, discurso, *m.*  
*Spain*, España, *f.*  
*Spanish*, castellano, -a, español  
-a.
- speak*, hablar.  
*special*, *adj.*, particular.  
*spectacle*, espectáculo, *m.*  
*speech*, hablar, *m.*, discurso, *m.*  
*speed*, prisa, *f.*  
*spend*, pasar.  
*spill*, verter.  
*spirit*, brío, *m.*  
*spirited*, *adj.*, arrogante, brioso,  
-a.  
*spite*; *in* — *of*, *prep.*, a pesar  
de; *in* — *of*, *conj.*, a pesar de  
que.  
*splendor*, esplendor, *m.*  
*spoiled*, regalado, -a.  
*spoils*, despojo, *m.*  
*spoon*, cuchara, *f.*  
*spring*, primavera, *f.*; *to* —, nacer;  
— *forth*, brotar, nacer.  
*spur*, espuela, *f.*; *to* —, dar de  
espuelas.  
*square*, plaza, *f.*; *little* —, plazo-  
leta, *f.*  
*squeeze*, apretar.  
*squire*, escudero, *m.*  
*stage*, estrenar.  
*staircase*, escalera, *f.*  
*stammer*, balbucear, balbucir.  
*stamp*, sellar.  
*stand*, estar (de pie), ponerse; —  
*out*, destacarse; — *still*! *int.*,  
¡cho! ¡jo! ¡so!  
*standing*, *adv.*, de pie.  
*star*, estrella.  
*start*, comienzo, *m.*, retemblido, *m.*  
*state*, estado, *m.*; *United States*,  
Estados Unidos, *m. pl.*  
*station*, estación, *f.*  
*statue*, estatua, *f.*  
*stature*, estatura, *f.*  
*stay*, estancia, *f.*; *to* —, quedar(se).  
*steady*! *int.*, ¡firme!  
*steamer*, vapor, *m.*  
*steamship*, vapor, *m.*  
*steel*, acero, *m.*  
*steep*, *adj.*, pendiente.  
*stem*, tallo, *m.*  
*step*, paso, *m.*  
*stick*, bastón, *m.*  
*still*, quieto, -a; *adv.*, aun (aún),  
siempre, todavía; *stand* —! *int.*,  
¡cho! ¡jo! ¡so!

**stocking**, media, *f.*  
**stone**, piedra, *f.*  
**stop**, cesar, detener, parar, quedar(se); — **raining**, escampar; — **thief!** *int.*, ¡al ladrón!; *subst.*, pausa, *f.*  
**store**, almacén, *m.*, tienda, *f.*  
**story**, cuento, *m.*, historia, *f.*, relato, *m.*, piso, *m.*  
**straight**, recto, —a; *adv.*, derecho.  
**straighten up**, erguirse, incorporarse.  
**strain**, colar.  
**strange**, ajeno, —a, extraño, —a, raro, —a.  
**stranger**, extranjero, *m.*, forastero, *m.*  
**strap** (*of leather*), correa, *f.*  
**streak**, rayar.  
**stream**, arroyo, *m.*, riachuelo, *m.*  
**streamer**, banderola, *f.*  
**street**, calle, *f.*; — **lamp**, farol, *m.*; **small** —, callejuela, *f.*  
**strength**, brío, *m.*, fuerza, *f.*  
**stretch**, extender; — **forth**, extender; — **out**, tender.  
**strife**, pelea, *f.*  
**strike**, azotar, pegar, (*of a clock*) dar.  
**string**, ensartar.  
**strive**, esforzarse.  
**stroll**, pasear.  
**strong**, *adj.*, fuerte.  
**strongly**, *adv.*, fuerte.  
**structure**, fábrica, *f.*  
**student**, alumno, —a, *m. and f.*, estudiante, *m. and f.*, discípulo, —a, *m. and f.*; **fellow** —, condiscípulo, —a, *m. and f.*  
**study**, estudio, *m.*; **to** —, estudiar.  
**stupid**, estúpido, —a.  
**sturdy**, rudo, —a.  
**style**, estilo, *m.*, moda, *f.*; **be in** —, ser de moda; **of the same** —, por el estilo.  
**subdue**, rendir, sujetar.  
**subject**, asunto, *m.*, sujeto, *m.*; **to** —, sujetar.  
**subjunctive**, subjuntivo, *m.*  
**substantial**, *adj.*, sustancial.  
**substantive**, sustantivo, *m.*

**succeed**, salir bien con, suceder, tener éxito.  
**success**, éxito, *m.*  
**such**, *adj.*, semejante; *adj. and pron.*, tal; — **a**, *adj.*, tal; — **a one**, *pron.*, fulano, —a, mengano, —a, perengano, —a, zutano, —a; — **that**, *conj.*, tal que.  
**suck**, chupar.  
**sudden**; **all of a** —, *adv.*, de pronto.  
**suddenly**, *adv.*, de improviso, de pronto, de repente.  
**suffer**, padecer, sufrir.  
**suffering**, padecer, *m.*  
**suffice**, bastar.  
**sufficient**, *adj.*, bastante.  
**sufficiently**, *adv.*, bastante.  
**sugar**, azúcar, *m.*  
**suggest**, sugerir.  
**suit**, convenir, sentar; **to** — **one's pleasure**, a placer; — (*of clothes*), traje, *m.*, vestido, *m.*; — **case**, maleta, *f.*  
**suitable**, *adj.*, correspondiente, propio, —a.  
**summer**, estío, *m.*, verano, *m.*; **spend the** —, veranear.  
**summit**, colmo, *m.*  
**sun**, sol, *m.*; — **dried brick**, adobe, *m.*  
**Sunday**, domingo, *m.*  
**sunny**; **be** —, haber sol, hacer sol.  
**superhuman**, sobrehumano, —a.  
**superior**, *adj.*, superior.  
**superiority**, superioridad, *f.*  
**superlative**, superlativo, *m.*  
**supper**, cena, *f.*  
**support**, apoyo, *m.*; **place of** —, punto de apoyo, *m.*; **to** —, sostener.  
**supposing that**, *conj.*, dado que, supóngase que, suponiendo que, suqueto que.  
**suppress**, suprimir.  
**supremacy**, supremacía, *f.*  
**sure**, seguro, —a.  
**surely**, *adv.*, seguramente.  
**surname**, sobrenombre, *m.*  
**surpass**, aventajar, vencer.  
**surprise**, sorpresa, *f.*; **to** —, sorprender.  
**surround**, ceñir, circundar, rodear.  
**suspect**, sospechar.

**suspend**, suspender.  
**sustain**, sostener.  
**swarthy**, moreno, -a.  
**sway**, mecer.  
**swear**, jurar.  
**sweep**, barrer.  
**sweet**, *adj.*, dulce, meloso, -a.  
**sweetmeat**, dulce, *m.*  
**sweetness**, dulzura, *f.*  
**swing**, mecer.  
**syllabication**, silabeo, *m.*  
**syllable**, sílaba, *f.*  
**system**, sistema, *m.*

## T

**table**, mesa, *f.*; — **-cloth**, mantel, *m.*; — **-service**, vajilla, *f.*  
**tail**, cola, *f.*, (*of a coin*) cruz, *f.*  
**tailor**, sastre, *m.*; —'s **shop**, sastería, *f.*  
**take**, tomar, llevar, prender, se-  
 guir; — **a walk**, dar un paseo;  
 — **away**, quitar; — **care** (*of*),  
 cuidar (*de*); — **leave**, despe-  
 dirse; — **oath**, jurar; — **out**,  
 sacar; — **place**, ocurrir, pasar,  
 tener lugar; — **the afternoon**  
**nap**, dormir la siesta.  
**take**, cuento, *m.*  
**talk**, hablar.  
**task**, faena, *f.*, tarea, *f.*  
**tassel**, borla, *f.*  
**taste**, gusto, *m.*  
**teach**, enseñar.  
**teacher**, maestro, *m.*, maestra, *f.*,  
 profesor, *m.*, profesora, *f.*  
**tear**, lágrima, *f.*  
**teem**, rebosar.  
**tell**, contar, decir, narrar, re-  
 ferir; — **a falsehood**, mentir;  
 — **of**, indicar.  
**temperature**, temperatura, *f.*  
**ten**, *adj.*, diez; (*group of*) —,  
 decena, *f.*  
**tender**, tierno, -a.  
**tenfold**, décuplo, -a.  
**tense**, tiempo, *m.*; **future** —, fu-  
 turo, *m.*  
**tenth**, *adj.*, diez, décimo, -a.  
**term**, término, *m.*  
**termination**, terminación, *f.*

**terrible**, *adj.*, terrible, espantoso, -a.  
**terrify**, espantar.  
**than**, *conj.*, que, de, de lo que.  
**thank**, agradecer; —s, gracias, *f.*  
*pl.*, merced, *f.*  
**that**, *dem. adj.*, aquel, aquella,  
 ese, esa; *dem. pron.*, aquél, aqué-  
 lla, aquello, ése, ésa, eso; *rel.*  
*pron.*, que; *conj.*, que; **so** —,  
*conj.*, con motivo que, de ma-  
 nera que, de modo que, para que,  
 que; **all** —, cuanto, -a, todo  
 (-a) cuanto (-a); **so much** —,  
*conj.*, tanto . . . que.  
**thaw**, deshelar.  
**the**, *def. art.* el, *m.*, la, *f.*, lo, *n.*,  
 los, *m. pl.*, las, *f. pl.*  
**theater**, teatro, *m.*  
**theatrical**, *adj.*, teatral.  
**thee**, *pers. pron.*, te, ti; **to** —, te;  
**with** —, contigo.  
**their**, *poss. adj.*, su.  
**them**, *pers. pron.*, ellos, *m. pl.*,  
 ellas, *f. pl.*; (*les*), los, *m. pl.*, las,  
*f. pl.*; **to** —, les.  
**theme**, tema, *m.*  
**themselves**, *pers. pron.*, se, sí; **to**  
 —, se; **with** —, consigo.  
**then**, *adv.*, después, entonces,  
 luego; *conj.*, pues; **so** —, *conj.*,  
 con que.  
**there**, *adv.*, ahí, allá, allí; — **are**,  
 hay; — **is**, hay; —! *int.*, ¡toma!  
**therefore**, *conj.*, con que, pues.  
**thereupon**, *adv.*, desde luego.  
**they**, *pers. pron.*, ellos, *m. pl.*,  
 ellas, *f. pl.*  
**thief**, ladrón, *m.*; **stop** —! *int.*, ¡al  
 ladrón!  
**thing**, cosa, *f.*  
**think**, creer, pensar; — (*of*),  
 pensar (*en*).  
**third**, *adj.*, tres, tercero (*tercer*),  
 -a, tercio, -a.  
**thirst**, sed, *f.*  
**thirsty**; **be** —, tener sed.  
**thirteen**, *adj.*, trece.  
**thirteenth**, *adj.*, trece, décimo  
 (-a) tercio (-a).  
**thirtieth**, *adj.*, treinta, trigésimo, -a.  
**thirty**, *adj.*, treinta; (*group of*) —,  
 treintena, *f.*

- this**, *dem. adj.*, este, esta; *dem. pron.*, éste, ésta, esto; — **one**, *dem. pron.*, éste, ésta, esto.
- thither; hither and** —, de un lado a otro.
- thoroughly**, *adv.*, a fondo.
- thou**, *pers. pron.*, tú.
- though; even** —, *conj.*, aun cuando, aunque.
- thousand**, *a, adj.*, mil; (*group of a*) —, millar, *m.* (*generally used in the plural*).
- thousandth**, *adj.*, mil, milésimo, —a.
- thread**, ensartar.
- three**, *adj.*, tres; — **hundredth**, *adj.*, trescientos, —as, tricentésimo, —a.
- threefold**, *adj.*, triple, triplicado, —a.
- throne**, trono, *m.*
- through**, *prep.*, a través de, por; **go** —, andar (por).
- throughout**, *prep.*, por.
- throw**, arrojar, echar, lanzar.
- thunder**, tronar.
- Thursday**, jueves, *m.*
- thus**, *adv.*, así.
- ticket**, billete, *m.*; — **agent**, vendedor (*m.*) de billetes; **first-class** —, billete de primera; **platform** —, billete (*m.*) de andén; **round-trip** —, billete de ida y vuelta.
- tie**, corbata, *f.*; **to** —, atar.
- time**, tiempo, *m.*, (*of day*) hora, *f.*, sazón, *f.*, (*recurrence*) vez, *f.*, (*of music*) compás, *m.*; **at that** —, *adv.*, a la sazón, en aquel entonces; **at the same** —, *adv.*, a la vez; **from** — **to** —, *adv.*, de vez en cuando; **in** —, *adv.*, a compás; **in the day** —, *adv.*, de día; **serve one's** —, cumplir; **space of** —, rato, *m.*, discurso, *m.*; **former** —s, antaño, *m.*
- timepiece**, cronómetro, *m.*
- tin box**, tubo, *m.*
- tip**, propina, *f.*
- tired**; **grow** —, aburrirse.
- title**, título, *m.*
- to**, *prep.*, a, para, por; — **again** . . . (*with verb*), volver a . . .; — **one's pleasure**, *adv.*, a placer; — **order**, *adv.*, de encargo.
- tobacco**, tabaco, *m.*
- to-day**, *adv.*, hoy.
- toe**, dedo (del pie), *m.*
- together**, *adv.*, juntamente.
- toilet**, aseó, *m.*
- token**, prenda, *f.*
- told**, dicho, —a.
- tolerance**, tolerancia, *f.*
- tomato**, tomate, *m.*
- tomb**, tumba, *f.*
- to-morrow**, *adv.*, mañana; **day after** —, *adv.*, pasado mañana.
- tongue**, lengua, *f.*
- to-night; until** —! *int.*, ¡hasta la noche!
- too**, *adv.*, demasiado; *adj. and pron.*, demasiado, —a; — **many**, *adj. and pron.*, demasiados, —as; — **much**, *adj. and pron.*, demasiado, —a; (*adv.*), demasiado.
- tool**, herramienta, *f.*
- tooth**, diente, *m.*, (*molar*) muela, *f.*
- top**, cima, *f.*
- topic**, asunto, *m.*
- torment**, molestar.
- touch**, tacto, *m.*; **to** —, tocar, tentar.
- toward(s)**, *prep.*, hacia.
- towel**, toalla, *f.*
- tower**, torre, *f.*
- town**, población, *f.*, pueblo, *m.*
- trace**, trazar.
- tragedy**, tragedia, *f.*
- tragical**, trágico, —a.
- train**, tren, *m.*; **fast express** —, rápido, *m.*; **to** —, (*of horses*) adiestrar.
- tranquil**, tranquilo, —a.
- tranquillity**, holganza, *f.*
- transfer**, transferir.
- transformation**, transformación, *f.*
- transgress**, delinquir.
- translate**, traducir.
- translation**, translación, *f.*
- transparent**, cristalino, —a.
- transport**, transferir.
- trappings**, arreos, *m. pl.*
- travel**, viajar, ir de viaje, ver mundo.
- traveler**, viajero, *m.*, caminante, *m.*
- traveling**, viajar, *m.*

traverse, cruzar.  
 treacherously, *adv.*, traidoramente.  
 treat, tratar.  
 tree, árbol, *m.*  
 treeless, pelado, -a.  
 tremble, estremecerse, temblar.  
 tremendous, tremendo, -a.  
 tremor, estremecimiento, *m.*  
 trench, acequia, *f.*  
 trial, austeridad, *f.*  
 trip, viaje, *m.*, jornada, *f.*  
 triphthong, triptongo, *m.*  
 triple, *adj.*, triple, triplicado, -a.  
 trousers, pantalón, *m.* (*commonly used in the plural*).  
 true, verdadero, -a; it is —, es verdad; isn't it —? ¿no es verdad? ¿verdad?  
 trunk, (*of tree or body*) tronco, *m.*, baúl, *m.*  
 truth, verdad, *f.*  
 try, probar, procurar, tentar; — on, ensayar.  
 tube, tubo, *m.*  
 Tuesday, martes, *m.*  
 Turk, Turco, *m.*  
 turn, vuelta, *f.*; to —, volver, dirigirse.  
 tutor, preceptor, *m.*  
 tuxedo, smoking, *m.*  
 twelfth, *adj.*, doce, duodécimo, -a.  
 twelve, *adj.*, doce; (group of) —, docena, *f.*  
 twentieth, *adj.*, veinte, vigésimo, -a.  
 twenty, *adj.*, veinte; (group of) —, veintena, *f.*  
 twist, torcer.  
 two, *adj.*, dos; — hundredth, *adj.*, doscientos, -as, ducentésimo, -a; — score, cuarentena, *f.*; — fold, *adj.*, doble, duplicado, -a.

## U

ugh! *int.*, ¡puf!  
 ugly, feo, -a.  
 uncle, tío, *m.*  
 uncomfortable, incómodo, -a.  
 under, *adj.*, inferior, interior; *prep.*, bajo, debajo de.  
 underclothing, ropa interior, *f.*  
 undergo, sufrir.

understand, comprender, entender  
 sobrentender.  
 understood; make one's self —, hacerse entender.  
 undertake, acometer, emprender.  
 unfold, desplegar.  
 uniform, uno (un), -a.  
 unique, único, -a.  
 unit, unidad, *f.*  
 United States, Estados Unidos, *m. pl.*  
 unity, unidad, *f.*  
 university, universidad, *f.*; *adj.*, universitario, -a; — professor, catedrático, *m.*  
 unless, *conj.*, a menos que, a no ser que.  
 unmarried lady, señorita, *f.*  
 unnoticed, *adv.*, inadvertidamente.  
 unpolished, rudo, -a.  
 unsurpassable, *adj.*, inmejorable.  
 untie, soltar.  
 until, *prep.*, hasta; *conj.*, hasta que; — by and by! *int.*, ¡hasta luego!; — this afternoon! *int.*, ¡hasta la tarde!; — to-night, *int.*, ¡hasta la noche!; — we meet again, *int.*, ¡hasta la vista!  
 unwillingly, *adv.*, de mala gana.  
 up, *adv.*, arriba; keep it —! *int.*, ¡alza!; — to, *prep.*, hasta.  
 upon, *prep.*, sobre.  
 upper, *adj.*, superior.  
 upset, volcar.  
 up-stairs, *adv.*, arriba.  
 urge, incitar.  
 us, *pers. pron.*, nos, nosotros; to —, nos.  
 use, uso, *m.*; to —, emplear, usar; make — of, emplear.  
 useful, *adj.*, útil.  
 usually, *adv.*, generalmente.  
 utmost; to the —, a más no poder.  
 utter, lanzar, proferir, soltar.

## V

vacation, vacaciones, *f. pl.*  
 Valencia, Valencia.  
 valet, camarero, *m.*  
 valise, maleta, *f.*  
 valley, valle, *m.*

valuable, precioso, -a.  
 value, valor, *m.*; to —, estimar.  
 vanquish, rendir.  
 variable, *adj.*, variable.  
 various, *adj. and pron.*, diverso, -a, vario, -a.  
 vassal, vasallo, *m.*  
 veal, ternera, *f.*  
 veil, velo, *m.*  
 velvet, terciopelo, *m.*  
 vender, vendedor, *m.*; — of wafers, barquillero, *m.*  
 venerable, *adj.*, venerable.  
 venture, atreverse (*a*).  
 verb, verbo, *m.*  
 verify, averiguar.  
 verse, verso, *m.*  
 versed, versado, -a.  
 very, *adv.*, muy, mucho, harto; *adj.*, mismo, -a; — little, pequeño, -a, poquito, -a.  
 vest, chaleco, *m.*  
 vibrating, *adj.*, vibrante.  
 vicar, vicario, *m.*  
 view, vista, *f.*, aspecto, *m.*  
 vigor, brío, *m.*  
 vigorous, *adj.*, varonil.  
 village, pueblo, *m.*  
 villain, villano, *m.*  
 vim, brío, *m.*  
 vinegar, vinagre, *m.*  
 vineyard, viña, *f.*  
 vintage, vendimia, *f.*  
 violet, violeta, *f.*  
 virgin, virgen, *f.*  
 virile, *adj.*, varonil.  
 vision, visión, *f.*  
 visit, visita, *f.*; making —s, visito, *m.*; to —, visitar.  
 visiting, visiteo, *m.*  
 vital, *adj.*, vital.  
 vivify, vivificar.  
 vocation, vocación, *f.*  
 vociferate, vociferar.  
 voice, voz, *f.*  
 vowel, vocal, *f.*  
 voyage, viaje, *m.*

## W

wade, vadear.  
 wafer (cone), barquillo, *m.*; maker (or vender) of —s, barquillero, *m.*

wager, apostar.  
 waistcoat, chaleco, *m.*  
 wait, esperar; — for, esperar.  
 waiter, mozo, *m.*  
 waiting-room, sala (*f.*) de espera.  
 walk, paseo, *m.*; take a —, dar un paseo; to —, caminar, dar un paseo, pasar, pasear.  
 wall, muralla, *f.*, pared, *f.*, (*of a pelota court*) frontón, *m.*  
 wander, errar.  
 wandering, *adj.*, nómada.  
 want, querer.  
 war, guerra, *f.*; to —, agguerrir, combatir.  
 ward, barrio, *m.*  
 wardrobe, armario, *m.*  
 warm, calentar; be —, (*of weather*) hacer calor, (*of beings*) tener calor, (*of objects*) ser (or estar) caliente.  
 warmth, calor, *m.*  
 warn, advertir.  
 warrior, campeador, *m.* (*a surname applied particularly to The Cid*).  
 wash, lavar.  
 wash-stand, lavabo, *m.*  
 washwoman, lavandera, *f.*  
 watch, reloj (de bolsillo), *m.*  
 water, agua, *f.*; to —, regar.  
 wave, ola, *f.*  
 way, calle, *f.*, camino, *m.*, manera, *f.*, modo, *m.*, paso, *m.*; give —, dejar paso; go half — round, dar media vuelta; by the —, a propósito.  
 we, *pers. pron.*, nos, nosotros.  
 wear, llevar, usar, vestir.  
 weariness, fastidio, *m.*  
 weather, tiempo, *m.*; be bad —, hacer mal tiempo; be good —, hacer buen tiempo.  
 Wednesday, miércoles, *m.*; Ash —, Miércoles de Ceniza.  
 week, semana, *f.*; Holy Week, Semana Santa.  
 weep, llorar.  
 weigh down, abrumar.  
 well, bueno (buen), -a; *adv.*, bien; —! *int.*, ¡hola! (*written also ¡ola!*) ¡pues!; (*expressing surprise*) ¡vamos!; —, I declare! *int.*, ¡Jesús!



- ¡vaya!; —, —! *int.*, ¡toma!; get —, restablecerse; *fairly* —, *adv.*, regular; — *done*, (*of meat*) bien cocido; — *established*, acertado, —a.
- were; as it —, como.
- west, occidente, *m.*, oeste, *m.*
- what, *inter. adj.*, ¿cuál? ¿qué?; *inter. pron.*, ¿cuál? ¿qué?; —, one, *inter. pron.*, ¿cuál?; — a pity *int.*, ¡qué lástima!
- wheat, mies, *f.*, trigo, *m.*; — *-field*, trigal, *m.*
- when, *adv.*, ¿cuándo?; *conj.*, cuando, en cuanto; *scarcely* . . . —, *conj.*, no bien . . . cuando.
- whenever, *conj.*, cuando, siempre que.
- where, *adv.*, donde; *inter. adv.*, ¿dónde?
- wherever, *adv.*, donde.
- whether, *conj.*, que, sea que, si; — . . . or, *conj.*, sea . . . sea, ya . . . ya.
- which, *rel. adj.*, que; *rel. pron.*, el (la or lo) cual, los (or las) cuales, el (la, lo, los, las) que, que; *inter. adj.*, ¿cuál? ¿qué?; *inter. pron.*, ¿cuál?; — one, *inter. pron.*, ¿cuál?; of —, *rel. pron.*, cuyo, —a.
- while, *conj.*, en tanto que, entre tanto que, mientras (que); *subst.*, rato, *m.*; a long —, mucho rato.
- whilst, *conj.*, mientras (que).
- whip, látigo, *m.*
- whisper, murmullo, *m.*; to —, cuchichear.
- whistle, silbido, *m.*
- whistling, silbido, *m.*
- white, blanco, —a.
- whitewash, enjalbegar.
- whither, *adv.*, adonde; *inter. adv.*, ¿adónde?
- who, *rel. pron.*, el (la) cual, los (las) cuales, el (la, los, las) que, que, quien; *inter. pron.*, ¿quién?
- whoa! *int.*, ¡cho! ¡jo! ¡so!
- whoever, *pron.*, quienquiera.
- whole, entero, —a, todo, —a; *pron.*, todo, —a; *subst.*, conjunto, *m.*
- wholesome, *adj.*, saludable.
- whom, *rel. pron.*, el (la) cual, los (las) cuales, el (la, los, las) que, que, quien; *inter. pron.*, ¿quién?
- whose, *rel. pron. and adj.*, cuyo, —a; *inter. pron. and adj.*, ¿cuyo, —a?
- whosoever, *pron.*, quienquiera.
- why, *adv. and conj.*, ¿por qué?; — no! *int.*, ¡ca! ¡quía!
- wide (open) (*of a door*), *adv.*, de par en par.
- widow, viuda, *f.*; become a —, enviudar.
- widower, viudo, *m.*; become a —, enviudar.
- wife, esposa, *f.*, mujer, *f.*, señora, *f.*
- win, captar, obtener.
- wind, viento, *m.*
- window, ventana, *f.*
- windy; be —, haber viento, hacer viento.
- wine, vino, *m.*
- wing, ala, *f.*, (*of a wind-mill*) aspa, *f.*
- winter, invierno, *m.*; of —, *adj.*, invernal.
- wintry, *adj.*, invernal.
- wipe, enjugar.
- wise, sabio, —a.
- Wise Men, Reyes (Magos), *m. pl.*
- wish, desear, querer.
- wit, agudeza, *f.*
- with, *prep.*, con, de; — me, conmigo; — herself (himself, one's self, themselves, yourself, yourselves), consigo; — thee, contigo.
- within, *adv.*, adentro, dentro, por dentro; *prep.*, dentro (de); — sight, a la vista.
- without, *adv.*, afuera, fuera, por afuera; *prep.*, fuera de, sin; *conj.*, sin que.
- witticism, agudeza, *f.*, gracia, *f.*
- witty, salado, —a; — saying, do-naire, *m.*
- woman, mujer, *f.*, señora, *f.*; young —, joven, *f.*, señorita, *f.*
- wonder, admirar, imaginarse, preguntarse.
- wont; be —, soler.
- wood, (*used in construction, in dis-*

*tinction to* leña, *f.*, 'fire-wood')  
 madera, *f.*, bosque, *m.*  
 word, palabra, *f.*, voz, *f.*  
 work, trabajo, *m.*, obra, *f.*, escrito, *m.*; —s, (*of a watch or clock*)  
 máquina, *f.*; to —, trabajar.  
 world, mundo, *m.*; bring into the  
 —, echar al mundo.  
 worry, trastear.  
 worse, *adj.*, peor (*comp. of* malo);  
*adv.*, peor (*comp. of* mal).  
 worship, adorar.  
 worth, mérito, *m.*; be —, valer.  
 worthy, digno, —a; be — of, mere-  
 cer.  
 would that! *int.*, ¡ojalá!  
 wound, herida, *f.*; to —, herir.  
 wrap, rollar.  
 wrath, ira, *f.*  
 wreath, corona, *f.*  
 wrist, muñeca, *f.*  
 write, escribir.  
 writer, autor, *m.*, escritor, *m.*  
 writing, escrito, *m.*  
 wrong, *adv.*, mal; be —, no tener  
 razón.

## X

Ximena, Ximena, *f.*

## Y

ye, *pers. pron.*, vos, vosotros.  
 year, año, *m.*; common —, año  
 común; leap —, año bisiesto;

New Year, Año Nuevo; school  
 —, año escolar.  
 yellow, amarillo, —a; to —, dorar.  
 yellowish, amarillento, —a.  
 yes, *adv.*, sí.  
 yesterday, *adv.*, ayer; day before  
 —, *adv.*, anteayer, antes de ayer.  
 yet, *adv.*, aun (aún), todavía; —  
 to be, *prep.*, por.  
 yolk (*of an egg*), yema, *f.*  
 yore, antaño, *m.*  
 you, *pers. pron.*, tú, te, ti; vos,  
 vosotros, os; usted, ustedes, le,  
 les; to —, te, os, le, les.  
 young, *adj.*, joven; — gentleman,  
 señorito, *m.*; — (*unmarried*)  
 lady, señorita, *f.*; — man, joven,  
*m.*, señorito, *m.*; — woman, jo-  
 ven, *f.*, (*unmarried*) señorita.  
 younger, *adj.*, menor (*comp. of*  
 pequeño).  
 your, *poss. pron.*, su.  
 yourself, *pers. pron.*, se, sí; with  
 —, consigo.  
 yourselves, *pers. pron.*, se, sí; with  
 —, consigo.  
 youth, joven, *m. and f.*, mozo, *m.*,  
 moza, *f.*, mocedad, *f.*  
 youthful exploit, mocedad, *f.*

## Z

Zamora, Zamora.  
 zarzuela, zarzuela, *f.*  
 zeal, celo, *m.*  
 zero, cero, *m.*

# ÍNDICE DE MATERIAS

(Subject Index)

References are to sections, unless otherwise specified.

## A

- a**, omission of accent, 20 (4 note 2); with article, 28; with direct object, 306 (1-5); with pronouns, 199, 210, 211, 306 (2); — **quien**, 265, 276.
- a**, to form feminine, with adjectives, 52, 53.
- aba**, 116.
- ability, see verb.
- abrir**, 365.
- absolute, see superlative.
- abstract, see noun.
- acá**, 289.
- accent, 18-20, 197; in adjectives, 20 (10); in adverbs, 20 (10), 227; change under, 16; in demonstrative pronouns, 20 (6), 107; in diphthongs, 12, 19 (4); to distinguish similar forms, 20 (4); in imperative, 20 (9), 145, 341; in indicative, 20 (5), 72, 116, 121, 122, 130, 339 (2), 341; in interrogatives, 20 (7), 269; in plural of nouns, 20 (11); of strong vowels, 19 (4); in subjunctive, 145, 151, 164, 341; of superlative, 249, 252; see verb; on weak vowel, 13, 20 (8).
- accusative, see object, direct.
- acho**, 75.
- ada**, 76.
- address, forms of, 297-302.
- adjective, absolute superlative, 249, 252; see accent; used adverbially, 70; agreement, 54, 58-60, 68-70, of possessive, 88, of demonstrative, 105, of variable interrogative, 276-277, of ordinals, 320; apocopation, 64-67; capitalization, 23; see clause; see comparison; demonstrative, 105-107, 112; with **estar**, 97; inflection, 20 (11), 52-54; interrogative, 269-272, 274, 276-278; of nationality, 53 (1); plural, 54; position, 61, change of meaning for, 62, of ordinals, 320; possessive, 83-85, 88, 98-100, replaced by article, 35, 101-102, with terms of address, 300; predicate, 243 (1); proper, 23, 61; relative, 257, 262, 264, 266; with **ser**, 97; used substantively, 68; see superlative; uninflected, 53.
- ado**, p. 4 footnote 1, 43, 364.
- adverb, 226-231, 287-295; from adjective, 226, 227; accent, 20 (10), 227; see comparison; manner, 229, 231; in **-mente**, 20 (10), 226-229, 287; of negation, 279-286; for phrase, 268; of place, 231; see superlative; of time, 231.
- adverbial, see clause; phrase.
- affection, see suffix.
- age, expressions of, 317, 318.
- ago, 20 (4 note), 178.
- agreement, see adjective; definite article; participle; verb.
- ahí**, 289.
- al**, 28, with infinitive, 223.
- Alarcón, Pedro Antonio de**, p. 187.
- alguno**, 64.
- allá**, 289.
- allí**, 289.
- alphabet, 1.
- although, 397 (4).
- amanecer**, 418.
- án**, 53 (2).
- and, with cardinal numbers, 312, 314.
- andar**, compared with **ir**, 207, note.
- ando**, 42.
- anger, see verb.
- anochecer**, 418.
- anterior, past, see tense, indicative.
- antojarse**, 375.

**aplayer**, 376.  
 apocopation, see adjective.  
 apposition, see noun.  
 approval, see verb.  
**aquel**, 105, 106; for **el**, 112.  
**aqué**, 108, 109.  
**aquí**, 289.  
 -**ar**, infinitive in, 36, 205.  
 -**aram**, remains of Latin pluperfect, 402.  
**argüir**, 362.  
 article, see definite; indefinite.  
**as**, 26, 223; — . . . —, 239; — many, 240; — much, 240.  
**atañer**, 376.  
 augmentative, see suffix.  
**aun**, 290.  
**aún**, 290.  
 auxiliary, see verb; see also **estar**, **haber**, **ser**, **tener**, etc.  
 avoiding, see verb.  
 -**azo**, 75, 76.

## B

**balbucear**, 377.  
**balbucir**, 377.  
**Bazán**, Emilio Pardo, p. 211.  
**be**, 89, 176, 180.  
 before, 178.  
 behold, 20 (4 note).  
 believing, see verb.  
**bendecir**, 371, 428, 429.  
**bien**, 237.  
 blame, see verb.  
**Blasco Ibáñez**, Vicente, p. 217.  
 -**ble** changing to -**bil**, 251.  
 body, parts of, definite article with, 35, 101, 102.  
**borrar**, 380.  
**bueno**, 64, 235.  
 but, 284, 286.

## C

**c** changed to **qu**, 6, 38 note, 250, 335; to **z**, 6, 336.  
**caballero**, 301.  
**Caballero**, Fernán, p. 183.  
 capitals, 23.  
 -**car**, verbs in, 335.  
 cardinal, see numbers.  
 Castilian, see pronunciation.  
 causing, see verb, of necessity, of obligation.

**centenar**, 330.  
 -**cer**, verbs in, 336, 337, 415.  
**Cervantes Saavedra**, Miguel de, p. 173.  
 -**cete**, 77.  
 changes in orthography, see orthography.  
 characterization, see clause.  
 characters, 1.  
**cien**, 67, 316.  
**ciento**, 67, 309, 313, 316, 330.  
 -**cillo**, 77.  
 -**cir**, verbs in, 336, 337.  
 -**cito**, 77.  
 clause, adjective, 394-396; adverbial, 397-398; characterization, 394; concessive, 394, 396, 397 (4); conditional, 397 (3), 398; dependent, 391-398; negative, see sentence; noun, 391-393; purpose, 394, 397 (2); relative, 111, 394-396, 402; result, 397, 400; time, 397 (1).  
 clothing, 35, 101, 102.  
**cocer**, 336, 349.  
 collective, see numbers.  
 command, see verb.  
**como**, 239, 240.  
**cómo**; **qué tal** for —, 272.  
 comparative, of equality, 239-241; of inequality, 234-238.  
 comparison, of adjective, 234-241, 243-246; of adverb, 234, 237; 'than' in —, 238.  
 compass, points of, 172.  
 compound, see numbers; pronoun, relative; subject; tense.  
**con**, in phrases, 229; with personal pronouns, 209.  
**concernir**, 378.  
 concession, 394, 396, 397 (4); see conjunction.  
 concessive, see clause.  
 condition, 392 (5), 395 (1); **estar** denoting —, 94; see conjunction.  
 conditional, see clause; tense; sentence.  
 conjecture, 138.  
 conjugation, first, 403, compound tenses, 411, irregularities of first —, 205, 342, 343, 345, 347, 350, 422, 424, passive voice, 414; second,

404, compound tense, 412, irregularities of second —, 342, 344, 346, 348, 349, 423, 425; third, 405, compound tenses, 413, irregularities of third —, 351–363, 426–430.  
 conjunction, introducing clauses, 397–399; concession, 397 (4); condition, 397 (3); of purpose, 397 (2); of result, 397 (2); of time, 397 (1).  
**conmigo**, 209.  
**conocer**, 242 note.  
 consenting, see verb.  
**consigo**, 209.  
 consonant, accent of word ending in, 19 (1–3); double, 3; pronunciation, 2 (2); silent, 5 (2).  
**contar**, 345.  
 contempt, see suffix, derogatory.  
**contigo**, 209.  
 correlative, see pronoun; subjunctive; **quien** and **cual** as —, 267.  
**corroer**, 383.  
**cosa**, with negative force, 282 note.  
**cual**, 261, 267; **el** —, 261, 262; **lo** —, 263.  
**cuál**, 269, 274, 275.  
**cuán**, 278.  
**cuando**, 268, 397 (2 note).  
**cuanto**, 266; in comparison, 240; — **más**, 241.  
**cuánto**, 277; in exclamations, 278.  
**cubrir**, 365.  
**cuyo**, 264, 265.  
**cúyo**, 276.

**D**

–**d**, of imperatives, 143, 146.  
 –**dad**, nouns in, 51.  
**dar**, ‘to strike,’ 170.  
 dates, 323.  
 dative, ethical, 202, 203; of interest, 265; see object, indirect pronoun.  
 days of week, 167, 168; with article, 32 (6); not capitalized, 23; gender, 47.  
**de**; — **lo que**, 238 (3); — **manera que**, 397 (3); material, 69; in names, 302; to denote possession, 41, 98; — **quien**, 265; — **quién**,

276; after superlative, 244; ‘than,’ 238 (2).  
**deber**, conjugation, 404, 412; obligation, 36 footnote, 134 note, 181.  
**decir**, 247, 428, 429.  
 declaring, see verb.  
 defective, see verb.  
 definite article, 24–35; agreement, 25, with comparative to form superlative, 243; omitted, 32 (3), 87, 243 (1); omitted in direct address, 300; for pronoun, 111; for possessive adjective, 35, 101; with possessive adjective, 86; repeated, 31; used when not in English, 32, 168.  
**del**, 28.  
 demonstrative, see adjective; pronoun.  
 denial, see verb.  
 dependent, see clause.  
 depreciatory, see suffix.  
 derogatory, see suffix.  
 descriptive tense, 123, 124.  
 desire, 386 (1–3), 399.  
 desiring, see verb.  
**desosar**, 348 note.  
**desovar**, 348 note.  
 despair, see verb.  
 destination, **para**, 220.  
 diminutive, 74, 77; derogatory (or depreciatory), see suffix.  
 diphthong, 8–12; see accent; at beginning of word, 17, 347, 348; not separated, 21 (1); stress, 12.  
 direct, see object.  
 disapproval, see verb.  
**do**, 56, footnote 2.  
**don**, 297.  
**donde**, 268, 396.  
**doña**, 297.  
**dormir**, 352.  
 double, see letters.  
 doubt, 394, 395 (1), 396, 401; see verb.  
**ducir**, 248, p. 233, footnote.

**E**

**e** changed to **i**, 16, 351, 354, 359, 426, 427; to **ie**, 16, 342, 344, 351, 354, 359, 378, 416 note, 422, 423, 426,

e, 20 (4 note 2).  
 -eceto, 77.  
 -ecillo, 77.  
 -ecito, 77.  
 -eír, verbs in, 358.  
 el, used for euphony, 27; — **cual**, 261, 262; — **que**, 261.  
 elliptical expressions, subjunctive in, 386 (3).  
 ello, 208 note.  
 emotion, see verb.  
 en; — **ésa**, 110; — **ésta**, 110; with infinitive, 223; with present participle, 223.  
 enclitics, 20 (9), 145, 146, 197, 201.  
 endings, feminine, 51; masculine, 50; see tense.  
 equality, see comparative.  
 -er, infinitive in, 36.  
 -eram, remains of Latin pluperfect, 402.  
 erguir, 359.  
 errar, 347.  
 -érrimo, 252.  
 -es, to form plural, 38.  
**ésa**, 108; **en** —, 110.  
 escribir, 365.  
 ese, 105, 106.  
 ése, 108.  
**ésta**, 108; **en** —, 110.  
 estar, 89, 90, 96, 97, 139; conjugation, 407; used impersonally, 420; with past participle, 94; with present participle, 95.  
 este, 105, 106.  
 éste, 108, 109.  
 -ete, 77.  
 ethical, see dative.  
 even, 187, 188, 290.  
 ever, 282 note.  
 exclamation; — point, 22; **qué** in —, 271.  
 expressions for class-room use, 431.  
 -ezuelo, 77.

## F

fear, see verb.  
 feminine endings, 51.  
 few (a), 30.  
 final -s, see -s; final -y, see -y.  
 for, **para**, 69, 220.

forbidding, see verb.  
 former, 109.  
 fraction, 325-328.  
 freído, 366, 370.  
 freír, 366.  
 frito, 366, 370.  
 future, see tense, indicative, subjunctive; for present, 138.  
 futurity, see conjunction of time.

## G

g, changed to **gu**, 6, 250, 335; to **j**, 6, 338.  
**Galdós, Benito Pérez**, p. 202.  
 -gar, verbs in, 335.  
 gender, see letters; noun; indeclinable words, 47.  
 general, see noun.  
 geographical, see names.  
 -ger, verbs in, 338.  
 gerund, see participle, present.  
 -gir, verbs in, 338.  
 gran, 65.  
 grande, 65, 235.  
 greetings, 303.  
 gu, changed to **g**, 6, 338; to **gü**, 6, 335.  
 -guar, verbs in, 335.  
 -guir, verbs in, 338, 339 note.  
 -güir, verbs in, 362.

## H

h, 27; inserted, 348 and note; mute, 8.  
 há, 20 (4 note); 178.  
 haber, 78, 79, 140, 175-178; 'ago,' 178; in compound tenses, 43, 79, 126, 410; conjugation, 408; — **de**, 175; used impersonally, 176-178; — **que**, 176; subjunctive of, 163.  
 hablar, article omitted after, 32 (3); conjugation, 403, 411.  
 hacer, 176 (2); 'ago,' 178.  
 half, 170, 328.  
 have, 78, 80, 179, 181.  
 hay, 176, 177.  
 hé, 20 (4 note).  
 here, 289.  
 hora, 169.  
 hour; strike the —, 170.

how, 26, 271, 278; — many, 278; — much, 278.  
hue, 17.  
hundred, 67, 313, 314, 316.

**I**

i, accented, 339 (2); changed to ie, 355; dropped, 247 note, 307 note, 340; changed to y, 122, 165, 339 (1), 347, 360.  
-ia, 116, 136.  
-iar, verbs in, 341.  
Ibáñez, Vicente Blasco, p. 217.  
idioms, list, 431; of greeting and leave-taking, 303; with tener, 180; of weather, 176 (2).  
-ido, 43, 364.  
-ie, e changed to, 16, 17; changed to e, 250; final, 51; to ye, 17, 347.  
-iendo, 42.  
-ieron, 121, 122.  
if, with imperfect subjunctive, 398; — not, 285; with present indicative, 132, 401.  
-illo, 77.  
imperative, 141–146, 341; infinitive as, 147; irregular, 342, 356, 428; object with, 145, 146.  
imperfect, see tense, indicative, subjunctive.  
imperfecto, futuro, p. 222 footnote 1.  
impersonal; se with —, 217; see verb.  
imprimir, 365.  
in, after superlatives, 244.  
indeclinable parts of speech, gender of, 47.  
indefinite, see adjective; pronoun.  
indefinite article, 33, 34; omitted, 316.  
indicative, see tense.  
indirect, see object, indirect pronoun.  
inferiority, see comparative, of inequality.  
infinitive, 36, 37, 223; with al, 223 (2); with en, 223; with prepositions, 223 (2); for English present participle, 223 (2); as verbal noun, 32 (4), 37.  
inflection, see adjective; change in orthography, 6, 7.

inquirir, 355.  
intensives, 215.  
interrogation point, 22.  
interrogative, see adjective; pronoun; sentence; followed by subjunctive, 386 (5), 392 (5), 395 (1).  
intransitive, see verb.  
-ío, 121, 122.  
-ión, nouns in, 51.  
ir, 117; andar, compared with —, 207 note 1.  
-ir, infinitive in, 36.  
irregular, see participle; verb.  
-ísimo (-a), 249–251.  
it, 208 note; — is, 176 (2).  
-ito, 77.

**J**

jamás, 282.  
-jar, verbs in, 335 note.  
joy, see verb.  
jugar, 350; distinguished from tocar, 350 note.

**K**

knowing, see verb.

**L**

la(s), in indefinite sense, 193.  
last, 168.  
Latin words, 16, 17, 251.  
latter, 109.  
le, 192, 200, 202, 211.  
leave-taking, 303.  
less, 234; the —, 241.  
letter-writing, dates, 23, 32 (6).  
letters, 1–5, 48; double, 3; gender, 4, 48.  
licuefacer, 219 note.  
lo, 26, 86 note, 192, 195; — cual, 263; with de, 238 (3); — que, 238 (3), 263; with superlative, 253.  
location, 289.  
-ly, 226, 287.

**LI**

-ll-, 340.

**M**

-ma, 50.  
mal, 64, 237.  
maldecir, 428, 429.

**malo**, 64, 235.  
**manera**, 229.  
**manner**, 229; see **adverb**.  
**many**; as —, 240; how —, 277, 278.  
**mas**, 284.  
**más**, 237, 271; in comparison, 234;  
 — **bien**, 237 note; **cuanto** —, 241;  
**mientras** —, 241; **no** —, 286.  
**masculine**, see **noun**.  
**matado**, 373.  
**matter**; to be the —, 179.  
**mayor**, 235, 236; see **parte**.  
**mecer**, 336.  
**medio**, 170, 328.  
**mejor**, 235-237.  
**menor**, 235, 236.  
**menos**, 237; in comparison, 234;  
**cuanto** —, 241; **mientras** —, 241.  
**-mente**, see **adverb**.  
**mientras**, 241.  
**mil**, 316, 330.  
**millar**, 330.  
**mismo**, 187, 188, 215.  
**miss**, 298.  
**mitad**, 170, 328.  
**modo**, 229.  
**monosyllables**, 19 (3), 20 (4, 5).  
**month**, names, 153; with **article**,  
 32 (6); not capitalized, 23; **gender**,  
 47.  
**more**, 234; the —, 241.  
**morir**, 353.  
**most**, 245.  
**motion**, 289.  
**mountains**, **gender**, 47.  
**mover**, 346.  
**much**, 291; as —, 240; how —, 277,  
 278; very —, 294, 295.  
**muchísimo**, 294.  
**mucho**, 237, 292-295.  
**muerto**, 353, 373.  
**multiple**, see **numbers**.  
**must**, 36 note 1.  
**mute**, see **h**.  
**muy**, 291, 292, 294; in **superlative**,  
 249.

## N

**nada**, 282.  
**nadie**, 282.  
**names**, of countries, 32 (8); of days,  
 47; family, 297, 302; geographical,

306 (5); of letters, 1; of months,  
 47; of mountains, 47; of oceans,  
 47; of persons, 297-300, 302; of  
 rivers, 47; of seasons, 32 (5).  
**narrative tense**, 125.  
**nationality**, see **adjective**.  
**necessity**, see **verb**.  
**negation**, 279-286, 392 (5), 395 (1),  
 398.  
**negative**, see **sentence**.  
**ni**, 282.  
**ninguno**, 64, 282.  
**no**, 281; — . . . but, 286; — one, 282.  
**no**, 279-283; — **más**, 286; **si** —, 285;  
 — **sino**, 286.  
**nos**, 186; **reciprocal**, 214.  
**nosotros**, with **article**, 186 (1).  
**not**, 281; — any one, 282; — any-  
 thing, 282; — either, 282; if —, 285.  
**noun**, 38-41, 44-51; **abstract**, 32 (2,  
 4); **apposition**, 186 (1), 243 (2);  
 with **article**, 32; see **clause**; as  
**direct object** with **a**, 306; **femi-**  
**nine**, 27, 44, 46, 48, 51; **foreign**,  
 38; **gender**, 44, 51; of either **gen-**  
**der**, 40 (2); **general**, 32 (1); **geo-**  
**graphical**, see **names**; **masculine**,  
 44, 45, 47, 50; of **nationality**, 32  
 (3); **number**, 38, 40; **personified**,  
 306 (3); **plural**, 38-40; **accent**, 20  
 (11); **possessive**, 41; **predicate**,  
 33, 96; **proper** —, 297, 300, 302;  
 of **rank**, 40 (2); of **relationship**,  
 40 (2); used only in **singular**, 101  
 (1); **verbal**, 32 (4).  
**number**, see **noun**.  
**numbers**, **cardinal**, 308-318, 325,  
 326; **collective**, 329, 330; **com-**  
**pound**, 312, 314; see **fraction**;  
**multiple**, 331; **ordinal**, 319-323,  
 325, 327.  
**numeral**, see **phrase**.  
**numerical expression**; 'than' be-  
 fore —, 238 (2).  
**nunca**, 282.

## Ñ

-ñ, 340.

## O

**o** changed to **u**, 351, 352, 363; to **ue**,  
 16, 342, 345, 346, 348, 349, 351-  
 353, 416 note.



6, 20 (4 note 2).  
 object, with *a*, 306; direct, 306;  
     direct pronoun, 145, 191, 199, 202;  
     indirect pronoun, 145, 199, 202.  
 obligation, see verb.  
 occupation, 45, 46.  
 oceans, gender, 47.  
*oiga V.*, 304, note 1.  
*ojalá*, 386 (2).  
*oler*, 348.  
*on*, 32 (6), 223.  
*-ón*, 53 (2), 75.  
 one; no —, 282; not any —, 282;  
     which —, 274.  
 opinion, see verb.  
 optative, see subjunctive.  
*-or*, 53 (2).  
 ordering, see verb.  
 ordinal, see numbers.  
 orthography, phonetic changes in,  
     6, 7, 16, 122, 334.  
*os*, 214.  
*-ote*, 75.  
 ought, 36 note 1, 134 note.  
 own, 103.  
*oye*, 304 note 1.

P

*pacer*, 377.  
*palabra*, with negative force, 282  
     note.  
*Palacio Valdés, Armando*, p. 207.  
*para*, 220; — *que*, 397 (2).  
*Pardo Bazán, Emilia*, p. 211.  
*parte*, 327; *la mayor* —, 245.  
 participle, agreement, 55, 68, 93;  
     past —, 43, with *estar*, 94, with  
     *haber*, 79, 126, irregular, 353, 364–  
     374, with *lo*, 26, in passive, 93,  
     with *ser*, 93, 223 (1, 2); present  
     —, 42, 340, 404, 405, with *estar*,  
     95, irregular, 339, 351, 427; used  
     substantively, 68.  
*pasado*, 168 note.  
 passive, see verb.  
 past anterior, see tense, indicative.  
 past participle, see participle,  
     past.  
*pedir*, 357, 359.  
*pensar*, 343.  
 penult, normal accent on, 19 (1).  
*peor*, 235–237.

*pequeño*, 235.  
*perder*, 344.  
*Pereda, José María de*, p. 197.  
*Pérez Galdós, Benito*, p. 202.  
 perfect, see tense, indicative, sub-  
     junctive.  
*pero*, 284.  
 personal, see pronoun.  
 phonetic changes, see orthography.  
 phrase, adverbial, 229; numeral, 332.  
*placer*, 379.  
*play*, 350 note.  
 pluperfect, see tense, indicative,  
     subjunctive.  
 plural, see adjective; noun; verb,  
     agreement.  
*poco*, 237.  
*podrir*, 363.  
*por* and *para*, 220; — *que*, 397 (2).  
 position, 90; see adjective; of words,  
     104.  
 possession, 41, 80.  
 possessive, see adjective; pronoun.  
 possibility, see verb.  
*postrero*, 64.  
 praise, see verb.  
 predicate, see adjective; noun.  
 preferring, see verb.  
 prefix, 21 (4).  
*prender*, 366.  
*prendido*, 367.  
 prepositions, 220, 306; see pronoun.  
 present, see tense, indicative, sub-  
     junctive; participle; for future,  
     132.  
*preso*, 367.  
 preterit, see tense, indicative.  
*pretérito, imperfecto*, see tense, im-  
     perfect; *perfecto*, see tense, pre-  
     terit, past anterior; *pluscuamper-*  
     fecto, see tense, pluperfect.  
*primero*, 64, 323.  
 profession, 45, 46.  
 progressive form, see verb.  
 pronoun, with *a*, 306 (2); correla-  
     tive, 109 note, 267; demonstra-  
     tive, 20 (6), 107–111; indefinite,  
     86 note; interrogative, 20 (7), 269,  
     270, 273–278; personal —, made  
     intensive by *mismo*, 187, 215;  
     with subjunctive, 386 (3), object,  
     191–203, loss of endings with im-

perative, 146, omitted, 196, position, 20 (9), 145, 197-199, 201, 203, reciprocal, 214, reflexive, 213, 215-218, after prepositions, 208-211, intensified by *mismo*, 215, position, 209, 210, redundant use, 210, 211, subject, 182, compound, 184, *nos* and *vos*, 186, omitted, 57, 183, position, 183, 'you,' 185; possessive, 86-88, relative, 257-263, 265-268, agreement, 258, compound, 396, with subjunctive, 394-396.  
 pronunciation, Castilian, 2; of letters, 2, 3, 5.  
 proper, see adjective.  
 proper names, see names of countries, etc.  
*propio*, with possessive adjectives, 103.  
*proveer*, p. 238 footnote.  
*proveído*, 366, 368.  
*provisto*, 366, 368.  
*podrir*, see *podrir*.  
 punctuation, 22.  
 purpose, 394, 397 (2); see clause; conjunction.

## Q

*qu* changed to *c*, 6, 338.  
*que*, as conjunction, 178, 181, 281; *de lo* —, 238 (3); in comparison, 238 (1, 2); *lo* —, 263; with *no*, 281; see pronoun, relative; with *sí*, 281; with subjunctive, 386 (1), 392.  
*qué*, see adjective and pronoun, interrogative; — *tal*, 272.  
*querer*, 131.  
*quien*, see pronoun, relative.  
*quién*, see pronoun, interrogative.  
*-quir*, verbs in, 338, 339 note.  
*quisiera*, 399.

## R

*-ra*, 163, 400.  
*raer*, 380.  
 rank, see noun.  
 rare, see verb.  
*rarefacier*, 219 note.  
*rayar*, 380.

*re-*, 249 note.  
*-re*, 163, 252.  
*reciën*, 230.  
*recientemente*, 230.  
 reciprocal, see pronoun, personal.  
*recordar*, 386 (5).  
 reflexive, see pronoun, personal; verb.  
 regret, see verb.  
 regular, see verb.  
*reír*, 358.  
 relationship, see noun.  
 relative, see adjective; clause; pronoun; superlative relative.  
*reponer*, 381.  
 requesting, see verb.  
 requiring, see verb.  
 rest in, 289.  
 result, see clause; conjunction.  
*rete-*, superlative, 249 note.  
 river, gender, 47.  
*-ro*, 252.  
*roer*, 382.  
*romper*, 366.  
*rompido*, 369.  
*roto*, 369.

## S

*-s*, p. 2 footnote 1, 5; separated from following consonant, 21 (4 note); to form plural, 38 note.  
*saber*, 242 note, 386 (5).  
*San*, 66.  
*Santo*, 66.  
*satisfacer*, 219 note.  
*se*, impersonal, 217; as object, 202; in passive sense, 216; position, 201, 203; reciprocal, 214; reflexive, 213, 216-218.  
*-se*, 163, 400.  
 seasons, see names.  
 self, 187, 188.  
 sentence, arrangement, 104; conditional, 400; interrogative, 104 (1); mixed, 22; negative, 238 (2), 279-286.  
*sentir*, 354.  
*señor*, 297, 299, 301.  
*señora*, 297, 299.  
*señorita*, 298.  
*señorito*, 298.  
 sequence, see tense, subjunctive.

**ser**, 87, 89, 90, 93, 96-98, 117, 139, 169; conjugation, 406; future subjunctive, 163; imperfect subjunctive, 163; used impersonally, 420; in passive, 43, 93, 414; with past participle, 414.

shame, see verb.

should, 36 note 1, 137.

**si**, 132, 398; with indicative, 132, 401; — **no**, 285.

**sí**, 281; reflexive, 213.

**sin**; — **que**, 397 (2).

**sino**, 284, 285; **no** —, 286; — **que**, 284.

**so**, 195, 281; — **that**, 397 (2).

**soler**, 384.

**solver**, 374.

some, 30.

sorrow, see verb.

source, 220.

stem-vowel, see verb.

stress, 12, 20 (8).

strong, see vowel.

subject, compound, 184; omitted, 57, 183.

subjunctive, 151; in adjective clauses, 394-396; in adverbial clauses, 397-399; correlative, 386 (4); in dependent clauses, 391-399; for imperative, 141, 144, 145, 386 (1); in independent clauses, 386; irregular, 342, 351, 356; in noun clause, 392, 393; optative, 386 (1).

**suelto**, 374.

suffix, 74-77; accent, 20 (9); of affection, 74; augmentative, 74, 75; derogatory (*or* depreciatory), 74-77; diminutive, 74, 77.

**sumamente**, 249.

superiority, see comparative, of inequality.

superlative absolute, adjective, 249-252; adverb, 249-253.

superlative relative, adjective, 243-245; adverb, 243, 246; subjunctive after, 395 (2).

syllabication, 21.

## T

—**tad**, nouns in, 51.

**tal**; **qué** —, 272.

**tampoco**, 282.

**tan**, 271; — **como**, 239.

**tanto**, 240, 241.

**tener**, 78, 80, 140, 163, 180, 181, 318; conjugation, 409; with **mucho**, 295; — **que**, 181.

tense, compound, 43, 79, 410-414; endings, 57, 73, 116, 121, 122, 130, 136, 151, 163, 165; indicative: conditional, 133-138, p. 62 footnote 1; conditional for imperfect indicative, 138; conditional perfect, 138, p. 226 footnote 3; future, 130-132, 138; future perfect, 138; imperfect, 116, 117, 123, 124; past anterior, pp. 226, 228; perfect, 126; pluperfect, pp. 226, 228; present, 57, 72, 336-338, 341, accent, 72, irregularities, 336-338, 341, 342, 356; preterit, 121-126, 335, 340, irregular, 122, 351, 422; subjunctive: future, 163-165, 340, 351, 356, 396, 401; imperfect, 163-165, 340, 351, 356, 398-400, 402; imperfect for conditional, 399; perfect, 395 (2); pluperfect, 387-389; present, 151, 335, 338, 341, 342, 351, 356; sequence, 387-390.

**tercero**, 64.

than, 238.

that; **so** —, 397 (2).

there, 289; — **is or are**, 176 (1).

thinking, see verb.

time, 167-171; see adverb; clause; conjunction; of day, 169-171; repetition, 332.

title, 299; gender, 45, 46.

to; — **him** (her, it, them, you), 211.

**tocar**, distinguished from **jugar**, 350 note.

**todavía**, 290.

**traducir**, 248.

triphthong, 8, 14, 15; accent, 19 (4); not separated, 21 (1).

**tú**, 185.

—**tud**, nouns in, 51.

**tumefacer**, 219, note.

## U

**ú**, 20 (4 note 2).

—**uar**, verbs in, 341.

—**ucho**, 77.

**Ud.(s.)**, 185.

ue, 16; changed to hue, 17; to o 250; u changed to, 350.  
 -uelo, 77.  
 -uir, verbs in, 360.  
 último, 168 note.  
 -umbre, nouns in, 51.  
 un, 29, 64, 310, 311.  
 uncertainty, 401; see verb.  
 unless, 285.  
 uno, 64, 309-311.  
 unos, 30.  
 usted(es), 57, 144, 185, 186 (1), 194.

## V

V., 185.  
 Valdés, Armando Palacio, p. 207.  
 Valera, Juan, p. 192.  
 vamos, 255 footnote 3.  
 ver, 117, 121 note, 386 (5), p. 238 footnote.  
 verb, of ability, 124; accent, 20 (9), 197, 339 note, 341, 342, 351, 356, 358-363; agreement, 57, 184; of anger, 392 (4); of approval, 392 (3); auxiliary, 78-80, 175-178, 180, 181, 406-409, see *estar*, *haber*, *ser*, *tener*; of avoiding, 392 (1); of believing, 392 (5); of blame, 392 (3); of command, 392 (2), 393; see conjugation; of consenting, 392 (2); of declaring, 392 (6); defective, 375-384; of denial, 392 (5); of desiring, 124, 392 (1); of despair, 392 (4); of disapproval, 392 (3); of doubt, 392 (5); of duty, 124; of emotion, 392 (4); endings, see tense; of fear, 392 (4); of forbidding, 392 (2); i following strong vowel, 339 (2); see imperative; impersonal, 176-178, 416-421; see infinitive; intransitive, 213 (2); of joy, 392 (4); of knowing, 124, 392 (5); of necessity, 392 (2); of obligation, 124, 181, 392 (2); of opinion, 392 (3); of ordering, 392 (2), 393; orthographic changes, 122, 334-363, 420-425; see participle; passive, 43, 93, 200, 216, 414; of possibility, 392 (5); of praise, 392 (3); of preferring, 392 (1); of probability, 392 (5); progressive form, 95;

rare, 375-384; reflexive, 213; of regret, 392 (4); regular, 36, 37, 42, 43, 56, 57, 63, 71-73, 223, 403-405; of requesting, 392 (2); of requiring, 392 (2); of shame, 392 (4); of sorrow, 392 (4); change of stem-vowel, 344-363, 415, 420-425; see tense; of thinking, 124, 392 (6); of uncertainty, 392 (5); of willing, 392 (1); of wishing, 392 (1); of wonder, 392 (4); y inserted, 360.

verbal, see noun.

very, 188, 249, 291, 292, 295; — much, 294, 295.

vivir, conjugation, 405, 413.

voice, see conjugation, first; verb, passive.

vos, 186.

vosotros, 185, 186 (1).

vowel, see accent; diphthong; dropped, 249; pronunciation, 2 (1); change of stem —, see verb; strong, 9, 10, 12-14; see triphthong; weak, 9, 12-14; y, 9.

VV., 185.

## W

weak, see vowel.

weather; expressions for —, 176 (2).

weight, see noun.

what (a), 271.

whether, 132 note.

willing, see verb.

wishing, see verb.

wonder, see verb.

## Y

y, 2 (1), 9; see i; inserted, see verb; see vowel; conjunction y, 9, 314.

-y, 19 (2); plural of nouns in, 38.

ye-, 17.

yes; *que sí* meaning —, 281.

yo, 23, 186.

you, 57, 185, 200.

## Z

z before c, 337; changed to c, 6, 38 note, 250, 335.

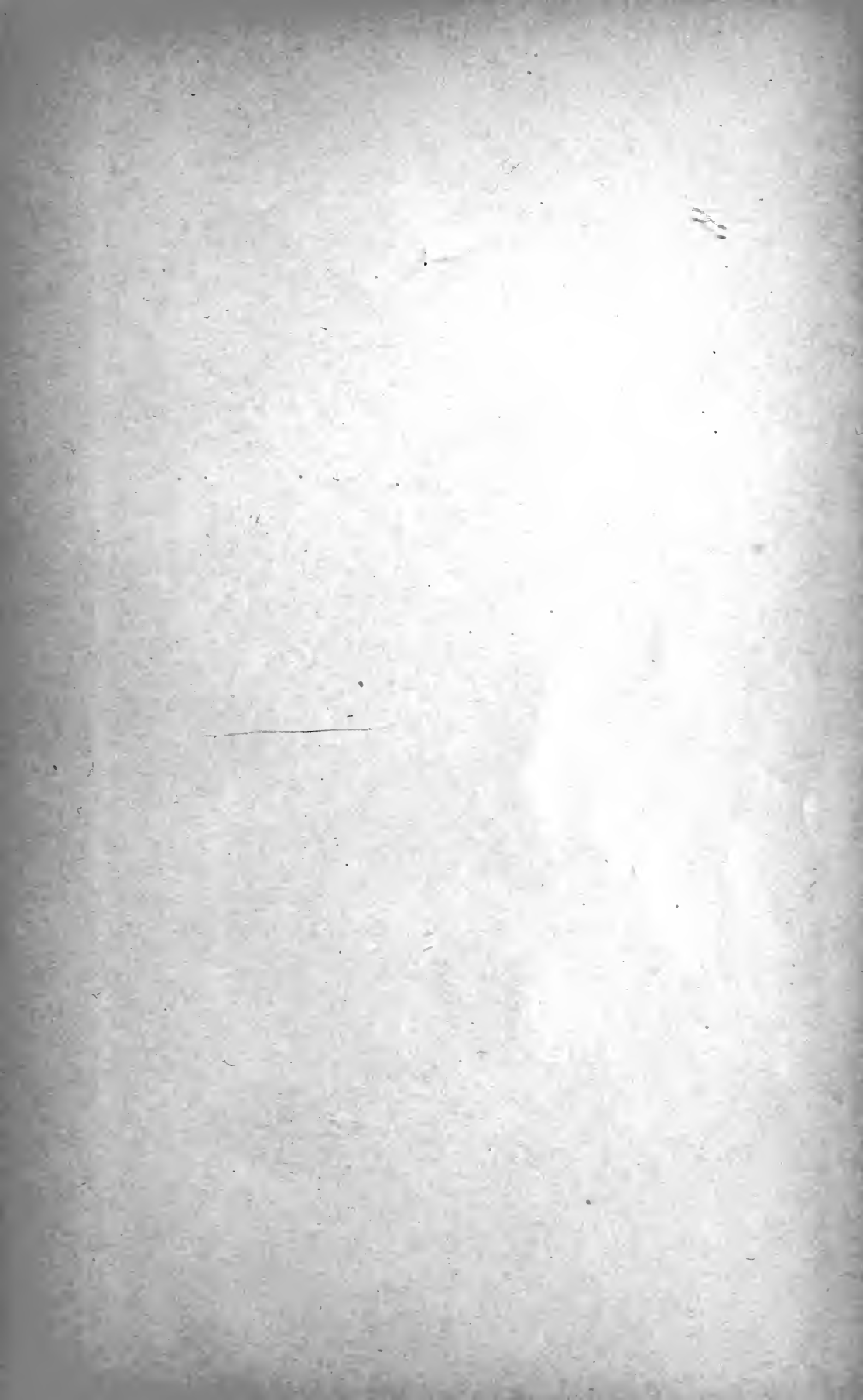
-z, 39 note.

-zar, verbs in, 335.

-zuelo, 77.







4135  
✓





LIBRARY OF CONGRESS



0 003 211 614 0